



# ABSOLUTE CHOICE

BOOK 03

*Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Absolute Choice

(Jue Dui Xuan Xiang)

(绝对选项)

by

## Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring

(梨落秋溪)

# Synopsis

---

A world filled with heroes with superpowers. A world attacked by calamity fiends. A modern world filled with wonders and dangers.

Shi Xiaobai, a child from normal Earth, walked into such a world, proclaiming to be its king. But at the first signs of danger, he is forced to make a choice, one which he cannot refuse for time would repeat, making him face the choice again.

He is not humble nor is he modest, but neither is he delusional. Yet, the Absolute Choice seems to make fun of him. Will the joke be on him or will he laugh at his opponents? There will be many watching his escapades, and there will be some joining him in his adventures.

To see through the world and to grasp its truth, that is the destiny of the King.

# Copyright by Lisa Hayes

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rex @ [Wuxia World](#)

Translation Edits by Lucas @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201: Can Only Tolerate, Silently Suffer

---

Gaia and Zeus' battle exchange had come to an end. The outcome was just as the audience had anticipated before it began. Zeus had received seven wins, and all seven wins were crushing victories.

However, no one expected for the seven battles to end so quickly. Other than Mu Yuesheng's round, the other six battles were all concluded within ten seconds. Although seven seconds had passed when the final match was declared over by the elderly God of Swords, the actual time it took for the battle to finish was within three seconds as well.

It could be said that this year's battle exchange was the one that Gaia suffered the worst defeat.

The audience cheered for Heartless' final strike, but they could not help but feel somewhat melancholic in their hearts. After all, they were rookies of Gaia or residents of Steel City. They were more or less related to Gaia.

However, the cold fact was placed before them. Gaia had truly declined.

And at this moment, they heard Heartless say that he had an important matter to announce. The audience could not help but prick up their ears, but the cleverer members of the audience had their hearts palpitate. A few of them had guessed at a particular possibility.

And this possibility turned to a cold and harsh reality at the very next moment.

Heartless looked at the crowd and announced, “Gaia’s rookie delegation has repeatedly let us down. And this time, it was a catastrophic disappointment. As a result, Zeus has decided that it will cancel the tradition of the battle exchange with Gaia from this year onwards!”

At this moment, the audience heard gasps.

It was here. What was coming had finally come.

There was already early speculation that Zeus would lose all decorum one day, and the opportunity for that was definitely the battle exchange, but few thought that it would happen today!

The audience were caught off guard and in their surprise, they did not protest at all. This was because the outcome was only natural.

It was a meaningless exchange to begin with. It always ended in abject defeat, so it was already considered a miracle to have lasted for ten years.

...

In the seats of honor, the gray-robed elder and four Division Ministers had a sudden change of countenance when they heard Heartless' words.

The gray-robed elder looked at the two middle-aged man and woman from Zeus and said in a deep voice, "Is this the child taking his own liberties, or is it an order from the upper echelons of Zeus?"

The middle-aged man turned his head towards the gray-robed elder with a deadpan expression and said, "That child's words represent the will of Zeus."

The gray-robed elder frowned as his eyes flared with anger. He said, "So this was what all of you have planned from the beginning. You want to cut off the traditions between the two organizations."

The middle-aged man shook his head and said, "No, it's because your rookies are just too disappointing. Therefore, we have judged that this battle exchange that leaves one with no suspense is not worth us wasting our precious time on. It is your weakness that has severed our tradition."

"You!"

The gray-robed elder stared angrily, but he did not know how to rebut. Although the middle-aged man's words were hard-nosed, it was extremely rational.



The battle exchange's goal was to learn from one another, but when the difference in strength was too disparate, it could not meet the goals of an exchange. Such a battle exchange was a complete waste of time.

However, the gray-robed elder did not believe that it was just a spur of the moment. Everything had been premeditated.

By forcibly bringing forward the battle exchange, Zeus must have decided to sever the illusion of peace between the two parties through this battle exchange. The speed battle that happened much faster than previous years was also planned in advanced.

If that was the case, Heartless' "hundred Psionic Condensing Pills" declaration was also designed ahead of time. And his so-called "personal reasons" was an excuse used to conceal the matter!

Revealing Heartless' personal reasons at the end was also done deliberately. It was to prevent this scheme from having any flaws.

The gray-robed elder quickly figured out the truth as his pupils violently constricted. He looked at the middle-aged man and said aghast, "That Ye Youtian is one of yours!"

Yes, everything was a result of Ye Youtian, who suddenly appeared. He rationalized Heartless' so-called "personal reasons". It made the quick end of the battle understandable, and with that, Zeus had used it as a perfectly legitimate reason to sever the tradition of the battle exchange.



Ye Youtian, no. That person might very well be a fake Ye Youtian. He was just a tiny chess piece Zeus had buried in Gaia. It was meant to detonate at the appropriate time!

The middle-aged man revealed an odd smile and said, “It is whatever you think it is.”

The gray-robed elder gave a wry smile. “So it was just a chess piece that could be abandoned at any time. This scheme was indeed ingenious. I believe it was that particular Lord’s work?”

“No comment.”

The middle-aged man turned his head away with a deadpan expression and spoke no more.

With the topic ending here, there was already nothing further to talk about. As long as they held onto the results of the battle exchange, public opinion was leaning towards Zeus. No one would believe that such a tradition needed to continue persisting.

However, this was just the beginning. Since Zeus had severed this tradition, it meant that they were about to begin their actions of devouring Gaia. Although it was unknown what their next act was, it was likely to happen very soon. Furthermore, it would be closely linked to what had just happened.

The gray-robed elder’s face turned ashen. With the situation fixed in place, he had no way of redeeming the cancellation of the

battle exchange tradition. Now, what he needed to consider was to guard against Zeus' acquisition.

...

...

In the stadium, One-Pun looked at the elderly God of Swords and said with a sigh, "Was this the reason why you personally came?"

The elderly God of Swords gave an awkward smile and said, "I did not know about the plans of those old fogeys in Zeus, but they did tell me that the mass selection might be dangerous, so they invited me. And since the matter affects the safety of my two disciples, I naturally could not sit idle. I did not know beforehand that those old fogeys had invited me here because they were afraid that Gaia would make a desperate rush after all decorum was lost."

One-Pun fell silent for a few moments after hearing this. He said, "The explanation is just a cover."

The elderly God of Swords roared with laughter and answered, "A cover means a fabricated story. Haha, go ahead and use the most malicious speculation against my integrity. I would still have a clear conscience!"

One-Pun sighed and spoke no further. Everything was a foregone conclusion, so speaking any further was pointless.

The audience had already burst into a flurry of discussion. Although this matter was reasonable, it was still a huge smack in the face. The failure in the battle was just too disastrous and the cancellation of the tradition meant that Gaia would definitely lose all face.

In the arena, the corners of Heartless' mouth suffused an undetectable smile. Suddenly, he shouted loudly towards the audience and said, "Do not blame us for being heartless. Think carefully what resulted in this outcome. It's not that Zeus does not want to continue the friendly exchange with Gaia, but it's because your rookies are too weak! Think back to the seven battles today. What did you all see? Crushing defeats, completely crushing defeats! Do you understand? Everything is a result of your rookie delegation being unable to live up to expectations!"

When Heartless' voice echoed in the audience's ears, it immediately resulted in a lot of anger from the audience. However, a number of people were angry because of Heartless' relentless words, while another group of people had found an outlet to vent this anger. They transferred their fury towards the Gaia rookie delegation.

Such voices began to slowly appear from the audience stands.

"Sigh, others can't be blamed when our rookie delegation can't live up to expectations."

"That's right. Other than those two chicks, the rest were trash!"

“I know that blond teenager. His name is Kevin. He calls himself a genius every day, but what was the result? A fucking piece of trash.”

“In the future, don’t flaunt Mu Yuesheng. She came to Gaia only because it’s better to be the head of a dog than the tail of a lion. In Gaia, she may be very strong, but when compared to people from other organizations, she’s only average. In front of a super rookie, she’s nothing.”

“That Ye Youtian, who came out last, was also a joke. I thought the person who would appear last would be some impressive figure. Who knew... Heh heh.”

“Hey, brother, let me tell you. This Ye Youtian is from our Annihilation division. He’s usually a simpleton and only at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. He’s not even anything in the Annihilation division.”

“Ah? Why did the upper echelons let that crap appear for the finale?”

“They had nothing to lose. Gaia is doomed sooner or later.”

“Fuck, it makes me feel like transferring to another organization.”

“ ... ”

Jarring discussions filled the audience stands. Naturally, there were people retorting, and soon, it began breaking out into a nasty quarrel. The situation turned chaotic almost immediately.

The six members of the rookie delegation that had secretly come to a corner of the audience stand from the lounge heard the accusations and quarrels. Their faces slowly turned ugly.

The three rookies who were there just to make up the numbers lowered their heads.

Kevin's face was livid as he clenched his fists.

Tears welled up in Mozzie's eyes.

Mu Yuesheng bit her lower lip, and her brown eyes were filled with obstinacy.

Be it slander or mockery, the facts were irrefutable. They had been thrashed. It was a thorough thrashing!

Against the accusations, they could only tolerate it and silently suffer.

“Boom!”

Suddenly, a world-shaking explosion boomed as everyone in the audience felt themselves quiver!

# Chapter 202: Feeling Sad, Wanting To Cry

---

“Boom!”

Suddenly, a world-shaking explosion boomed as everyone in the audience felt themselves quiver!

All of the noisy audience turned to look at the source of the explosion aghast and what they saw made them immediately widen their eyes, as though they had seen a ghost.

They saw steel debris swirling in the sky as a gigantic hole appeared in a huge perimeter wall on the left side of the stadium!

A figure walked out of the hole and retracted his straightened right fist. Combining the explosion, the hole in the wall and the stretched-out fist, everyone finally realized what had happened.

“Holy shit!!”

“Am I dreaming?”

“Isn’t the stadium’s perimeter steel walls a meter thick? This fucking punch managed to punch such a large hole?”

“ ... ”

The audience exclaimed, and when Mozzie and company saw the

figure walk out of the hole, they cried out simultaneously.

“Lord Shi Xiaobai!”

“Shi Xiaobai...”

“Darn hooligan!”

After the three people exclaimed, they felt a dark gloomy cloud above their heads.

.

Shi Xiaobai, can you not have such a grandiose entrance?

.

One-Pun gave himself a facepalm as he heard the elderly God of Swords exclaim, “Holy shit, who is this kid!?”

One-Pun said out of exasperation, “A little monster that can give even me a headache.”

The elderly God of Swords chuckled and said, “His posturing is very good for an entrance. He suits my tastes.”

One-Pun was rendered speechless and only grimly smiled.



Heartless, who was about to leave, turned around in shock. Seeing an uninvited person walk towards the arena with a cold face after punching a hole through the steel wall, Heartless could not help but ask, “Who are you?”

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked into the arena and saw Heartless. Coldly, he asked, “Where’s Heartless!?”

Heartless frowned slightly and asked curiously, “I’m Heartless, what’s the matter?”

Shi Xiaobai glanced at Heartless and suddenly walked towards the purplish-gold silver dragon sword stuck in the ground. Clasp its hilt, he pulled the sword out.

Heartless’ expression changed as he cried, “Put my sister’s sword down!”

Sunless, who was at the passageway, noticed the situation and slowly raised her hand. She whispered, “Sword, return.”

A few seconds later, Sunless opened her mouth slightly.

.

Why was there no response from her sword?

.

Sunless began silently considering various attempts at taking back her sword from the strange boy, but she did not execute any of them.

She wanted to shout, “That’s my sword”, but having not shouted loudly for a long time, she no longer knew how to shout. When the voice came out of her mouth, it was just an inaudible voice.

And on the other side, Shi Xiaobai pointed the purplish-golden silver dragon sword at Heartless. His face was filled with contempt as he scorned, “One strike. There will not be any more than that.”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai held the sword and slowly walked towards Heartless. His eyes were cold, resembling Death that was approaching. His intention for battle could not be any clearer.

The audience that was still in a flurry of discussion was stunned.

.

This teenager that made such a grandiose entrance wanted to begin fighting immediately after a statement? And what was the meaning behind his statement?

.

Heartless understood what Shi Xiaobai meant and was immediately infuriated. However, as he sensed the slowly approaching Shi Xiaobai's aura rising, his expression changed immediately. Hurriedly, he unsheathed his black sword and took up position to face the battle.

By the side, the elderly God of Swords smiling face changed drastically as though he realized something. He immediately wanted to rush forward, but he immediately felt an invisible pressure on him. It made his forehead produce beads of perspiration. He looked up and in the sky, he saw a light hidden amidst the sunlight.

And at the same time, Shi Xiaobai had already slowly walked to a distance ten meters away from Heartless. With a sneer, he suddenly accelerated!

The ten meters distance was instantly reduced to less than a meter.

Shi Xiaobai appeared in a blink of an eye in front of Heartless. The silver sword swept down like a whip from the side.

This was a sudden attack, but the alert Heartless was already prepared. With a sweep of his backhand, the black sword slashed at the silver sword!

“Keng!

The silver sword clashed with the black sword!

“Boom!”

An explosive crash echoed as the scene that everyone was watching intently stunned everyone. They saw the black sword instantly break into several fragments, while the silver sword continued slashing forward before coming to a sudden stop in front of Heartless' neck.

A strong wind suddenly arose as Heartless was sent flying to the side like a rocket. He slammed heavily into the steel wall more than ten meters away. He spat out a mouthful of blood and had a weak expression on his face. His eyes were filled with terror.

The audience struggled to swallow a mouthful of saliva as they could not believe the scene in front of them.

.

Heartless was one-shot!

.

They then saw the black-haired teenager who had suddenly arrived turn towards the audience stand with a deadpan expression. It was as though what he did was no big deal.

“This person is Tu Dahei!”

Suddenly, like he was giving a speech, the black-haired teenager spoke out loudly towards everyone without any heed, “This person is Tu Dahei, a nameless rookie in Gaia. I’m ranked at the bottom in Gaia, which is filled with hidden talents, but today, while browsing through the discussion forums, I saw a Brainless Ye brag about feeding a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to the pigs. With my bad temper, I couldn’t stand for this! I’m not an expert, but experts have chosen to keep a low profile, so only I could step forward. As all of you have seen, my sword technique is very average. It’s just Beginner Sword I just learned. Therefore, I advise all rookies that came from Zeus, you are all currently in danger. Thankfully, I was the one who struck out. If it were any other more awesome rookie, it’s hard to tell if your life would be spared, but your dicks would definitely be gone. Alright, that’s all I have to say. Continue on.”

After the black-haired youth said that, he suddenly ran away at an extremely fast speed under the agape audience’s stares. In a blink of an eye, he ran out of the hole in the perimeter wall and disappeared from their vision.

It was truly easy to come, easy to go, but it was extremely cool.

The audience broke into a riot.

“Holy shit, Gaia has such an awesome rookie?”

“That person is called Tu Dahei. He’s from our Annihilation division. His strength is usually alright, but who knew that he was

so awesome... He one-shot Heartless.”

“Was what he said true? There are actually many such awesome rookies in Gaia? That they are just keeping a low profile and did not wish to make a show out of it?”

“Heh heh, since Tu Dahei has already revealed the secret, it looks like I can’t keep a low profile anymore.”

“Sigh, that Brainless Ye was just too arrogant. I nearly could not tolerate it further and wanted to strike out, but Tu Dahei was one step ahead of me. What a pity.”

“Hey, are what all of you saying true? I’m almost about to believe it.”

“Hmm, this matter is horrifying on pondering. Horrifying on pondering...”

“...”

Mozzie and company felt their minds buzz. Hearing the audience’s conversations, Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng looked each other in the eye and burst into laughter simultaneously. Shi Xiaobai was just too good at causing trouble.

“Lord Shi Xiaobai, nice going.”

“I’m convinced. This time, I’m also convinced.”

...

In the passageway, Sunless’ eyes flashed a look of anxiety and frustration. She looked at the broken hole and whispered, “My sword...”

.

That black-haired teenager is absurd. He suddenly left and he had even taken her sword with him.

.

.

This was a sword that had accompanied her for ten years.

.

.

She needed it back.

.



.

But...

.

.

She didn't want to talk to others.

.

.

What could she do?

.

...

In the seats of honor, the gray-robed elder sighed and said, "Sorry. Forgive me for intentionally deceiving you. Gaia does have many especially powerful rookies that keep an extremely low profile. We did not send them up for the battle exchange as a consideration for our harmony. After all, they have no sense of propriety when they attack. But from the looks of it, I was wrong. I

never knew all of you prefer a more fiery battle exchange. Don't worry, Gaia will definitely do its best for next year's battle exchange. We will offer the most valuable battle exchange!"

The middle-aged man gaped, unsure as to how to respond. The middle-aged woman who never spoke reached out her hand and pinched the middle-aged man's thigh.

"Si...."

The middle-aged man felt the pain and hurriedly said, "The battle exchange has been canceled. There's no next year."

The gray-robed elder immediately said in a regretful manner, "Then that's just too bad. However, if the battle exchange were to be canceled now, would it affect Zeus' reputation? Do you think people will feel that Zeus canceled the battle exchange out of fear of losing too badly next year because of having advance knowledge of the hidden talents in Gaia? Sigh, we don't really care if the battle exchange is canceled or not. We are just afraid Zeus will end up with the bad reputation of bullying the weak and fearing the strong. That would be a sin if that were the case."

The middle-aged man's expression changed drastically as he sighed with a heavy heart.

.

Their plans might have very well failed.

.

.

Their meticulous plan had been ruined by some Tu Dahei, who suddenly ran out to posture!

.

.

Sigh, feeling sad, wanting to cry.

## Chapter 203: Didn't You See Tu Dahei One-Shot Heartless?

---

Heartless slumped to the ground, as the other five Zeus rookies swarmed out of the passageway and surrounded him. As for Sunless, who was standing at the passageway, she had vanished.

From afar, the elderly God of Swords heaved a sigh of relief when he saw the situation. Thankfully, the black-haired teenager that suddenly appeared had shown mercy at the last moment. If not, Heartless' injuries would not have been so simple.

“That strike...”

The elderly God of Swords' brows gradually knitted together.

“The strike was Beginner Sword.”

One-Pun walked over to the God of Swords, and his eyes similarly appeared roused. He said with a sigh, “However, that Beginner Sword has already reached the Crest of Perfection realm.”

The elderly God of Swords curled his mouth and said in a somewhat speechless manner, “This is the first time I've seen someone master Beginner Sword to the Crest of Perfection realm. Furthermore, he is so young. It's hard to tell if his talent is far from ordinary, or should I deride him for going too far on the wrong path. However, that strike was not as simple as Beginner Sword. That sudden burst of power is something even I couldn't

see through.”

One-Pun nodded and said, “I didn’t understand that strike either. However, that child has always been difficult to read.”

The elderly God of Swords clicked his tongue and said softly, “Does the child have a mentor?”

One-Pun turned and gave the God of Swords a glance. He said, “If I didn’t remember wrongly, the child’s mentor is...Kali.”

The God of Swords was taken aback when he heard this. He remembered that one of the three powerhouses of Gaia was named Kali, but he had never met her, nor did he know how powerful she was, but...

The elderly God of Swords carefully looked up into the sky. That light that seemed to melt into the sunlight had already disappeared. The elderly God of Swords heaved a sigh of relief. Previously, he was prepared to charge forward to prevent Shi Xiaobai’s strike when he felt something odd about it. However, he had felt an invisible pressure that was beyond any horror he had encountered in his entire life. It made him lose the will to even resist.

There was such a powerful existence in this world?

The forehead of the elderly God of Swords broke out into a cold sweat.

There was a huge blunder in intelligence!

The old fogeys in Zeus were already prepared to carry out their plans of acquiring Gaia and they had taken the three powerhouses into account. However, they had treated Kali at the same level as One-Pun. As Zeus had four powerhouses, the old fogeys judged that even if Gaia were to put up a desperate struggle, there was nothing to be feared.

However, Kali was unimaginably powerful. If Zeus' acquisition plans were to be implemented, it was unknown who would be truly finished.

Thankfully the acquisition plan had yet to begin, and the elderly God of Swords found it extremely fortunate.

...

...

In the audience stands, people were still discussing "if there were hidden talents amongst the Gaia rookies". Many people scoffed at it, believing that if there were hidden talents, there was no way they would suffer the humiliation of seven crushing defeats.

However, there were people who riposted at this moment. "Didn't you see Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless?" This sentence sounded like a bone stuck in the throats of Heartless' fans. It

lowered their rebuttal by a few octaves.

Slowly, the audience began to have numerous conversations such as the following.

“Gaia’s rookie battle exchange delegation is filled with trash, how can there be any hidden talents?”

“Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless!”

“This year’s battle exchange ended the fastest over the years. This year’s Gaia rookies is the weakest batch in recent years.”

“Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless!”

“Zeus has two super rookies, what does Gaia have?”

“Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless!”

“Bro, can we even have a proper chat?”

“Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless!”

“...”

“Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless!”



...

When such conversations reached the ears of the Zeus rookie delegation, they felt worse than losing the match. The faces of the five rookies turned grim as they looked at Heartless. Finally, they looked each other in the eyes.

The female whopper clenched her fist and suddenly turned to walk to the middle of the arena. With a deep breath, she yelled, "Shut up! That Tu Dahei is not a rookie at all!"

The audience were surprised hearing this statement, as they turned to look at the whopper.

The whopper's face was flushed red, and her eyes were burning with anger. She said loudly, "Brother Heartless said that the power of Tu Dahei's strike far exceeds the Psionic Mortal Realm. So I believe that Tu Dahei is not a rookie at all. He must be some Psionic Soul Realm expert who is physically stunted. He appeared to rescue the situation and he attempted to deceive everyone! Brother Heartless is a super rookie. He's nearly invincible in the Psionic Mortal Realm. There is no rookie that can defeat him in one strike. That Tu Dahei is a fake rookie. It's all Gaia's shameless scheme!"

The other four Zeus rookies immediately stepped forward to echo, "That's right. It's impossible for Boss Heartless to get one-shot by a rookie. This is all a scam. It's a shameless scam used by Gaia to save their reputation!"

Heartless also stood up at this moment. Looking at the black sword that had broken into two, he raised his head and shouted, “It’s impossible that a rookie possesses such power. I can’t accept it!”

Those who promoted conspiracy theories and the fans of the super rookies immediately echoed in unison. Immediately, the voices of Tu Dahei not being a rookie grew louder. If Tu Dahei was not a rookie, the sentence, “didn’t you see Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless”, would become useless. Furthermore, it would sully Gaia’s reputation for its scam.

But at this moment, a member of the audience stood up.

“I know Tu Dahei. He is our Annihilation division’s rookie!”

Another person from the audience stood up!

“I’m also from the Annihilation division. Tu Dahei is indeed a rookie!”

A group of the audience stood up.

“I’m from Annihilation division. I can take three days and three nights just to finish talking about Tu Dahei’s deeds!”

“Tu Dahei’s rookie legends can be written as a feature-length

compendium.”

“I’m good friends with Tu Dahei. I even wrote a song for him.”

“Tu Dahei is a boy who even dared to request His Excellency Hisith for his underwear.”

“Tu Dahei touched Miss Riko’s breasts in public. Tu Dahei is the pride of our Gaia rookies!”

“...”

Slowly, more and more members of the audience stood up.

“Although I’m not from the Annihilation division, I have heard of Tu Dahei’s name before. He is quite reputable amongst the Gaia rookies!”

“Sigh, it looks like I have to step forward and say a few words. Tu Dahei is actually my buddy. We knew each other back when we were in primary school...”

“Tu Dahei and I participated in the rookie evaluation test on the same day. That day, I returned and cried an entire night in bed.”

“Tu Dahei is indeed a rookie. His sword techniques were even taught by me, but his fist is actually the most powerful thing, so...”

“I have Tu Dahei’s photograph of him in rookie training, do you want me to show it to you?”

“...”

More than half the audience stood up. It was a matter of Gaia’s reputation. Even the members of the audience who did not know Tu Dahei also chose to interject. As a result, those Zeus and super rookie fans no longer dared to say a thing.

Upon hearing the thundering chants of “Tu Dahei”, the six Zeus rookies were dumbfounded. They obviously knew that many of the people were lying, but there was no way for them to keep the situation under control.

# Chapter 204: We Can't Lose Again!

---

More than half the audience stood up in solidarity and support for “Tu Dahei”.

Heartless' face turned increasingly pale. He found it unimaginable that Tu Dahei was a rookie. That strike was without any fanciful flair, it was just Beginner Sword with tremendous force. That power did not belong to the realm of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Hence, from his point of view, Tu Dahei was definitely a con Gaia had set in place to reverse the situation in the event the battle exchange tradition was ceased.

However, against the outrage of the masses, he could not prove a thing.

The female whopper looked at Heartless' expression and gritting her teeth, she turned to yell at the audience, “Shut up! All of you are cheats! All you shills! It's impossible for that Tu Dahei to be a rookie. How can a rookie defeat Brother Heartless with a single strike? How can you even quibble over such a simple logical question!?”

The audience responded with angry jeers when they heard her. The audience were people with glass hearts. Despite it being the truth, they were infuriated when they were labeled cheats.

Seeing the situation getting out of control, One-Pun stepped forward and said to everyone. “There's no need to argue further. Tu Dahei is indeed a rookie. He is a rookie recruited by Riko and

me. Riko's recommendation was given to him. Also, Tu Dahei will be heading to Shanghai tomorrow to participate in the mass selection. There is no way to fake this."

With One-Pun saying this, it was the nail in the coffin.

The six rookies from Zeus suffered a great change in expression. Heartless' face paled. With One-Pun's status, it was very unlikely he would lie. Furthermore, there was no way to fake the mass selection. It was also impossible for One-Pun to use something that could be verified tomorrow as a lie. All of this pointed to the likelihood that Tu Dahei was truly a rookie.

That Tu Dahei was a Psionic Mortal Realm Psionite!

Heartless' face turned pale as his lips trembled. That extremely simple-looking strike had a terrifying power to it, so powerful that he had yet to recover from the mental blow. Tu Dahei's power had likely far surpassed his.

Was this what it meant that experts were in the grassroots?

Heartless looked at the elderly God of Swords with a pleading look. At this moment, the only person he could believe in was the elderly God of Swords.

The other five Zeus rookies also cast their gazes at the God of Swords.

The audience all fell silent.

The elderly God of Swords sighed and walked towards them. He said, “Indeed, that strike’s power far exceeds the Psionic Mortal Realm, but Tu Dahei’s psionic cultivation realm... Even if I have poor eyes, it should not be a mistake that he is only at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Hence, Tu Dahei is unmistakably a rookie!”

When Heartless heard this, he felt like he was struck by lightning. Someone at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm had one-shot him?

Those people who knew of Tu Dahei fell into a daze.

Wasn’t Tu Dahei just at the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm a few days ago? Why was he now at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm? Holy shit, that fellow levels up as though he’s sitting on rockets!

As the elderly God of Swords looked at the crowd, he said apologetically, “Gaia’s rookies are indeed teeming with hidden talents. I shall personally apologize for my disciple’s ‘arrogant’ words to Gaia. The battle exchange tradition will never be canceled. Zeus and Gaia’s friendship will last forever!”

With this said, the audience burst into an uproar of cheers. With the elderly God of Swords acknowledging Gaia, this made the audience who were deeply disappointed with Gaia suddenly rediscover their faith in Gaia.

The audience or the public, in general, were such creatures. Their praise or condemnation was usually not a result of many complicated factors. All that mattered was what feelings they had from what was shown to them.

Without a doubt, Shi Xiaobai's sudden appearance of a short minute—that one punch, that one slash, that one sentence—had changed their view of Gaia!

The elderly God of Swords looked at the six Zeus rookies and said with a sigh, “Let’s go.”

Heartless’ face was pale as he said with great difficulty, “Why?”

Why do we need to make such a compromising decision? Even if Tu Dahei were truly a rookie, there is no need for us to bow our heads that low. By saying that, wouldn’t Zeus’ plan to acquire Gaia be completely stillborn?

The elderly God of Swords gaped and shook his head with a wry smile. He took the lead to walk towards the passageway, his back looking somewhat lonely.

He obviously did not want to tell his disciple that they were out of options.

Our opponent has an awesome super great BOSS, we can’t afford to mess with her!



The six Zeus rookies had a tremendous change in expression. At this moment, the audience were cheering for Tu Dahei and Gaia. And with the elderly God of Swords' attitude, it made them feel the desolate feelings of being abandoned by the world.

The joy of winning the battle exchange disappeared.

The one-shotting of Heartless made them feel even more frustrated.

They thought they were here in Gaia to crush weaklings and relax their moods, but they never expected to receive such a brutal face-smacking.

Sigh, feeling sad, wanting to cry.

At this moment, Heartless suddenly took a deep breath and patted the shoulders of the other five. Slowly, he revealed a smile and walked forward. Everyone's eyes were immediately concentrated on him.

Heartless suddenly faced the audience and gave a deep bow.

The audience was immediately shocked as the din came to a halt.

"Sorry, I apologize solemnly for the words that I said. Gaia's rookies are very strong. Brother Dahei has taught the young and

stupid me a lesson. He let me realize that there are people better than me. So, I want to say thank you to Brother Dahei!”

Heartless had an extremely sincere expression. There was no pretense to it. He raised his head to survey the audience and said loudly, “I believe the performances of my teammates today were extremely interesting. I wish everyone will not forget their wonderful performance because of my failure! At the mass selection that will be held tomorrow, we will look forward to having another exchange with the Gaia rookie delegation. I believe that when the time comes, we will have a more interesting performance. I also wish that Gaia would not fault Zeus because of my personal arrogance. Everything should be blamed on me. From today onwards, I will be more modest in my efforts and mend my shortcomings. I look forward to being able to cross swords with Brother Dahei as soon as possible!”

After Heartless said this, he gave a deep bow once again. Turning around, he walked towards the passageway. The other five Zeus rookies looked at each other when they saw Heartless’ back. Turning to the audience, they gave a deep bow and resolutely chased after Heartless.

At that instant, the entire stadium quietened down.

Kevin clenched his fists tightly and turned his head towards Mozzie. He said, “The next time, I will definitely win.”

“You can do it!”

Mozzie nodded at Kevin and waved her little fist. She then turned towards Mu Yuesheng and said, “Sister Yuesheng, I want to learn movement techniques, can you teach me? Next time, for the mass selection, I don’t want...to lose to her again. At least, I can’t lose that terribly.”

“Alright!”

Mu Yuesheng nodded seriously and after a moment of hesitation, she said, “I want to become stronger... If Shi Xiaobai’s massage can really increase my cultivation speed...”

Mozzie’s eyes immediately lit up and she said with a smile, “Leave the mission of finding a spot that no one will bother you to This Mosquito!”

Mu Yuesheng fell into a daze as her cheeks blushed slightly.

At this moment, the three of them had only one thought.

At the mass selection, they could not afford to lose again!

# Chapter 205: The King's Choice

---

At a remote corner in Steel City, Shi Xiaobai threw the sword in his hand on the ground, producing a thud. He sat leaning against a wall, with melancholy filling his eyes.

As Riko requested, he had completed a round of face smacking, but the wave of face smacking he gave was not ruthless enough. Furthermore, it was ended in a rush. It was hard to say that it was enjoyable; at least, certain readers found it unsatisfactory and hollered that they did not find it awesome enough.

But there was no other choice. Shi Xiaobai had his own unspeakable reasons. The strength to “one-shot” Heartless was not his own strength. He had used a special method.

And that special method was called—doping!

When Kevin's affection for Mozzie reached ‘Like’, Shi Xiaobai received a C-Level reward from the Absolute Choice. The reward were three golden pills.

These three pills were called “One Second Shura”. Its function was simple. The moment the pills were crushed, the person who took it would have 99% of his Psionic Power compressed instantaneously before the power burst out for a second.

When Shi Xiaobai slashed out that strike, he crushed the “One Second Shura” he had in his mouth. Although his psionic cultivation realm was not considered high, the amount of Psionic

Power reserves he had were ample. By compressing it for an instant, it reached a terrifying level.

Along with the King's Beginner Sword that he had just mastered, this simple-looking strike secretly contained astounding power.

The most direct manifestation of it was the shattering of Heartless' black sword. Just the storm formed by the sword energy had thrown Heartless more than ten meters back, to the point of him throwing up a mouthful of blood.

Against a heaven-defying talented super rookie whose psionic cultivation realm was higher than him, Shi Xiaobai's strike had surprised everyone. His punch through the steel wall and one-shot of the super rookie, Heartless, successfully portrayed the image of him being mysterious and powerful.

Following that, Shi Xiaobai had said his statement, a lie he deliberately fabricated.

However, the fact was that compared to the Zeus rookies, Shi Xiaobai's anger was more geared towards the audience from Steel City. He was furious at their gloating and mocking of the Gaia rookie delegation. He was infuriated that they lacked the slightest bit of collective honor.

Hence, compared to that lie, Shi Xiaobai wished that he could curse out at the audience.

However, Shi Xiaobai finally chose to make the lie.

“Foolish citizens are still citizens. As King, I should lead them, shouldn’t I?” Shi Xiaobai told himself.

Hence, he chose to deceptively mislead them. He told the Gaia audience and the Steel City citizens that there were many hidden talents amongst Gaia’s rookies!

This lie was hardly believable, but after one-shotting Heartless, no one dared to directly deny it.

Therefore, it was enough.

This was enough to change the attitudes of the audience. It was enough to “win back the hearts of the people”.

When citizens mocked their own countries, as King, one should not have his eyes obscured by anger. This was because the citizens were just engaging in herd mentality out of ignorance. Their actions were a result of what they could see.

They saw the weakness of their country so they denigrated it.

If a King were to curse at his subjects and citizens and punish them for that, or even enforced bans, it would result in the situation becoming worse. The King would greatly lose the people’s trust.

And if at this moment, a person with stunning power appeared in the country to create the thought of ‘Ah, my country is just laying low’, then the mockery would naturally come to an end. The hearts of the people would also turn towards a different direction.

Such an example was extremely apt when used to describe the present Gaia. Unfortunately, as the “ruling class”, the upper echelons of Gaia had failed to realize this point, and even chose to turn a blind eye, allowing the prevailing attitude to pervade.

As a result, Shi Xiaobai had no choice but use himself to accomplish this goal. Regardless of the matter, Gaia was the first organization he joined. He got to know a few friends here, so he had feelings for Gaia.

After saying that important lie, Shi Xiaobai could not hold on any further. With “One Second Shura” draining 99% of his Psionic Power, Shi Xiaobai would have collapsed if not for “Unleaking Turtle Aura” forcefully supporting him.

After quickly saying that passage, he rushed out of the stadium and sat down at a secluded spot. He did not even have the strength to move a finger.

Shi Xiaobai had used a few minutes and his own strength to change the final outcome of the battle exchange.

However....he was not that happy or excited.

“By not being able to fight them all, This King is unhappy.”

Shi Xiaobai looked up into the sky with a depressed expression.

The wave of face smacking was just too short. Furthermore, he did not manage to avenge the seven crushing defeats. It felt as though something was missing.

Feeling sad, wanting to cry.

However, Shi Xiaobai had done his best, and he had made the best choice. It could be said that for Gaia, he had changed his modus operandi.

“Wait and see, Zeus. This is not the end of it.”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and immediately thought of the upcoming mass selection. He would definitely encounter the Zeus rookies there, and when the time came, Shi Xiaobai would let them understand that a King was not to be easily infuriated.

“Kacha, kacha, kacha...”

Suddenly, a strange sound sounded from beside him. Shi Xiaobai used whatever remaining strength he had left to turn his head and was immediately alarmed.



He saw the snow-white loli, who had appeared out of his right hand without him realizing it, grabbing the purplish-gold silver sword and munching on it. The way she was drooling made it seem like she was enjoying a delicacy.

Her tiny mouth and white teeth were nibbling gently on the dragon patterned blade, as though she was munching on a crisp cookie. As her munching continued, she would bite a piece of the metal and with a bit of chewing, she would swallow it with her eyes squinting happily.

At this moment, more than half the purplish-gold silver dragon sword had been bitten off.

Seeing Shi Xiaobai turn around, the loli stopped and revealed a pitiful expression and said as though she was about to cry, “Big Brother, hungry~”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback as he asked, “Swords are your food?”

Shi Xiaobai had a strong ability of acceptance, so he immediately guessed at this possibility.

“Yea!”

The loli immediately nodded and looked at the remaining half of the sword. Looking up, she carefully gazed at Shi Xiaobai with a cute expression, as though she knew she was in the wrong, but

wanted to make the best of an error without rectifying her faults.

Shi Xiaobai never had any resistance against a cute loli, so he waved his hand and said, “Go ahead and eat. In the future, This King will find you a pile of divine swords for you to eat as you please!”

The loli fell into a daze and nodded her head heavily. As she let out a light laugh, her face was beaming blissfully. She opened her mouth and continued biting at the remaining half sword.

Shi Xiaobai smiled and continued looking up. He did not know who had stuck the sword in the ground, but due to the urgent situation, and him finding this sword comfortable in the hand, he had brought the sword along with him.

Now that the sword was mostly eaten through, although he was a bit sorry for the sword’s master, it was already too late. He wished that the sword’s master would restrain her grief and accord with inevitable changes.

At this moment, a set of footsteps was heard from around the corner.

The loli’s facial expression changed and she quickly pushed the sword remnants into Shi Xiaobai’s hand and transformed into a ball of golden light before diving into his right hand.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head slightly when he heard the sound of

footsteps.

Soon, a beauty entered his vision. The girl was dressed in an azure-colored dress. She did not have any expression on her face, but her beauty was breathtaking.

The azure-dressed girl walked out from a corner and saw Shi Xiaobai sitting on the ground. She let out a soft and gentle voice like a kitten's mew.

“My sword...”

The azure-dressed girl said and suddenly looked down. With a glance, she saw the remnants of the purplish-gold silver dragon sword in Shi Xiaobai's hand.

## Chapter 206: His Freedom Was Not There

---

Sunless lowered her head and saw the sword remnant in Shi Xiaobai's hand. That purplish-gold hilt and silver blade, wasn't that her purplish-gold silver dragon sword?

But...why was it in such a state?

Sunless quietly came in front of Shi Xiaobai and squatted down. Gently, she pulled out the sword remnant from Shi Xiaobai's hand and hugged it with a pained look while muttering, "Little Purple..."

Little Purple was likely the name she had given to the sword.

Shi Xiaobai looked sideways at the girl's face. Under her dark golden hair was a fair face. And on her face, there was a pair of blue eyes that had a depressed look. Other than that, there was no other expression. That was all there was to that.

However, Shi Xiaobai could feel the intense woes the girl was feeling in her heart, as though she had lost a loved one.

"Sorry."

Shi Xiaobai could not help but say that single word to profess his apologies.

The girl turned to glance at Shi Xiaobai. She gaped slightly but did not speak. Instead, she lowered her head to caress the sword remnant, as her eyes suddenly glazed over.

“You...”

The girl pushed out the sword remnant towards Shi Xiaobai and pointed to its edges. There were teeth marks on the edges.

Shi Xiaobai was taken aback and moments later, he sighed and said, “Sorry, This King was just too hungry.”

From the girl’s body, he could sense her sadness, but not a hint of anger. This made Shi Xiaobai feel extremely sorry. He did not want to deceive the girl unnecessarily, so he took all the blame.

However, what he said didn’t sound very believable. It was quite shocking to hear about a human eating a sword.

The girl fell silent for a moment and suddenly reached out her hand to press on Shi Xiaobai’s chest.

Shi Xiaobai was alarmed, but he could not sense any danger from the girl, so he relaxed.

Moments later, the girl retracted her hand and softly said, “You...are very weak.”

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily shocked. After taking the golden pill, “One Second Shura”, 99% of his Psionic Power had been drained. He had persisted on to say his lie before using Crab Steps to run to this secluded spot. The remaining 1% had long vanished, and he no longer had any Psionic Power left in his body.

Indeed, he was currently very weak, so weak that he was like an old person on his deathbed. However, his vitality had not been reduced. His weakness was just a result of his Psionic Power being drained. He would gradually recover with time.

Just as Shi Xiaobai wanted to explain that he was fine, the girl suddenly pushed the remaining portion of the sword into Shi Xiaobai’s bosom.

Shi Xiaobai was startled and raised his head in confusion.

“Eat.”

The girl’s dreamy voice sounded like it came from beyond the heavens. Putting down the sword remnant, she immediately stood up and turned around. With a brisk pace, she walked towards the bend.

The girl’s speed was extremely fast, and in a blink of an eye, she had reached the bend. However, her footsteps stumbled slightly as she looked reluctantly back at the sword remnant in Shi Xiaobai’s bosom, but immediately she bit her lips and disappeared from the secluded alley.

Shi Xiaobai reacted moments later, as a wry smile suffused across his lips.

From the girl's look of grief, this sword was clearly very important to her. However, despite the culprit sitting in front of her, she had not blamed him, nor did she show any emotive signs of grumbling. Instead, she had given him the sword remnant which was extremely important to her for "consumption" after discovering his extremely weak state.

And they were only strangers.

Shi Xiaobai reached out his hand to grasp the purplish-gold hilt and sighed lightly.

A golden beam flashed as the loli appeared. With a sorry look, she said, "Big Brother..."

Shi Xiaobai immediately consoled her, "This matter is not your fault. It's all This King's fault."

The loli hesitated for a moment and suddenly took a step forward. Holding Shi Xiaobai's hand, her tiny finger tapped onto his palm. Suddenly, a dazzling golden beam bloomed from her slightly cold fingertip, like a golden lotus.

The golden lotus lasted for a few moments before its glow dissipated. In Shi Xiaobai's palm, a small golden pearl appeared.

Shi Xiaobai asked in wonderment, “This is?”

The loli’s pink lips paled slightly as she said, “This is a heritage for sword arts. It’s a very, very powerful sword technique. Big Brother, when you see Big Sister in the future, put it in between her eyebrows, just like how Big Brother gained insight into Beginner Sword.”

“Alright!”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head heavily.

...

...

Steel City, medical ward. Ye Jiaquan, who was still in a coma, suddenly opened his eyes. When the nurse beside him saw him wake up, she was delighted and wanted to call a doctor.

However, a thick, rough hand hit the nurse in the neck.

The nurse blacked out and collapsed to the ground.

Ye Jiaquan retracted his hand while his eyes remained cold. His face no longer had a simple and honest look. His savage-looking face made him look truly frightening.



Ye Jiaquan quickly got off the bed and scanned his surroundings cautiously. Quickly, he walked towards the window and his large figure suddenly leaped up. He jumped through the window like a fish jumping through a hoop.

After somersaulting in mid-air once, his feet landed firmly on the steel ground. A slight thud was emitted, and the moment he landed, Ye Jiaquan immediately hid in a secluded corner.

With a heavy face, he took out his cellphone to make a call.

“Doo...Doo...”

The phone call connected after ringing for a moment, but the other end of the line maintained silence after the line connected.

After a while, Ye Jiaquan was the first to speak, “It’s me.”

The other end of the line produced a strange voice that had been modulated. “You have failed again. This time, I can’t protect you either, so...run away.”

When Ye Jiaquan heard this, he fell silent for a moment and said with a deep voice, “You also know that be it the golden-white holy dragon’s matter or this battle exchange, they were both not my fault.”

“I know.”

No emotion could be heard from the modulated voice as it said, “We also know, but...Lord Duke is furious. Someone has to bear the brunt of his anger.”

Ye Jiaquan gave a wry smile and said, “Don’t I still have a bit of value? At least, I managed to succeed at approaching Shi Xiaobai. If Lord Duke requires me, I can kill him now.”

“If Lord Duke wants to kill Shi Xiaobai, there is no need to borrow the hand of others. Furthermore, you have already been exposed. Be it Gaia or Zeus, they have all guessed your role in this matter. Currently, you are facing the pursuit of three factions.”

“Fuck!”

Ye Jiaquan’s face turned livid when he heard this and furiously punched the steel wall beside him. After a moment as he gasped for breath, he said, “Is there no other way?”

The person on the other end of the line fell into silence.

Ye Jiaquan coldly said, “Your grandson is about to die!”

The voice on the other side of the connection sighed. Suddenly, it said in a rapid tone, “Sell your soul to another devil, get him to protect you. There are seven Regal Dukes, aren’t there?”

Ye Jiaquan was momentarily startled as his expression changed drastically. Finally, he let out a long sigh and said, “Thank you.”

On the other side of the phone connection, the voice fell silent for a moment before suddenly saying, “Ye Youtian, from today onwards, you have to abandon this identity of yours. The Ye family will no longer acknowledge your existence.”

Ye Jiaquan gave a self-mocking laugh and said, “Since I have chosen this path, I have never thought of returning to the Ye family. However, if the Ye family dares to let down Little Sun and Little Heart in any way, you should know what I will do.”

“Don’t worry, those two children will have the most perfect of futures. I’m very happy that they have a...great elder brother.”

Once the other end of the line said this, it hung up.

“Doo...Doo...”

Ye Jiaquan placed the phone down and looked up into the sky. The sky was vast and infinite, but his freedom was not there.

# Chapter 207: Set Off With This King!

---

Riko's apartment.

Riko was beaming with her eyes squinted as she looked at the threads that were constantly appearing on the discussion forums.

Not long before, she had switched on her computer out of curiosity over the developments of the battle exchange.

She had browsed through the forums, and it nearly made her blow her top. Heartless' declaration of "feeding a hundred Psionic Condensing Pills to the pigs" nearly made her throw her laptop. Following that, news of one Gaia rookie after another being thrashed made her feel sad and close to tears.

And what frustrated her the most were the Internet flammers being "keyboard warriors". They condemned the rookie delegation team and criticized Gaia unfairly.

As a result, she angrily replied to the threads. Although she knew it was useless, that was the only thing she could do to vent the depressive feelings in her heart.

Soon, news of Heartless' declaration of the end of the battle exchange proliferated on the Internet. It gave Riko a shock. This matter was extremely infuriating upon careful thought. Her heart felt a chill because, by the actions of Zeus, this was just the prelude to an impending storm.

Shortly after, new threads suddenly began appearing.

The stories of Tu Dahei smashing down the steel wall with one punch and his one-shotting Heartless were reported in various versions on the discussion forums.

Riko was alarmed as she hurriedly rushed to Shi Xiaobai's room and discovered that Shi Xiaobai was truly no longer there.

She returned to the living room again. The discussion forums were teeming with discussions about Shi Xiaobai's "Gaia is filled with hidden talents".

Riko could not stop sniggering. The dark clouds in her mind were swept clean.

The discussions on the forums immediately switched gears. The threads that rebuked the rookie delegation team and Gaia received face-smacking replies. After the elderly God of Swords and Heartless' acknowledgment of Gaia, the flammers shut their mouths. The users who endured the flammers managed to strike back as they rejoiced in venting their anger.

Riko joined the ranks of becoming a flamer. She would respond on every former flamer's thread with a single sentence, "But Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless!".

Later on, the discussion forums suddenly gave rise to an

interesting phenomenon. Nearly every minute, several new threads that had to do with “The unspeakable secrets of Tu Dahei and I” appeared.

These threads were filled with extremely humorous content. Every user on the discussion forum seemed to transform into a meme expert.

Riko was amused reading all of this. After opening a thread and reading it till the end, she would often find them so humorous that her belly hurt.

Riko began to hum happily and thought to herself that she had to be nicer to Shi Xiaobai in the future.

If not for Shi Xiaobai, today’s battle exchange would have a different ending. It was an ending Riko did not wish to see.

Shi Xiaobai had not only completed his promise to her by smacking the flammers in the face thoroughly, he had even said a wise and farsighted lie.

Riko understood Shi Xiaobai’s character very well, so how could she not know that this was not Shi Xiaobai’s usual style? Therefore, she was rather moved by Shi Xiaobai’s willingness to make such a sacrifice and change for Gaia.

With a thought, Riko called Yama Minamiya. The four rookies were to head for Shanghai tomorrow, so someone definitely had to

lead them. However, it was a tiring and unrewarding job. With Riko's temper, she would not have done it, but she had now changed her mind.

...

...

That night was an eventful but short night.

Mozzie tossed and turned, while Kevin suffered from insomnia. Mu Yuesheng was constantly distressed about the massaging, while Shi Xiaobai only managed to have a chance to return to his room to sleep only after being tortured by Riko's crazy "celebrations" late into the night.

However, this night was not cold.

The next day at eight in the morning. Steel City Airport.

There was a packed crowd waiting at the airport. Today was the day the four rookie representatives from Gaia would head to Shanghai to report. They would then participate in the mass selection tomorrow.

This was an extremely important event for a second-tier organization like Gaia. There was no chance for them to enter the top ten to begin with. The citizens of Steel City had scoffed at the selection, but after what happened yesterday, everyone's

viewpoint had a sudden change.

Tu Dahei, who was from Gaia, would be participating in the mass selection. He had one-shot super rookie Heartless. If that was the case, it was possible that he could become one of the ten organizational representatives for the collective training!

The glory for the ten organizational representatives was nothing for famous organizations like Zeus, but it was a major boost for rookies.

However, for the constantly desolate and dejected Gaia, this would definitely be a highly effective morale-booster.

If Tu Dahei could become one of the members of the collective training between the two factions, and perform exceptionally well in this collective training of national concern, it would definitely allow the national assessment of Gaia to rise up to a new level.

As a result, the upper echelons of Gaia and the Steel City residents paid a great deal of attention to this matter.

Early in the morning, many citizens were waiting at the airport, preparing to see them off.

Yama Minamiya, who put down his work to lead the delegation, was the first person to arrive at the airport. Following that, Mu Yuesheng, Mozzie, and Kevin arrived one after another. They did not board the plane immediately, but instead stood in front of the



plane and waited alongside the citizens.

Everyone was waiting for the arrival of that youth.

Finally, the gates to the airport opened, as two figures slowly walked over.

A girl with a single ponytail wore t-shirt and jeans. Her delicate and beautiful face made her resemble an angel, but her ample chest, thin waist, and long legs proudly accentuated her figure.

As for the black-haired youth beside the girl, he had delicate looks. He did not look particularly handsome, but it was not mediocre as well. His black eyes shimmered like stars.

When the duo walked over, the crowd immediately erupted into deafening cheers.

“Tu Dahei! Tu Dahei! Tu Dahei!”

Yesterday, Shi Xiaobai had left in a hurry. They did not have a chance to cheer for his punch, slash, and words. Now, with the opportunity finally here, they gave their all.

Mozzie immediately joined the shouting ranks. After giving it some thought, Mu Yuesheng also shouted softly. Kevin’s face stiffened for a few moments, but when no one noticed, he would sneak in a few shouts of “God DogLeading”...

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat stunned, but the corners of his mouth slowly widened into a grin.

Riko patted Shi Xiaobai lightly on the shoulder and said with a light smile, “Say something?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded and walked forward, as he waved to the crowd.

Everyone slowly settled down upon seeing this as their eyes were focused on Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and raised his right hand high. Looking at everyone, he said loudly, “For this upcoming mass selection, we only have one goal—all four will enter the top ten! And This King only has one goal as well—winning first place!”

When he said this, everyone was dumbfounded.

This goal was too much a boast, wasn't it?

Yama Minamiya shook his head helplessly. If the four could even enter the top hundred, it would definitely be worth its bragging rights, but top ten? If the four could enter the top ten, Gaia would have bragging rights that lasted for years.

Mozzie stuck her tongue out and thought, Lord Shi Xiaobai truly

is ambitious, but...This Mosquito isn't that impressive.

A dark cloud hung over Kevin's face. He felt that it was very unlikely he could even enter the top hundred.

Mu Yuesheng's eyes shimmered slightly. She wanted to enter the top ten.

Everyone had disparate thoughts, as Shi Xiaobai grinned. He took the first step forward towards the airplane.

With a wave of his hand, Shi Xiaobai said in high-spirits, "Let's go, set off with This King!"

# Chapter 208: These Legs Of Hers Could Go Around The Block For A Year

---

Steel City was located along the south-eastern coast of China. It was not very far from Shanghai, so a private jet took about one and a half hours to traverse the distance.

At this moment, other than the pilots on the plane, there were the four rookie representatives, as well as the guides, Yama Minamiya and Riko.

From the moment Mozzie entered the plane, she clung onto Riko. To her, Miss Riko was a goddess at Gaia's "school belle" level. Riko was someone she had always adored. Having managed to see her, Mozzie obviously grasped the opportunity to chat with her.

Riko had a good first impression of the lovely and lively girl. Especially after reading on the discussion boards about the stories of how Mozzie had clashed head on with the whopper yesterday, she immediately felt affectionate towards her. The duo chatted and laughed as they sat at a double seat.

Kevin glanced at Shi Xiaobai with a look of repulsiveness after boarding the plane. He chose to silently sit beside Yama Minamiya.

The other five evenly found a seat. By a curious coincidence, Mu Yuesheng forgot to find an independent open seat, and ended up sitting beside Shi Xiaobai.

Mozzie and Riko began to chat idly, but slowly the duo's topic shifted to Shi Xiaobai.

Mozzie wanted to know trivia about Lord Shi Xiaobai's life from Riko since Lord Shi Xiaobai lived with her.

As for Riko, she wanted to inquire about Shi Xiaobai's performance on the first day at the mini-collective training.

When they began talking about Shi Xiaobai, the duo immediately could not stop laughing. There were too many points of amusement for them in the stories of Shi Xiaobai.

Slowly, Mozzie brought up the topic of Shi Xiaobai's Massage Technique of God.

"Ss...Are you saying that you were very fat before, and after Shi Xiaobai massaged you, you became so lovely?"

Riko was amazed and found it incredulous.

Mozzie knew Riko was skeptical, she immediately found a picture from her cellphone. It was a picture from a long time ago and also the only remaining old picture that she had yet to delete from her cellphone. It was used to flaunt Lord Shi Xiaobai's godlike massage techniques.

"Look, this is my picture from before."

Mozzie held out the picture of her obese self, but her face was beaming delightfully.

After Riko saw the fat girl in the photo who was as rotund as a ball, she looked down at Mozzie's petite figure. She drew a gasp and gaped.

“Shi Xiaobai, is this true? Your massage techniques can help lose weight!?”

Riko immediately turned to ask Shi Xiaobai.

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up. This was an opportunity for him to promote the Massage Technique of God. Obviously, he could not let it go. Shi Xiaobai immediately said loudly, “Of course! This King's Massage Technique of God can do anything! There is no problem in this world that the Massage Technique of God cannot solve!”

Riko rolled her eyes. She obviously did not believe the bullshit that the “Massage Technique of God” could do anything.

Mu Yuesheng, who was sitting beside him with her eyes closed, suddenly said, “What Mozzie said is true. Shi Xiaobai's massaging can indeed help lose weight. Kevin and I can attest to the fact.”

Riko was stunned. She finally began to believe that Shi Xiaobai's massage techniques had the amazing effects of helping one lose

weight.

This caught Riko's interest as she said to Shi Xiaobai, "My thighs have recently grown fatter. Come to my room tonight and massage them."

Shi Xiaobai immediately nodded and said, "Sure!"

Mozzie, who was beside Riko, stared blankly at Riko's thighs. Her thighs looked rounded and filled with bounce under the contours of her jeans. The ratios were nearly perfect, and it was like a beautiful dream.

Those legs of hers were enough to go around for a year!

Mozzie immediately felt extremely envious. Although after slimming down her figure was petite, her thighs were overly slender. It did not have the curvaceous beauty Riko had.

But the crux of the issue was that Riko actually found her thighs fat!

Mozzie sighed. It was really exasperating comparing.

When Riko's sentence landed in Yama Minamiya and Kevin's ears, it took on another form. They automatically translated Riko's words into—Come into my room tonight and massage (touch) my thighs.

Yama Minamiya shook his head and gave a bitter smile, as he sighed how a grown daughter could not be kept at home.

Kevin's fear for Shi Xiaobai's flirting skills went to the next higher level. Was this bastard trying to build a harem like Lord God?

However, Riko did not put too much thought into it, or it could be said that she had subconsciously ignored the fact that massaging her thighs needed her thighs to be touched. If it were any other male, Riko would obviously realize this and would not have suggested such a thing that would only 'harm' herself.

However, this person was Shi Xiaobai. It was a whole different matter. Ever since her breasts were touched by Shi Xiaobai numerous times that night, Riko subconsciously no longer had her guard up against Shi Xiaobai.

The main reason was because Shi Xiaobai was too harmless. Riko also subconsciously believed that Shi Xiaobai would not do anything overboard.

Hence, under her subconscious lack of awareness of her thighs being touched, she sat down delighted. The more she thought, the more excited she became. Clenching her fist, she said, "Haha, in the future, I will be able to enjoy all sorts of delicacies. Shi Xiaobai's massage services would be sufficient once I grow fat!"

Riko had the mentality that "with Shi Xiaobai in hand, obesity



shall all go away”.

Mozzie gaped and wanted to tell Riko that Lord Shi Xiaobai's massage was not that simple. Every squeeze made one feel as though they were in fairyland. One could not help but moan.

When you are massaged by Lord Shi Xiaobai, you will lose your self-control!

But Mozzie hesitated for a few moments before choosing to hide the truth. Firstly, she did not want to mention what had happened the previous night, and secondly...she couldn't be the only one stuck in the hole!

Mozzie chose to be malicious this time.

Mu Yuesheng sighed in her heart. She envied Riko for her open-minded attitude and also secretly encouraged herself.

Mu Yuesheng secretly opened her eyes and glanced sideways at Shi Xiaobai. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was looking out the window beside him, beaming, with a smile on his lips.

That side profile, that refined look, sunshine, and full of vitality.

Just looking at him and thinking of the things he had previously said and done, no matter how scarred one's heart was or how sad one was, it would slowly fade away.

He was like the winter sun. Gentle and not dazzling, warm but not cold. When needed, he would burst forth with his blazing light, melting the snow around the world, bringing the scenes of spring.

She had not known him for long, but she was certain that he was such a person.

“Shi Xiaobai.”

Mu Yuesheng called out gently and was about to request Shi Xiaobai to massage her to help increase her cultivation speed.

At this moment, Yama Minamiya suddenly stood up and said loudly to everyone, “The official forecast is out!”

Everyone was startled as they turned to look at Yama Minamiya.

Official forecast? What was that?

Yama Minamiya waved the cellphone in his hand and said, “The organization’s senate has done a calculation of the thousand rookies participating in the mass selection and has forecast the ten people most likely to be eventually chosen! Everyone can take a good look at it!”

## Chapter 209: The Purest Sword Fanatic

---

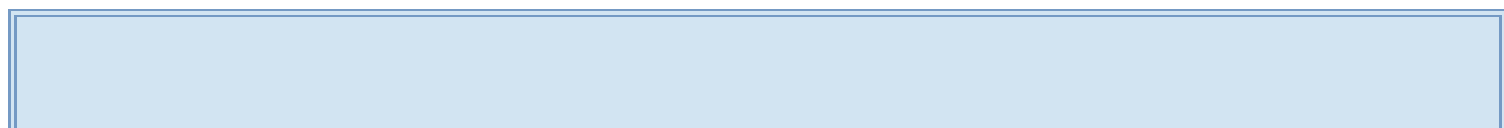
The top ten name list the organization senate predicted was no doubt an important piece of news. By choosing ten from a thousand, it was no doubt a glorious matter for the ten. And even if one did not enter the top ten, they would at least know who were the few who had the highest chance of being selected.

After all, only ten people would be chosen eventually. The ten favorite rookies chosen by the official organizer had to be the strongest opponents amongst the rookies, and the greatest obstacles.

There was a television screen in front of the plane. After connecting to it wirelessly, they successfully projected the phone's screen onto the television screen. Shi Xiaobai and company looked over curiously.

The first line was an official notice—"The official forecast may not be accurate and there is definitely no conspiracy. The list is ranked according to the various statistics of the rookies and their experience. There would be some deviations from reality. In order to maintain the privacy of the rookies, this forecast will not provide the rookie's pictures. It is only provided as a reference."

The group automatically ignored this passage. Riko urged Yama Minamiya to swipe up. With a helpless smile, he swiped upwards, revealing the first person on the list.



Tenth place: Zhou Chuchu (Female)

Reason for entry: Dragon Form Tiger Will Fist for melee, Demon King Eighteen Whips for long-range. Extremely agile in footwork and nearly all-rounded. Once won the National Secondary School Martial Tournament Runner Up.

The group was slightly taken aback. The official forecast had given very little information. Most of the information could be easily found on the Internet. From the looks of it, they were only providing the names, and the reason for entry was just superfluous.

However, this was considered normal. By listing these ten people, it was already pushing them to the forefront of the rookies that participated in the mass selection. If too much of their privacy was exposed, it was rather unfair.

Yama Minamiya continued swiping upwards.

Ninth place: Feng Yuanlin (Male)

Reason for entry: Possesses the superpower to instantly form hard body-armor. Has the title of Armored Braveheart. Usually shy in nature, but becomes obsessed the moment in battle, entering frenzy mode. Once won first runner-up in the National Secondary School Martial Tournament.

...

### Eighth place: Liu Yu (Male)

Reason for entry: Successor to the present Dao Sect. Proficient at Dao inference. Labeled as “Half-Dao Sage”. One of this year’s super rookies. However, due to lack of exposure, there is no way to judge his strength, resulting in him only being ranked eighth.

...

### Seventh place: An Mo (Male)

Reason for entry: Gentle adonis, proficient at blowing the flute. To his friends, his music is the most pleasant sound of nature, but to enemies, his music is the most terrifying demonic music. Friends with Liu Yu, but Liu Yu has declared that he had used Dao inference to place himself at 40, while An Mo is at 60. Hence, An Mo is ranked seventh.

...

### Sixth place: Sen Senyuan (Male)

Reason for entry: In the present era of cold weapons, his shooting techniques have dominated his peers. His personality can be considered as extremely overbearing. His superpower

can form guns using his energy. At his peak, he is able to simultaneously conjure more than a hundred guns. His personal strength is comparable to a hundred people.

...

Fifth place: Ye, Heartless (Male)

Reason for entry: God of Swords Jian Xilai's personal disciple. Has the nickname of Young God of Swords. One of this year's super rookies, and his talent in sword arts can be considered second amongst the younger generation. He defended his title as champion of the National Secondary School Swordplay Tournament for three consecutive years.

Everyone finally saw a familiar face.

Yama Minamiya said, "Heartless' ranking at fifth is quite worthy of him."

Riko was the first who disagreed. "But Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless."

Mozzie echoed her, "But Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless."

Mu Yuesheng smiled and said, "But Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless."

Kevin did not dare to break the combo, “But Tu Dahei one-shot Heartless.”

Yama Minamiya: “...”

Shi Xiaobai knew very well that if he had not used “One Second Shura”, it would have been very difficult for him to one-shot Heartless. However, Shi Xiaobai was definitely not dumb enough to expose himself, so at this moment, he should...

“It’s only Heartless, don’t hang it by your mouths all day!”

Shi Xiaobai said self-righteously. That’s right, he should posture during such times!

Everyone immediately guffawed and rolled their eyes at Shi Xiaobai. He actually acknowledged their praise for him.

Yama Minamiya shook his head with an amused laugh. As he swiped the screen, everyone immediately looked over.

Fourth place: Pulp Farmer (Male)

Reason for entry: True name is unknown. Often calls himself Mt. Chang’s Pulp Farmer. Has defended the title of champion of the National Secondary School Martial Tournament for three consecutive years. His superpower can transform paper into various items. Proficient at using spears. His battle style

can only be described with one word—domineering!

...

Third place: Ye, Sunless (Female)

Reason for entry: God of Swords Jian Xilai's personal disciple. One of this year's super rookies. Twin sibling of Heartless, but her talent in sword arts exceeds Heartless. Her talent in sword arts can be considered first amongst the younger generation and is one of the rare people with two superpowers. The first superpower has to do with air, while the second superpower still remains a mystery.

As Mu Yuesheng looked at the rows of text, she felt mixed emotions. This azure-dressed girl who had thrashed her without using any sword techniques had become the target she wanted to exceed the most after yesterday.

However, she now learned that Sunless' mightiness was far beyond her imagination. Not only were her sword arts considered top amongst the younger generation, but she also possessed two superpowers. How could such an elite be surpassed?

More intense flames of fighting spirit gradually ignited in Mu Yuesheng's eyes. Even if she was destined never to surpass Sunless, she would still use her as a goal she would pursue!



Mozzie exclaimed and said, “Huh? Since Sunless was ranked higher than Heartless, why was Heartless the one who appeared for the finale?”

Yesterday’s battle exchange rules enforced that the appearance of the combatants had to go from weak to strong. By getting Heartless to appear at the end, wasn’t this at conflict with the official ranking?

Yama Minamiya immediately said, “The reason is simple. Heartless is their team leader. Sunless also respects her brother greatly, therefore, Heartless was most suitable to appear for the finale.”

Mozzie nodded as she ruminated over something. She could not help but ask again, “Then is Sunless truly stronger than Heartless?”

Kevin could not help but interject, “It is because he was inferior to Sunless that Heartless had to move to another province to obtain his title as super rookie.”

Mozzie was immediately enlightened as she said, “So that’s the reason. This Mosquito was of the opinion that Heartless did that to assure his sister of her position as super rookie. Who knew that’s the truth.”

Yama Minamiya shook his head and said, “Don’t speculate on this matter. The two possibilities are likely. Heartless and Sunless have never fought before, so it is unknown who is stronger.

However, Sunless' attainment in sword arts is definitely first amongst the younger generation. Furthermore, she surpasses Heartless greatly. That is a huge gap from her peers. Her talent and diligence are highly praised. Even the elderly God of Swords said that Sunless is the purest sword fanatic he had ever seen in his life."

# Chapter 210: Rookies' Mudslide

---

A sword fanatic was not an idiot in sword arts, but someone who indulged in sword arts.

The purest sword fanatic.

The elderly God of Swords' evaluation of her was truly extremely high.

Not only was she a genius whose talent in sword arts far exceeded her peers, but she was also a fanatic who indulged in sword arts. In that case, it was understandable why her attainment in sword arts exceeded her peers by leaps and bounds.

Riko exclaimed in praise, "The purest sword fanatic. Such a high evaluation. Even I want to meet this girl named Sunless."

Mozzie immediately giggled and said, "Sister Riko, Sunless is pretty, as pretty as Sister Riko."

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up when he heard this. The purest sword fanatic. This evaluation made him want to meet the person named Sunless. It was best if he could spar with her.

Shi Xiaobai's King's Beginner Sword was already unable to endure the thirst.

Riko looked at Yama Minamiya and prodded him, “Quick, swipe upwards! If third place is so powerful, I want to see what sort of monsters are at the top two spots.”

The others also eagerly turned their heads at the screen.

Yama Minamiya immediately swiped up.

Second place: Mu Lengxi (Female)

Reason for entry: This year’s Beijing super rookie.

Everyone was stunned.

There was only one line given to describe the reason for her entry into the forecast?

Mozzie exclaimed, “Why is one line sufficient for her to be ranked second?”

Yama Minamiya smiled and said, “This reason is sufficient.”

Mozzie immediately asked, “Why so?”

Yama Minamiya said, “Beijing is China’s political and financial center. The most famous organizations and ancient families are pretty much all in Beijing. Hence, becoming the super rookie of

Beijing is of most worth compared to the other provinces.”

Riko echoed at this moment, “The super rookie of Beijing can be called the king of super rookies, the strongest super rookie. Indeed, just this reason alone is sufficient for her to be ranked second.”

Mozzie clicked her tongue and said, “That’s impressive. But even so, shouldn’t they write a few more reasons?”

Kevin looked up and said, “The officials can only give this reason. I tried searching on the Internet for ‘Mu Lengxi’, but I’m unable to find any information on her. The confidentiality classification of her identity is very likely A-Class or above. The National Intelligence Bureau has concealed information about her.”

Yama Minamiya nodded and said, “Her background must be extraordinary. However, for her to join the mass selection, they are planning on showcasing her. Everyone will know her identity when the time comes, so we just need to remember her name for now.”

Riko immediately urged again, “Hurry, next one! I want to see who’s first!”

Yama Minamiya was actually rather eager about this too, so he swiped upwards.

First place: Li, Speechless (Male)

Reason for entry: (Rendering you) speechless just like his name. A youth that renders anyone speechless. The reason for participating in the mass selection is similarly speechless rendering—"This Emperor could have entered the Psionic Soul Realm ten years ago, but have waited all this while in the Psionic Mortal Realm. Why? Because This Emperor has been waiting for this rookie mass selection. Then here comes the question, can you believe this reason?"

Yama Minamiya cried out and said, "I'm speechless!"

Riko was immediately at a loss whether to laugh or cry. "This Speechless had just disappeared for a short period of time, and now he has emerged to cause trouble. However, for this fellow to be first, it's rather understandable."

Mozzie also said, "For Speechless to be ranked first, This Mosquito accepts it."

Kevin shrugged his shoulders and said, "This Speechless seems to resemble a particular person."

When Kevin said this, the others were startled before they simultaneously cast their eyes at Shi Xiaobai.

Having crossed into this world, Shi Xiaobai was still wondering who Speechless was. Noticing everyone look at him, he immediately asked in wonderment, "Why?"

Riko burst out laughing and said, “Shi Xiaobai meeting Speechless. That scene would be perfect. Let me laugh for a while.”

Mozzie also laughed. “Lord Shi Xiaobai also renders people quite speechless.”

Mu Yuesheng and Kevin spontaneously nodded.

Shi Xiaobai gave a startled look. He had a nagging feeling that he had been smeared.

At this moment, Yama Minamiya suddenly exclaimed, “There’s one more!”

Everyone was shocked as they turned their heads. Seeing the screen move downwards, there was another passage of text.

Zeroth place: Tu Dahei (Male)

Reason for entry: Rumored to have one-shot Heartless. Although it is rumored, the information is rather reliable. However, no information regarding the rookie named Tu Dahei can be found. There is no way to discern his actual strength, but for him to be able to one-shot Heartless, the possibility of him ranking amongst the top ten is highly likely. Hence, he has been placed at zeroth place. Zeroth place does not mean he is higher ranking than first place, nor does it mean he is ranked lower than tenth place. Everything is a possibility. The official forecast is that Tu Dahei might be the most unexpected mudslide of the mass selection.

Yama Minamiya: “...”

Riko: “...”

Mozzie: “...”

Mu Yuesheng: “...”

Kevin: “...”

The five looked at each other before they looked at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai sighed helplessly and said, “This King is destined to not be able to keep a low profile.”

Everyone immediately began to laugh in a good-humored fashion. Regardless of anything, the zeroth place was still something extremely honorable. However, it was quite eye-catching.

The most unexpected mudslide.

The officials were too much!

After everyone laughed for a moment, Yama Minamiya began to



frown. He said, “The most outstanding tree receives the greatest winds! The zeroth place position is just too eye-catching. If there are any free-for-all battle segments, Xiaobai might be targeted.”

The others began worrying when they heard this.

Shi Xiaobai was unaffected and laughed. He said, “It’s fine. This King fears nothing!”

Everyone fell silent.

Riko suddenly had a flash of brilliance as she said, “Why not have Shi Xiaobai stop using the name Tu Dahei, and instead do the complete opposite and use the name Shi Xiaobai!?”

Yama Minamiya’s eyes lit up and he said, “Good idea! Shi Xiaobai’s name has not appeared for some time now. Many people have probably already forgotten about it. Since Xiaobai can’t keep using the fake identity of Tu Dahei, we can take this opportunity to kill two birds with one stone! It can bring fame to the name Shi Xiaobai, and also avoid the aggro on Tu Dahei.”

Shi Xiaobai did not mind this at all.

Hence, it was quickly decided. Yama Minamiya planned on informing the organization senate of the reason after arriving in Shanghai, allowing them to secretly change his identity as Tu Dahei to Shi Xiaobai.

...

The flight that took an hour and a half quickly passed in a jovial atmosphere.

After the plane landed in Shanghai's airport, the group of people disembarked the plane. They saw at a glance a huge crowd of people greeting them at the airport. These people were here to greet the various rookies from the different organizations.

There were few who came for Gaia, or it could be said to be none. However, they had three outstanding beauties in their lineup, so they attracted quite a bit of attention.

After the group of people walked out the airport, a limousine they had prepared brought them to a hotel they had reserved.

The moment they walked into the hotel, they saw a group of people walking out.

The footsteps on both sides came to a sudden halt.

The group of people who had walked out of the hotel were the Zeus rookies!

It was really fucking awkward for them to coincidentally live in the same hotel after yesterday's incident.

However, Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up because he saw an azure-dressed girl amongst the crowd.

Wasn't she the owner of the purplish-gold silver dragon sword?

Shi Xiaobai was still worrying when he could give that tiny golden pearl that contained 'sword arts heritage' to her. He never expected to meet her so soon!

# Chapter 211: This Is The Happiness That Belongs To Her

---

Both sides met at the hotel's entrance. The Zeus rookies immediately had their faces stiffen. They recalled the unforgettable encounter yesterday.

The few people from Gaia looked rather calm. However, the trio was actually feeling complex emotions. After all, the fact that they had been thrashed by the Zeus rookies yesterday could not be erased by Shi Xiaobai's single strike.

Both sides had thoughts on their minds and all of them came to a halt.

Yama Minamiya was the first to react. He walked forward and respectfully said to the elderly God of Swords who was standing at the forefront, "Senior God of Swords!"

The elderly God of Swords gave a gentle nod. In front of Yama Minamiya and the rookies, he obviously would not act without principles like he had done so in front of One-Pun. His deadpan appearance gave him the bearing of a God of Swords.

Heartless walked forward from the crowd and said with a calm expression, "Division Minister Minamiya. Everyone, I never expected to meet all of you so soon. We also happen to stay in the same hotel. I hope we will be able to interact more during this mass selection."

In fact, Heartless' last words at the battle exchange had smoothened some of the conflict, and with him taking the initiative to mollify their relations, the rookies' taut nerves gradually relaxed.

Yama Minamiya was rather impressed by Heartless' ability to submit or assert himself as the occasion required and how he was not a low-class whimsy. He said, "Alright, let's get together if we have the time."

Heartless said, "We are about to report to the organization senate. Shall we go together?"

Yama Minamiya shook his head and said, "We will need some time to settle down having just arrived at the hotel. You go on first."

"Alright!"

Heartless nodded and no longer spoke further. He took the lead and walked away.

At this moment, a figure suddenly walked out from Gaia's side.

Heartless came to a sudden stop. His eyes seemed to speak volumes as he saw the figure that had suddenly walked towards him.

The person was a black-haired youth with eyes as bright as the stars. He walked out of the Gaia crowd and went straight for Heartless.

Nearly everyone's eyes were immediately focused on the black-haired youth.

The corner of Heartless' mouth twitched. He tried to force himself to greet him, but against Tu Dahei, who was walking slowly towards him, he was unable to make a sound. His mind was filled with the scene of being one-shot. He felt somewhat humiliated as well as some trepidation.

The elderly God of Swords glanced at Shi Xiaobai and felt mixed emotions. This black-haired youth had mastered the most basic Beginner Sword to the Crest of Perfection realm. From the looks of it, he had wasted his talent in sword arts. He needed some mentoring, but this black-haired youth had one-shot Heartless, whom he had bragged about all day. It was an indirect smack on his old face, so despite him having a love for talent, he too had a selfish heart.

Seeing Shi Xiaobai walk out from the crowd and with him about to come in front of Heartless, the female whopper and the other four rookies had a drastic change in their expressions. They were guessing that Tu Dahei was likely going to flaunt his victory and the face-smacking he gave Boss Heartless. The five involuntarily took a step forward and clung closely behind Heartless as they looked alertly at Shi Xiaobai.

Riko and the three other Gaia rookies were slightly surprised.

They knew Shi Xiaobai's character. This fellow was ruthless when it came to smacking faces. For him to suddenly walk towards Heartless, was it because he found yesterday's face-smacking insufficient?

Shi Xiaobai's footsteps seemed to make a play on nearly everyone's minds.

“You...”

When Heartless saw Shi Xiaobai about to reach him, he could not help but spit out that word. He did not even realize that he was trembling slightly.

However, everyone was more surprised the next moment because the black-haired youth was not looking for Heartless. It was as though he had never seen Heartless, and just passed Heartless by while looking straight ahead.

Heartless was taken aback, but immediately he felt a trace of irritation.

He turned his head to look at Shi Xiaobai's back.

Everyone's eyes could not help but fixate on Shi Xiaobai's figure. They saw him looking straight as he passed one rookie after another as he walked up straight to an azure-dressed girl several meters away from the crowd.

She was the person Tu Dahei (Shi Xiaobai) was looking for!

Riko saw Mozzie's shocked expression and asked, "Who is she?"

Mozzie immediately replied, "That person is Sunless!"

Riko was slightly taken aback as she sized up Sunless. She exclaimed in praise, "She's beautiful!"

Mozzie immediately said, "Sister Riko is prettier!"

Riko beamed and said, "Let's have some delicacies tonight. I'll be treating!"

Mozzie immediately cheered out loudly.

As for the rookies on Zeus' side, they laughed, as though they were waiting for a good show to be put on.

Sunless had been called the purest sword fanatic by the elderly God of Swords. Her obsession in sword techniques was even worse. She would be deducing various sword arts even while walking.

She was even indifferent to Heartless and the elderly God of Swords. She was unwilling to even heed a single word from other people, as though she lived in a world of her own.



Now, when they saw Shi Xiaobai walk towards Sunless, a few Zeus rookies immediately guessed that Shi Xiaobai had been attracted by Sunless' looks and had walked over to flirt with her.

However, his outcome was already predestined. Sunless would definitely ignore him. She might not even give him a glance. It would be fun to watch when that happened!

A trace of hesitation flashed in Heartless' eyes. He obviously knew that his sister was a person who was unwilling to speak. As a result, if anyone wanted to hit on her, he would step forward and prevent that from happening. He was currently in a dilemma because he wanted to see Tu Dahei suffer a setback.

Under the watchful eyes of the Zeus rookies, Shi Xiaobai walked right in front of Sunless.

Sunless, who had her head lowered, looked up. She did not have an expression on her face, nor did she say a word.

Shi Xiaobai began to whisper something to her, as though he had deliberately lowered his voice. No one present, other than the powerful God of Swords, could hear his words.

But very soon, they saw Sunless' eyes suddenly brighten up. As though she had been attracted by Shi Xiaobai's words.

Not long after that, Sunless suddenly turned to walk into the hotel. Shi Xiaobai followed closely behind, and the two looked like

they were a young couple about to get a room.

“What...was going on!?”

Other than the elderly God of Swords, everyone else was dumbfounded!

On Gaia's side, they were surprised to discover that Shi Xiaobai knew Sunless, as for the Zeus rookies, they could not understand what had just happened.

No, this plot was wrong!

Heartless' expression changed. He wanted to rush up to stop them, afraid that his younger sister would be cheated by Tu Dahei.

The elderly God of Swords blocked Heartless at this moment.

“Master?”

Heartless was left in shock.

The God of Swords shook his head and said, “Let her go, this is the happiness that belongs to her.”

The elderly God of Swords was the only one who heard Shi Xiaobai and Sunless' conversation. He knew very well how much

happiness a sword arts heritage would bring to a sword fanatic.

Heartless nearly spat out a mouthful of blood.

Happiness that belongs to her!?

Holy shit, my sister is only fifteen years old!

## Chapter 212: In The Northern Darkness, There Is A Fish And His Name Is Kun

---

When Shi Xiaobai came in front of Sunless, he directly told her about the “sword arts heritage”. He obviously knew about walls having ears, so he deliberately lowered his voice.

He explained that he was apologetic for ‘eating’ her sword, and explained to her what he understood by ‘sword arts heritage’.

He did not expect Sunless to quickly understand what he meant, and how attracted she would be to his words.

The phrase ‘sword arts heritage’ was extremely alluring to a sword fanatic like her.

Shi Xiaobai carried on explaining that while gaining insights into the sword arts heritage, one would enter a deep meditative state, so there was a need for her to find somewhere where she would not be disturbed.

Sunless hesitated for a while before turning around to lead Shi Xiaobai to her hotel room.

Shi Xiaobai passed the little golden pearl to her and told her of the exact usage method before turning around to leave.

He never expected Sunless to immediately chase after him. In her

hand was a primitively simple-looking manual that she handed to him.

“For you.”

Sunless’ voice sounded like an eager kitten.

Shi Xiaobai accepted the ancient book with surprise while Sunless rushed back to her room and slammed the door shut. Clearly, she was eager to gain insights from the ‘sword arts heritage’.

Shi Xiaobai gave a knowing smile. He had also guessed that the azure-dressed girl was Sunless. Her title as a sword fanatic was indeed no misnomer.

Shi Xiaobai looked down at the ancient book in his hand. On the book were four characters written with forceful strokes—Kun Peng  
[1](#)Sword Manual!

If the elderly God of Swords were here, he would have definitely vomited blood. This was because, the book, ‘Kun Peng Sword Manual’ was an ancient sword manual he had temporarily lent to Sunless for her to learn and gain insights from. This was a treasure of the elderly God of Swords’ sword sect. Only one person could inherit it every generation, but Sunless had given it to Shi Xiaobai without his permission!

Shi Xiaobai curiously flipped to the first page of the ancient book.

A passage of scrawling text came into view.

“Cultivating the Kun Peng Sword Technique is divided into three forms. The lower form observes sword moves, the middle form gains self-enlightenment from sword manuals, the upper form gains insight from the mantra. If one is able to truly comprehend the mantra beneath, one will master the most powerful Kun Peng Sword Technique. However, it’s rare to even have one person of the upper form in ten thousand years, so do not be obsessed with the following mantra. It is only for destined ones!”

After reading this passage, Shi Xiaobai’s eyes widened. There were even different grades to the cultivating of this sword technique. As for him, he obviously wanted to cultivate the upper form!

Shi Xiaobai’s interest was piqued as he carefully read the so-called mantra.

“Kun Peng Mantra: In the northern darkness there is a fish and his name is Kun. Kun is so huge, no wok can stew it. He changes and becomes a bird whose name is Peng. Peng is so huge, it requires two grills. One for cumin, one for spiciness!”

Shi Xiaobai looked at the mantra dumbfounded. He realized that this mantra was somewhat weird!

This was because on first glance, the mantra sounded like a playful joke. But if he looked carefully, and perused it, he would realize that it was truly a fucking joke!

How was this a mantra!?

Shi Xiaobai knitted his brows and looked up to scan his surroundings. He walked forward and found a corner where few people would walk past in the hotel and sat down. He stared unblinkingly at the mantra.

“This King will crack the secret behind this mantra!”

Shi Xiaobai felt that this mantra was definitely no ordinary joke. There must be wisdom that was beyond the comprehension of mere mortals contained within it. If not, why would the opening passage say that ten thousand years were not enough to produce a person who was able to comprehend it?

Shi Xiaobai believed in his wisdom as king. He could absolutely understand it!

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's stubborn temper burst outward!

He stared intently at the short mantra as his mind constantly flashed with different theories.

This sort of puzzle cracking was extremely interesting to him, so Shi Xiaobai did not notice the flow of time. Slowly, an hour had passed.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up

“This is...”

Suddenly, the mantra Shi Xiaobai was looking at began to emit golden light, as though it was coated in a layer of gold.

Shi Xiaobai blinked his eyes to ensure that it was not his illusion. He began theorizing using the parts of the text which were now golden, such as deleting some of the golden text, or picking some of it out. He also tried replacing the golden words with homophones...

As he was trying all possibilities, from time to time, new words would turn golden. Shi Xiaobai would immediately reject his theories from before and begin a new round of wild and baseless guesses.

Shi Xiaobai gradually forgot his original intentions and began immersing himself in the fun of indiscriminate theorizing. This short passage gave him all sorts of wondrous ideas as his thoughts went wild in an indescribable fashion.

After another hour, with the final word “pot” lighting up, the entire mantra had turned golden.

At that moment, the beams of golden light shot up into the sky from the text, and before they reached the ceiling they descended. They shot down like crossbow arrows straight into Shi Xiaobai's



eyes.

Shi Xiaobai involuntarily closed his eyes as his vision went black. Immediately, a golden light bloomed and in the dazzling light, he seemed to see—a gigantic fish that spanned a few thousand li within a roaring sea!

Fish, a humongous fish!

Following that...

...

...

In the hotel lobby, Heartless and the other five rookies were sitting around. The six of them had extremely sullen looks.

Yama Minamiya sat on a seat across them, his expression as ugly as theirs.

More than five hours had already passed!

It had been five hours since Shi Xiaobai and Sunless entered the hotel room!

With the elderly God of Swords stopping them, Heartless and

company had to curb their urge to break down the door, but their nerves were on the verge of torture at every moment.

Although the elderly God of Swords repeatedly assured them, saying that Tu Dahei and Sunless were not engaging in whatever they imagined, the elderly God of Swords remained vague. He refused to tell everyone what Tu Dahei had said to Sunless.

Furthermore, it was after five hours, Tu Dahei had entered Sunless' room with the room locked from inside. They had not come out for five hours.

How could nothing be going on for a boy and girl to share a room alone?

Although Sunless was a sword fanatic, it did not mean she wasn't a woman!

Heartless and company anxiously waited. They believed that the sword arts-obsessed Sunless would not develop any romantic feelings, but they could not help but suspect that Tu Dahei had used some sinister method to deceive Sunless. However, the elderly God of Swords was guarding the corridor, preventing them from approaching Sunless' room. Hence, they could only suffer while waiting in the lobby.

In great contrast with them was Riko and Mozzie. The duo was having a good time chatting. Unless Sunless had failed to resist her biological urges and pushed Tu Dahei onto a bed, there was no need for worry. Their trust in him was not something that could be

expressed in words. Mu Yuesheng and Kevin, who sat on the fence, did not mention a word about the matter. They also maintained their silence. The four had returned to their rooms early on.

Only Yama Minamiya had stayed behind because he was worried that his daughter had been two-timed. He was waiting for Shi Xiaobai to come out to interrogate him!

## Chapter 213: I Engaged In It For Five Hours

---

The elderly God of Swords stood in the hallway for nearly five hours.

When Shi Xiaobai offered ‘sword arts heritage’ to Sunless, his words were like thunder to the God of Swords’ ears. This was because there was such a term mentioned in the ‘Kun Peng Sword Manual’. Furthermore, the elderly God of Swords had previously witnessed it before. Just witnessing it alone was enough for him to know how rare an opportunity ‘sword arts heritage’ was. And based on Tu Dahei’s description, the ‘sword arts heritage’ he was giving to Sunless as reparations was extremely extraordinary.

The elderly God of Swords obviously wanted Sunless to grasp the opportunity well.

How could he allow Heartless and company to disturb Sunless from her deep meditative state? If that happened, it would be a grave sin on his part!

Furthermore, he could not explain to everyone what ‘sword arts heritage’ was. This was because ‘sword arts heritage’ was a form of ‘heritage series’ that could be stolen. As long as the owner was killed, some vicious means could be used to steal the ‘sword arts heritage’!

This was worse than the walls having ears. If this news was spread, Sunless might be in grave danger.

To be safe, the elderly God of Swords definitely wanted to keep the matter a secret.

Furthermore, the elderly God of Swords had long sensed that Sunless was the only living being in her room. From the looks of it, Tu Dahei had already left. As for where Tu Dahei went, it was none of his business.

Hence, the elderly God of Swords explained to everyone that Tu Dahei and Sunless were not engaging in something that they imagined. Furthermore, Tu Dahei was not in Sunless' room.

But alas, Heartless and company refused to believe him.

If Tu Dahei wasn't in Sunless' room, where had he gone to all this time?

If there was truly nothing going on between the two, why was the elderly God of Swords being so ambiguous?

All in all, Heartless and company could not ease their minds. They sat in the lobby waiting, while the elderly God of Swords stood guard by the hallway.

Five hours passed.

A figure suddenly began to walk over from the other end of the hallway.

The elderly God of Swords was surprised. He never expected Tu Dahei to be so close, as though he had hidden in a secluded corner.

As Tu Dahei approached, the elderly God of Swords felt something strange. He could sense a familiar aura from Tu Dahei's body, but he could not put his finger on it immediately.

However, this aura was very intimate but also very overbearing. It gave the elderly God of Swords a strange feeling of wanting to both approach and keep away from him.

When Tu Dahei walked past him, the elderly God of Swords coughed and said with a deep voice, "Child, you have traveled a great distance on the wrong path. The Beginner Sword...is only the most basic sword technique."

The elderly God of Swords was only met with a calm sentence.

"Originally there is no path in this world, but the first person to take the wrong path allows the path to come into being."

The elderly God of Swords was startled and turned his head to watch Tu Dahei walk away. As he savored the words, he was immediately shocked and amused. This answer was very intelligent, but also very overbearing. But most importantly, it sounded impressive!

"Sigh, when it comes to posturing, this child is best suited to be

my personal disciple.”

The elderly God of Swords shook his head with a laugh and did not think further about it.

...

...

When Shi Xiaobai entered the lobby, the six Zeus rookies and Yama Minamiya immediately surrounded him in a ferocious manner. He was slightly surprised as he asked, “What’s the matter?”

Heartless was the first to angrily say, “Tu Dahei, what did you do to my sister?”

Shi Xiaobai took a few moments to realize that the sister Heartless was referring to was that azure-dressed girl.

Shi Xiaobai obviously could not mention the ‘sword arts heritage’, so after thinking for a moment, he answered, “This King had to make up for his mistake. This King had let down your sister, as This King had eaten her...”

“Shut up! Speak no further!”

Heartless boomed and interrupted Shi Xiaobai’s words. His

expression was livid, as though he wanted to devour Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai was planning on saying “as This King had eaten her sword”, but with Heartless cutting him off, he missed the last word. However, he did not realize that the omission of a single word was like a fatal blow to the seven people in front of him.

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. He was displeased with their attitudes as he said with a heavy voice, “It seems like you have a problem with This King. If you want to avenge yesterday’s matter, This King welcomes you anytime. It’s best if all six of you fight me.”

The six rookies immediately took an angry step forward. Tu Dahei had done something that would have ‘incurred the wrath of humans and gods’, yet, was still so arrogant about it. He deserved death!

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up as he also took a step forward. “Come on, let’s hurt each other!”

Yama Minamiya’s expression changed slightly. Although he was vexed over Shi Xiaobai’s two-timing act, he would definitely not watch the battle take place in front of him without doing a thing. He hurriedly came to Shi Xiaobai and waved his hand and said, “There must be a misunderstanding on this matter. Everyone calm down. Since the two of them have already...and it has to be mutual... Anyways, the most important thing is to ask for the full truth!”



Heartless angrily said, “What else is there to ask? My sister is obsessed with sword arts and she has a simple mind. It must be Tu Dahei that had deceived her!”

“Calm down first!”

Yama Minamiya sighed and turned to say to Shi Xiaobai, “Dahei, what happened in the past five hours. Make sure to explain well!”

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. He was unsure what these people were arguing about. Why did they say that he was deceiving Sunless. However, Yama Minamiya was Riko’s father, so Shi Xiaobai felt that it was better for him to show him some respect.

He pondered for a moment. He could not say ‘sword arts heritage’. As for the ‘Kun Peng Sword Manual’, it was also extremely mysterious, so it was best he did not mention it. As Shi Xiaobai considered his words, he finally said, “This King gave her something she wanted, while she gave This King a big pleasant surprise. This King accidentally got engrossed in it, and engaged [1](#) in it for five hours over there.”

Shi Xiaobai deliberately reached out his hand to point to the other end of the hallway. He wanted to explain that he had been sitting there for five hours, but Sunless’ room happened to be in the line of sight in the direction he pointed.

Everyone was dumbfounded as Yama Minamiya stared with widened eyes.

Something she wanted?

A big pleasant surprise?

Accidentally got engrossed in it?

Engaged in it for five hours in Sunless' room!?

“Tu Dahei, I’ll fight it out with you!”

“You swine, give me your life!”

“Dahei, how can you do this to my daughter!?”

“Tu Dahei, you are shameless!”

“...”

The seven immediately bellowed in anger as they stared furiously at Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai’s eyebrows twitched. He had a nagging feeling that a huge misunderstanding had happened, but he could not be bothered to explain. Scanning the crowd, other than Yama Minamiya appearing threatening to him, the others were nothing to him.

“It’s been awhile since This King has cultivated This Turtle Is Hardest, besides...it’s time to avenge the battle exchange!”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai gestured to the seven with his finger and said, “If you want to fight, fight on!”

How could Heartless and the five rookies tolerate this? Immediately, they charged at Shi Xiaobai like six fierce wolves!

Yama Minamiya’s expression changed, but after hesitating for a moment, he did not stop them.

Fuck, must you brag about the coquettish matter you did for five hours?

Yama Minamiya obviously could not personally teach Shi Xiaobai a lesson. It would be an act of bullying. If Kali knew about it, he would probably land in serious trouble.

He finally chose to silently stand by the side. He wanted to let Shi Xiaobai suffer some physical pain!

With this, the sudden battle of six against one began!

# Chapter 214: Combined Assault On Tu Dahei

---

The six-person team led by Heartless spontaneously attacked Shi Xiaobai, but none of them used any weapons. Despite being enraged, they still managed to maintain their final bit of reason.

Shi Xiaobai immediately used Crab Steps to dodge to the side. The six people were not on the same level as Hua Pengju and company. With his current physical defense, it was very dangerous to resist the attacks from the six.

“Bastard, don’t you try escaping!”

The self-proclaimed assassin, who was the burly youth that defeated Kevin, was the fastest. He was the first to come in front of Shi Xiaobai, and with a fist surging with psionic power, he punched furiously at Shi Xiaobai.

A glint flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes as his retreating footsteps came to a sudden halt. With a twist of his body, he used his shoulder to meet a fist.

“Peng!”

The sounds of bones striking one another resounded as the burly youth’s fist hit Shi Xiaobai’s right shoulder!

“Boom!”

Shi Xiaobai was immediately sent flying back, as he toppled a row of seats.

“What are all of you doing!?”

The commotion immediately alerted the hotel’s front desk. A receptionist screamed, “Security, security! Hurry, there are people fighting here!”

Heartless’ expression changed and he signaled with his eyes. A male rookie immediately understood his intentions and walked towards the reception and said, “It’s a misunderstanding. It’s all a misunderstanding.”

The burly youth whose punch had hit its mark frowned slightly. He had been taken by surprise that his punch had managed to hit its target. After all, Tu Dahei was a person who had one-shot Heartless. Furthermore, he had the nagging feeling that Tu Dahei had been the one who sent his shoulder at him.

When the others saw the burly youth send Tu Dahei flying with a punch, they were delighted. The female whopper sustained the threat as she pounced at the fallen Shi Xiaobai.

“Mt. Tai Crush!”

Shi Xiaobai had just fallen to the ground and when he looked up, it was as though a mountain was crushing down at him. The mountain was none other than the massive figure of the female

whopper. His expression instantly changed as he quickly weighed the pros and cons. At a speed which left no time for one to cover one's ears, he darted away from the ground.

“Boom!”

The massive body slammed to the ground, causing the splinters from the already broken chairs to fly into the air. Even the hard steel ground had cracked.

Shi Xiaobai drew a gasp. Thankfully, he had not tried resisting this strike in order to cultivate his ‘This Turtle Is Hardest’. Ignoring the whopper's destructive power, if he were crushed by her massive body on the ground, he would probably experience a life worse than death.

“Hand your life over!”

At the moment Shi Xiaobai fell into a startled daze, a kick came flying at him.

Shi Xiaobai quickly reacted and raised his leg, and used his thigh to meet the kick that was aimed at his abdomen.

“Peng!”

Shi Xiaobai was once again sent flying back. The person who had sent the flying kick was a good-looking adonis. With a successful strike, the adonis immediately charged again.

“Die!”

The adonis was abnormally furious as he raised his leg to stomp down at Shi Xiaobai’s waist.

With a slight movement to his side, Shi Xiaobai used the side of his waist to meet the foot.

The adonis raised his foot once again, but with both hands on the ground, Shi Xiaobai did a back flip to dodge that strike.

At the same time, another figure appeared behind Shi Xiaobai. It was a short-haired youth.

“Pay the price for what you have done!”

The short-haired youth struck his palm towards Shi Xiaobai’s back.

A glimmer flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes as he took a step back to withstand the palm strike.

“Peng!”

Shi Xiaobai’s back was hit as he was sent flying forward.

“Die!”

A cold beam flashed in the adonis' eyes as he jumped up to send a kick towards Shi Xiaobai's crotch.

In mid-air, Shi Xiaobai struggled to turn sideways as he used his left leg to meet the kick. Immediately, his body was sent spinning a few times by the kick.

The female whopper appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai, and with her hands clasped together like a hammer before she slammed down on Shi Xiaobai's chest.

“Boom!”

Shi Xiaobai crashed to the ground, as the ground cracked outwards for several meters, like spider webs.

“Mt. Tai Crush!”

The whopper leaped at the fallen Shi Xiaobai once again.

Shi Xiaobai, who had suffered a serious blow moments ago, quickly dodged the whopper's slam.

At this moment, security personnel had arrived. It was unknown when the elderly God of Swords had appeared in the lobby to block the security, motioning for them to ignore the matter. As he



looked at Shi Xiaobai, his eyes were filled with surprise.

Heartless, who had not struck out all this while, could not help but gape with his mouth wide open.

Yama Minamiya, who was by the side, was also somewhat dumbfounded.

From their view, Shi Xiaobai had managed to avoid injury at the critical moment each and every time. Furthermore, he would often take the initiative to receive the attacks of the four rookies. He was clearly being beaten, but it felt like he was playing the four rookies like a fiddle.

And what shocked them the most was Shi Xiaobai's ability to withstand their blows. Clearly, he did not use any psionic defensive skills and he was using only his body to withstand the damage, yet he did not show a trace of pain from the very beginning. His motions were smooth as though he was not affected by the pain inflicted on his body. It was as though he was a machine that did not know pain!

The four rookies who were still doing their best to attack Shi Xiaobai were unable to see as clearly as people from the outside. They had excited expressions, happy to vent the anger in their hearts.

They did not notice that while Shi Xiaobai was constantly receiving their attacks, his eyes were as bright as the stars.

The beatings continued on while the male rookie who had run to appease the reception counter had joined the battle. Soon, the hotel lobby was in a mess as a result of the 'abuse'. The manager who came had a long face, but the manager and the security personnel could not do a thing when they realized that the elderly God of Swords was acquiescing the brutal violence.

There were more and more onlookers, each and every one of them were wondering the reason as to why no one was stopping the display of violence. Some even secretly took out their cellphones to take pictures.

The beatings continued for about ten minutes when the surrounding onlookers found something amiss. The five rookies were also somewhat startled.

Why did Tu Dahei still have the strength to dodge after receiving ten minutes of beatings?

Furthermore, they had felt Shi Xiaobai grab them on the arms and they had suddenly felt a strange feeling.

All of a sudden, the five rookies had drastic changes on their faces as they spontaneously stopped attacking.

When Heartless saw the situation unfold, his eyes flashed a cold beam. He had not joined the battle in the beginning because he was filled with dread of Tu Dahei. Later on, he did not join the battle because he found something amiss, but now, he could no longer refrain from joining the battle as...

White psionic power surged out of Heartless' five fingers as it coagulated and turned into a white psionic sword!

He had come to a realization that using punches and kicks against Tu Dahei was insufficient!

With the sword in hand, Heartless silently walked towards Shi Xiaobai. When Shi Xiaobai's back was completely facing him, he suddenly accelerated and came behind Shi Xiaobai. Raising his psionic sword, he slashed down at Shi Xiaobai's back!

He wanted this strike to leave a long scar on Shi Xiaobai's back!

This was the anger of an elder brother!

Yama Minamiya's expression changed drastically as a yellow psionic arrow shot out from his fingertip towards Heartless' psionic sword at an extremely fast speed.

The elderly God of Swords was about to make his move as well, but when he saw something, he came to an abrupt halt.

Suddenly, before Heartless' psionic sword slashed down, or before Yama Minamiya's psionic arrow arrived at its destination, an azure sword beam that came from afar shattered Heartless' psionic sword.

At the same time, five azure sword beams fell from the sky, opening up a rift in the ground in front of the other five rookies. It made them retreat in amazement.

Everyone turned their heads and they saw an azure-dressed girl standing at the intersection of the lobby and the hallway. With a silver sword in hand, her eyebrows were knitted together.

## Chapter 215: Shit, There's No Way To Stop!

---

As everyone turned their heads over, they saw that the person who had suddenly slashed out a formless sword beam to save Shi Xiaobai was the newly-arrived Sunless.

“Little Sun...”

Heartless' face changed slightly as he lowered his hand. It was extremely rare for him to see his sister frown. It was proof that she was in a terrible mood.

The five other rookies did not dare to continue attacking Shi Xiaobai, but their faces gradually turned red for an unknown reason, as though they were trying their best to hold something back.

Surrounded by a few people, Shi Xiaobai's clothes were tattered and torn, with dust covering his entire body. His exposed limbs were bruised, so other than his delicate face looking fine, it was as though he was injured all over.

When Sunless saw this, her frown deepened as she briskly walked over to Shi Xiaobai.

In her way was the adonis in whose eyes flashed a look of pain, but he immediately made way for her.

Sunless silently walked in front of Shi Xiaobai and suddenly

reached out her fair hand to grab his right hand.

“Follow me.” Sunless said softly as she held onto Shi Xiaobai’s hand and turned to walk back.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback, but he did not say a word. The ten minutes of assault had already satisfied his “This Turtle Is Hardest”, and for a particular reason, he was just about to leave.

Shi Xiaobai allowed Sunless to hold onto him as he turned to look at the Zeus rookies, who were clenching their teeth. Slowly, he revealed a strange smile.

Was that look supposed to come from a person who had just experienced a ‘brutal’ combined assault?

Sunless and Shi Xiaobai quickly left the lobby as everyone exchanged looks.

The elderly God of Swords said with a wry smile, “I should have curbed my curiosity. Now, Little Sun is probably blaming me for ‘helping the wicked perpetuate wicked deeds’.”

Yama Minamiya said helplessly, “This isn’t Senior’s fault. This Junior could not resist it either. Unfortunately, I still could not deduce what had happened after watching for ten minutes. I wonder if Senior managed to figure it out?”

The elderly God of Swords shook his head and said, “I can only

guess a thing or two. That child's movement technique is very profound. He dodges nearly every attack that would deal him serious damage. And he would frequently take the initiative to receive the damage within a specific range. It seems like him being beaten gives him certain benefits, but as for what the benefits are, I was unable to tell. That child is truly strange."

Yama Minamiya nodded as well. He had also managed to figure those points out, and he too shared the same thoughts as the God of Swords on Shi Xiaobai's strangeness.

On the other side, Heartless and the other five rookies had extremely ugly facial expressions. The five rookies looked like they were enduring something as their foreheads were covered in sweat.

Heartless sighed and said, "Your onslaught of attacks might not have dealt any damage to Tu Dahei, instead, it might have also allowed a particular scheme of his to succeed."

The female whopper's fat quivered as though she was enduring something. She said with a growl, "We should not have held back. If we had used weapons, that bastard would have long been dead!"

The burly youth's body quivered as he smiled and said, "If we could kill him, would we be feeling so down? If we had been serious, Yama Minamiya and Senior God of Swords would definitely prevent it. Letting him suffer some physical pain in broad daylight is already quite good."

The adonis' face was purple, and his eyes were burning with fury as he said, "But does that bastard look like he has suffered any physical pain? There is no way I can take this lying down! Brother Ye, are we just going to forget this? We can't let that bastard near Miss Sunless again!"

Heartless' expression was slightly cold as he said, "In the future, we can only deal with Tu Dahei in secret. Little Sunless thinks highly of Tu Dahei. Have any of you seen her hold anyone's hand? That girl...she is a germaphobe!"

The expressions of the five rookies turned livid. The four male rookies naturally looked up to Sunless more or less. They had not had the chance to even speak to Sunless once. She was like a snow lotus high in the sky, only to be seen from afar, but impossible to approach. Even if they could approach her, they did not dare to have any other disrespectful thoughts.

The snow lotus should not belong to anyone. No one had the right to possess her!

But such a snow lotus high in the sky had been picked by someone right in front of them!

How could they tolerate this!?

"Pu!"

Suddenly, a suppressed sound echoed.



The whopper's fat was quivering as she said with a tremble, "I'll...I'll be returning to my room for now!"

As the whopper said this, she turned around and walked towards the side of the lobby. However, the way she walked appeared extremely odd. Her fat thighs were lodged tightly together, as though she wanted to walk faster, but she did not dare to do so. Her body was constantly trembling.

Suddenly!

"Pu...Pu! Pu! Pu! ..."

Clear sounds that resembled a machine gun's emitted out of the whopper's body. With a loud scream, she began taking wide strides, causing the ground to tremble.

When the people in the hall heard this sound, they were alarmed.

At this moment, the adonis began trembling as he said, "I need to leave too."

The other three rookies said in a hurry as well, "We will be going back to our rooms!"

Heartless was left confounded as he asked with uncertainty, "What's wrong with all of you?"

The four rookies did not respond, but with such faces as though they were holding in something, they pressed forward with great difficulty while their legs were tightly turned inwards.

“Pu!”

A series of rasping sounds echoed once again!

“Pu... Pu... Pu...”

The rasping sounds boomed in succession!

“Tu Dahei, this will not be the end of it!”

The adonis gave out a hateful cry and ran away quickly.

The other three cursed out simultaneously and no longer proceeded forward in a restrained manner. Instead, they rushed forward like they were running for their lives, leaving behind a series of machine gun-like “Pu” sounds.

There was quite a crowd at the lobby at that moment. They were quite surprised, but soon their faces changed.

“Holy shit, it stinks!”

“What a stench!”

“Hurry, let me out, I’m dying!”

“...”

The crowd covered their noses and mouth as they shoved their way towards the hotel’s entrance. At this moment, a disgusting stench emanated throughout the entire lobby. It was so foul-smelling that it was nauseating.

They finally realized what had happened. The series of machine gun-like “Pu” sounds was the sound of flatulence!

What sort of stomach upset could it be to produce such a loud and continuous series of echoing farts. Furthermore, the level of the stench...was so pungent that it made their hair stand on ends!

The elderly God of Swords was fast to react and escaped in a timely fashion, allowing him to not suffer from the toxic fumes.

Back when Yama Minamiya saw Shi Xiaobai’s strange smile, he had a strong sense of foreboding. When he heard the whopper produce a series of “Pu” sounds, he had a guess that she was farting. As such, he too had managed to escape in time.

Heartless’ mind was filled with questions as he watched his peers leave, but suddenly, his olfactory sense was assaulted by the emanating stench. Immediately, his face turned blue as his innards

began twisting. He nearly vomited.

At the same time, Heartless' mind could not help but flash the scene of Tu Dahei turning his head and giving a strange smile before he left.

The five rookies might have collectively eaten something rotten, but it was unlikely for them to have explosive diarrhea at the same moment. It was evidently all Tu Dahei's doing!

But...how did he do that!?

Heartless felt goosebumps.

Tu Dahei was truly extremely weird!

# Chapter 216: Take Off!

---

Inside Sunless' room.

Sunless released her grip as she looked at Shi Xiaobai. Pointing at her bed, she said softly, "Sit."

After that, she walked to a cabinet by the side of the room, and began rummaging through it.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat accustomed to Sunless' silence. Without much thought, he walked towards the large, soft bed and sat on it.

He was in an extremely good mood at the moment.

The five Zeus rookies' attack on him had more or less dealt him certain internal injuries, but it was not serious. Furthermore, with his endurance from 'Unleaking Turtle Aura', he did not feel much pain, and instead, he felt a pleasant feeling all across his body.

'This Turtle Is Hardest' had also given great benefits. Just a short ten minutes of being attacked by the five rookies was more effective than being hit by the Annihilation rookies for three hours. What they gave Shi Xiaobai could be considered super experience.

Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai had taken the initiative to strike at the last moment. He had taken advantage of the five rookies being

careless, and grabbed their arms and used 'Divine Massage Incessant Diarrhea' on them. There was likely no chance for their asses to leave the toilet tonight!

Shi Xiaobai closed his eyes as he used his mind to sense the improvement in his physical defense after this process.

[ Skin defense: Mortal Body Level 3 (29) ]

[ Flesh and Blood defense: Mortal Body Level 4 (35) ]

[ Bones defense: Mortal Body Level 3 (28) ]

[ Mental defense: Unknown ]

Shi Xiaobai was delighted. He never expected that a short period of ten minutes had allowed his skin defense to increase by eighteen points. His flesh and blood defense rose by twenty points. His bones defense rose by twenty-one points. Nearly all of them doubled or more.

However, this had given Shi Xiaobai a warning. During the ten minutes, he had avoided the heavy blows and received the light blows. Furthermore, the five rookies did not use their full strength, yet such damage was enough to rise his physical defense by a great amount. This indicated how bad his physical defense was, to begin with.

“It appears like This King has to find an opportunity to do body-tempering.”

Shi Xiaobai had such a thought. The body-tempering method, “This Turtle Is Hardest”, only required him to receive damage. In fact, this body-tempering condition was rather relaxed. The only problem was him not having recently paid much attention to body-tempering. Now that he realized how much his physical defense needed improving, he finally paid it more attention.

As Shi Xiaobai was beginning to prepare a plan for his future path, Sunless finally closed the cabinet and walked over to the bed.

“Take off...”

Sunless said with a calm voice, as though she was without emotion.

Shi Xiaobai looked up in surprise as he noticed a crystalline bottle with golden liquid in Sunless’ hand. Her face was still expressionless, and her eyes that looked down appeared still.

Shi Xiaobai responded by saying, “This King is fine. How can a few mortals injure the Body of a King that surpasses the bodies of demons and gods?”

Sunless shook her head and whispered, “I can see...”

Sunless said as she pointed out with her slender finger at a few spots on Shi Xiaobai's body.

Shi Xiaobai immediately revealed a look of surprise. Those spots were places he had suffered minor internal injuries because he had not dodged in time. The azure-dressed girl could actually see them with her naked eye?

“Haha, this bit of injury is like a mosquito bite to This King!”

Shi Xiaobai obviously paid little notice to such minor internal injuries.

Sunless' eyelashes fluttered once before she lowered her head, but quickly she raised it again and pointed to the bottle of golden liquid. She said, “Good effect...”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. Looking up at the girl, her face was still void of expression, but her blue eyes had a hint of desire.

She wished for him to use the bottle of fluid to rub on his wounds, but she did not know how to convince him. She did not know how to be forceful, nor did she know how to be tactful, much less, be articulate.

However, this sincere heart, masked under a deadpan surface, was something Shi Xiaobai could not reject.

With a smile, Shi Xiaobai reached out his hand and took the



bottle of golden fluid. He said with a smile, “Then, This King shall try to see if it really has good effects or not!”

When Shi Xiaobai took the bottle of medicine, a faint look of happiness flashed in Sunless’ still eyes.

Shi Xiaobai simply took off his shirt and revealed his bare upper body.

His body was considered slim, but he was not skinny. Although he did not have eight abs, his muscles were toned and his skin white. It did not look ugly at all.

At this moment, there were several spots on Shi Xiaobai’s body that were black from the inside. These black spots were a result of internal injuries that were caused by his blood vessels, bones, or organs being injured. Other than inhibiting the pain, ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’ had the effects of accelerated recovery. However, its effect was rather weak so it could only heal his external injuries. For internal injuries, it could not do much regardless of how minor they were.

Sunless lowered her head as she looked at Shi Xiaobai’s half-naked body. Her gaze remained unchanged, without the shyness a normal girl would have.

Shi Xiaobai did not have any additional thoughts when a beautiful girl stared at his body. He did not have the embarrassment a normal teenage boy would have.

Shi Xiaobai dropped a drop of golden liquid on his fingertip and gently wiped it across a bruised patch. A refreshing feeling immediately sank from his skin into his body and went straight to his head. It made Shi Xiaobai involuntarily draw a gasp.

The bruise vanished when the golden fluid was smudged over it. In a few seconds, there was not a trace left.

Shi Xiaobai felt that his flesh defense was suddenly beginning to rise. It went from thirty-five to thirty-nine. It had risen by four points in an instant!

Shi Xiaobai was slightly shocked. Immediately, he dripped another drop of the golden liquid and smeared it across another bruised spot. Similarly, a cool sensation went straight to his head and the color of the bruise faded away. His flesh and blood defense increased by three points to forty-two. He had immediately achieved Mortal Body Level 5.

It was unexpected for the golden liquid to have such amazing effects!

“This...”

Shi Xiaobai looked up and saw Sunless already sitting on a chair not far from him. Her eyes looked slightly glazed as though she was in a trance.

Shi Xiaobai did not bother her as he dripped another drop of the

golden fluid on another wound.

Every drop allowed his flesh and bone defense to increase, more or less. By the seventh drop, it finally lost its effect of upgrading his flesh and blood defense. However, Shi Xiaobai's flesh and blood defense had already reached forty-nine points. He was at the brink of attaining Mortal Body Level 6!

After smearing the fluid across all his wounds, he had used a total of eleven drops of golden fluid. However, the fluid in the bottle had been reduced by more than half. This made Shi Xiaobai feel somewhat embarrassed.

The golden fluid must have been very valuable, yet he had used half of it on his minor injuries. It was rather extravagant.

Shi Xiaobai put his clothes on again and got up to head towards Sunless with the bottle of golden fluid in hand. However, his footsteps came to a halt after he traversed half the distance.

Sunless' eyes were still glazed, as though she had not seen the approaching Shi Xiaobai. She had no response at all.

Shi Xiaobai lowered his head as he focused on the empty blue eyes.

From the pair of eyes, Shi Xiaobai saw a hint of...sword aura!

No, it was not a glimmer of sword aura.

On a careful look, he discovered that...it was flooding sword intent!

# Chapter 217: Tussled 300 Times That Night

---

Shi Xiaobai's mind was immediately attracted by the surging sword intent in Sunless' eyes. It was as though there was a world of swords hidden in her eyes.

Slowly, Shi Xiaobai saw a world through those eyes, a hazy world.

The world's lofty skies were void of clouds, and its ground was an expanse that spanned thousands of miles.

The hazy vision gradually became clear as the world in Sunless' eyes suddenly drew closer, as though it had been magnified.

His vision was slowly occupied by a vast green plain. On it, he saw swords embedded across the green plain, like wildflowers that grew everywhere.

The hazy veil was slowly replaced by clarity, as Shi Xiaobai finally discerned a figure on the spread of green grass and flower swords. The figure was dressed in an azure-colored dress as she engaged in swordplay!

No, it was not only swordplay. Every slash she made contained surging sword intent. Azure sword beams were produced by each slash!

As the sword beams burst out in all directions, they appeared to

slash apart the sky and open up the land!

The azure-dressed figure was graceful in her every slash. Her every footstep and every strike resembled a dance. However, this dance did not seem ordinary or tacky, instead, it contained a transcendent air of a sage-like immortal!

It was not swordplay, but it appeared like swordplay!

When Shi Xiaobai saw this beautiful world and that figure engaging in swordplay through Sunless' eyes, he felt an inexplicable longing.

He yearned to enter this secret world and spar with the figure on that vast plain!

At the instant he had this desire, Shi Xiaobai's consciousness went into a blur. The world in front of him suddenly shattered. Light, darkness, time and space, everything shattered like glass!

“You...”

A soft voice that resembled a kitten's mew woke up Shi Xiaobai. He looked astounded as an azure-dressed girl stood in front him. There was a clear blue sky above him with a gentle breeze stroking his neck. The green ground beneath his feet was filled with grass that extended outwards. Swords of various colors were scattered and embedded in the ground around him, as though they were blooming flowers.

This place...

Shi Xiaobai drew a gasp. This was the world he had seen in Sunless' eyes!

Shi Xiaobai took another look in front of him. The azure-dressed girl who stood in between the heaven and earth was Sunless!

“Sword,” Sunless said softly once again as she threw the sword in her hand gently at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai caught the sword and immediately understood Sunless' intention. With a grin, he raised the sword and pointed at Sunless, saying, “This King happens to have the same intention!”

Sunless' eyes shimmered slightly as she nodded heavily. Reaching out her right hand, a sword embedded in the ground suddenly shot towards her from a distance and came to a stable halt in her hand.

Shi Xiaobai smiled as he charged forward and slashed out!

This strike was simple and was also known as Beginner Sword!

However, this strike actually contained a catch because this strike was Beginner Sword at the Crest of Perfection realm!

Sunless' eyes brightened as she slashed her sword forward.

“Clang!”

This was a collision between swords!

It was also a battle between sword techniques!

...

...

Inside Sunless' room.

Silence, without a sound.

There were only two people in the room. One was standing beside the bed, while the other sat on a chair. Their eyes were locked, but their expressions were dull, as though they were looking at each other lovingly, but it also appeared as though they were not looking at each other.

During this quiet moment, the only thing that could be heard was their breathing.

However, their breathing was synchronized. Every breath taken was maintained at the same rhythm and speed. It appeared as



though their heartbeats and pulses were also at the same frequency.

It was as if their souls were connected together.

An unknown period of time had passed when suddenly a beam of golden light bloomed from the right hand of the standing person. Moments later, a fair little loli appeared in the room.

She looked up to the left and then turned to the right.

“A sword fanatic.”

“A sword retard.”

“The difference between them is like night and day, but why are they able to have their sword intent resonate, and have a spiritual exchange?”

The loli blinked her eyes and said with a sigh, “Hai, This Sword Spirit can’t understand.”

...

...

Defeat!

Abject defeat!

Another defeat!

Incessant defeats!

Shi Xiaobai nearly lost count of the number of defeats he had suffered. He only knew that he had never won once!

His Beginner Sword had reached the Crest of Perfection realm, but against Sunless, he could not even survive one strike!

The Beginner Sword might be simple, but at the level of the Crest of Perfection, its strength and speed was incalculable.

However, Sunless had similarly used Beginner Sword, but with her Beginner Sword at the Exemplary Mastery realm, she was able to defeat Shi Xiaobai in one strike!

Shi Xiaobai quickly realized that this was not the difference in proficiency, but a result of their different insights into the way of the sword!

It was like Shi Xiaobai was driving a Ferrari, while Sunless was only driving a BMW. But in a true racing match, Sunless was able to use her driving skills to make up for the disadvantage of her car, to the point of even creating a dominating advantage.

And such driving skill was the insight into the way of the sword!

This sort of comprehension required thousands of rounds of practice and confrontation, so that experience could be slowly accumulated!

Sunless had already found her own way of the sword, and had proceeded forward on that path of truth.

As for Shi Xiaobai, he had only just learned Beginner Sword, but he had yet to understand the true way of the sword.

Shi Xiaobai felt as though he had returned to the moment he encountered Thomas. In order to cultivate Crab Steps, he had been shot in the head by Thomas again and again.

However, this was different from what he had experienced with Thomas.

His opponent this time was Sunless. She did not mock or encourage him, nor did she give him any guidance. She would only silently defeat him again and again. Regardless of how terrible a defeat Shi Xiaobai suffered, her next strike was still as ruthless as ever.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai could only learn from his own defeats through trial and error before he could find his own calling on the path of the sword!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes burned with fighting spirit as he pulled a sword out from the ground and rushed forward with sword in hand.

He was not afraid of failure!

The only thing he was afraid of was not having progress!

But fortunately, he was constantly improving!

“Clang!”

One strike!

“Clang!”

Two strikes!

“Clang!”

Three strikes!

“Peng!”

Shi Xiaobai was sent flying by a sword beam once again.

“Again!”

Shi Xiaobai immediately stood up. Pulling out another sword, he charged forward once again.

Sunless remained expressionless, but her eyes were becoming brighter.

Shi Xiaobai's sword technique was truly weak at the moment.

But she knew that Shi Xiaobai's future in sword arts would definitely be very strong!

And she was looking forward to that!

Sunless raised her sword and without mercy, she slashed!

...

After an unknown period of time.

Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes and his eyes met a blue pair of eyes.

Sunlight had filtered through the curtains beside him, illuminating the stunning beauty.

“Morning...”

Sunless cocked her head slightly and whispered. The corners of her mouth suddenly suffused a very faint smile that could strike deep into one’s heart.

“Morning.”

Shi Xiaobai smiled.

That night.

He had tussled with her for 300 rounds.

He did not win even once.

## Chapter 218: Not Splitting, Let's Assist!

---

Although Shi Xiaobai had suffered defeat all night long, he was constantly improving. He went from suffering an abject defeat after one strike to the point of him finally being able to survive dozens of strikes.

This was a very apparent progress which Sunless noticed. She could not help but reveal a faint smile. It was a very beautiful smile, but short as well. It was fleeting.

Shi Xiaobai felt somewhat regretful, but his regret was a result of the short night.

Although he was able to end in a stalemate with Sunless over dozens of strikes eventually, that was him using the Beginner Sword at the Crest of Perfection against her using Beginner Sword at the Exemplary Mastery realm.

The Beginner Sword was after all a basic sword technique. There weren't many variations or tricks, but Sunless had used her own sword insights to open up a gap between them.

Shi Xiaobai was constantly searching for his own path of the sword through hundreds of defeats, but he had failed right to the very end. He had only seen a glimmer of light in the vague darkness.

Shi Xiaobai realized that he needed to have greater experience for him to open up his own path of the sword.

Only when he possessed his own understanding of the sword could he truly battle Sunless.

Unfortunately, a single night was still too short.

“This King shall be leaving.”

Shi Xiaobai did not expect himself to spend all night in this room, but he was now very happy that he did not say goodbye ahead of time last night.

Sunless nodded.

Shi Xiaobai headed for the door. When he opened the door, he was immediately surprised. He saw six people sitting outside the door. Who else could they be but Heartless and company?

At this moment, they were leaning against the walls with their eyes closed. When they heard the door open, they immediately opened their eyes.

The other five rookies, other than Heartless, were pale in the face. They looked like fatigue had overcome them, as though their bodies had been emptied out. They gritted their teeth and yelled, “Tu Dahei!”

The five of them had suffered from diarrhea all night long. Only



at five in the morning did they manage to get some rest, but immediately, they were informed that Tu Dahei had spent all night in Sunless' room. Immediately, they began to stand guard outside Sunless' room.

They were truly tired and sleepy, but their hatred and rage were sustaining their wills. After finally seeing Shi Xiaobai walk out of Sunless' room while he still wore the same clothes as yesterday, their eyes immediately turned red!

Tu Dahei, you deserve death!

The five rookies dragged their frail bodies and charged at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai was obviously unafraid. He took a step forward and reached out both his hands.

The five rookies turned pale as they immediately retreated backwards as though they had seen a ghost.

They recalled the terror of being dominated by the bathroom and the toilet.

Heartless walked in front of the five and said to Shi Xiaobai with a cold expression, "Tu Dahei, you have gone too far!"

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, "You are right, This King should apologize to everyone's toilet."

“Tu Dahei!”

The five immediately flashed their weapons because they could not tolerate such derision.

Heartless stretched out his hand to motion them to not lose their cool. Looking at Shi Xiaobai, he tried his best to speak with a calm tone, “Let me ask you one last time. Is it true that you did it for five hours? And what did you do in my sister’s room all night?”

Shi Xiaobai curled his mouth and found this person exceedingly irritating. However, he was currently disinterested in these weak rookies. He was in a hurry to return to his room to take a shower, so he said honestly, “This King only sat for five hours yesterday. As for last night, This King tussled with your sister for three hundred rounds and ended up losing track of time. When This King realized it, the sky was already bright. Is there a problem?”

When the six people heard this, they felt a jolt passing through them!

Tussled for three hundred rounds!?

All night into day!?

And he even asked if there was a problem!?

“It appears that there’s nothing else to say.”

Heartless sighed and pulled out the sword behind him. His eyes were cold as killing intent immediately surged.

The other five raised their weapons again, with eyes filled with unrestrained killing intent.

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes turned slightly cold as streams of white psionic power poured out from his fingertips. They took form as they coagulated, turning into a sharp and solid psionic sword.

The beginnings of a fierce battle had been triggered.

At this moment, Sunless appeared behind Shi Xiaobai. She looked at everyone with a deadpan expression and gently shook her head.

“Little Sun!”

Heartless’ face stiffened and he said with great difficulty, “Was what Tu Dahei...said true? That you and him....tussled...tussled three hundred rounds last night?”

The other five rookies pricked up their ears. They refused to believe Tu Dahei’s side of the story.

When Sunless heard this, she shook her head blankly.

Heartless and company immediately heaved a sigh of relief.

That's more like it. How could this matter be true? How could the snow lotus high in the sky come down to the mortal world?

The six persons furiously turned their heads at Shi Xiaobai.

It was all a result of this jerk deceiving them!

But at this moment, Sunless said with a soft voice, "Six hundred and fifty-three rounds..."

Heartless and company were immediately petrified.

Shi Xiaobai grinned. He never expected Sunless to also be counting. He had indeed lost six hundred and fifty-three times. This was darn awkward.

Shi Xiaobai noticed how Heartless and company had their eyes glazed over. He immediately retreated. If he stayed here any longer, it was not as easy to posture in front of these mortals.

Heartless and company felt their hearts collapse. When they noticed Shi Xiaobai leaving, they immediately wanted to chase after him, but immediately an azure sword beam flashed in front of them, preventing them from taking another step forward.

Heartless turned his head at Sunless. His angry look gradually calmed down as he forced himself to speak calmly, “Little Sun... you became fond of him just like this?”

Sunless pondered for a moment when she heard this.

She was fond of Shi Xiaobai giving her ‘sword arts heritage’.

She was fond of the aura filled with sword intent that emanated from Shi Xiaobai’s body.

She had been deducing her sword arts alone in her mind, but Shi Xiaobai had managed to resonate with her sword intent, allowing their spirits to connect. Despite her continuously winning during the sword sparring last night, she was fond of it.

She was fond of Shi Xiaobai improving amidst failure and the beginning outline of an unyielding way of the sword.

So, was she fond of him?

She did not know.

“He...is very good.”

Sunless considered for a moment before giving such an answer. She then shut the door gently.

Outside the door, the six people fell silent for a long while. Although Sunless had not given a direct answer, to them, it was an affirmative response.

The adonis said angrily, “I can’t accept it! Definitely not!”

The female whopper said, “Little Sister Sun must have been deceived by Tu Dahei.”

The burly teenager said with a deep voice, “We can’t let Tu Dahei off that simply!”

The short-haired teenager said with a sinister look, “Find an opportunity to kill him?”

“Enough!”

Heartless cut off the others and said, “Do you know? Since she was little, Little Sun has only liked sword arts!”

The faces of the five rookies stiffened as the adonis said with a dry chuckle, “Boss Heartless, what do you mean?”

Heartless sighed and said, “She is my sister. What she is fond of is of utmost importance. Let’s forget...what happened yesterday and the day before yesterday.”

The adonis said in disbelief, “Boss...are you saying we can’t seek

our revenge?”

Heartless said coldly, “If Tu Dahei dares to let down my sister, old and new grudges will be settled. When the time comes, I’ll kill him if it takes my life! But now, my sister’s happiness is of utmost importance. Not only will we not seek revenge, but we should try to find a way to make Tu Dahei commit fully to my sister and devote himself to her and no one else.”

When the five rookies heard this, they were immediately stunned as they gave bitter looks.

This cookie-cutter plot wasn’t right. Why did they suddenly go from the archetype antagonists that were bent on splitting the couple to assisting archetypes? Can the cards not be dealt so erratically?

## Chapter 219: Choosing Ten Out Of A Thousand, Picking One Out Of A Hundred

---

Shi Xiaobai quickly realized that he had no idea which hotel room was his. Helplessly, he inquired at the front desk.

The receptionist had a deep impression of Shi Xiaobai. The brutal assault yesterday had astounded her. As such, she patiently answered Shi Xiaobai's questions and even took the initiative to lead Shi Xiaobai to his level.

The members of Gaia were assigned rooms at the thirteenth floor. This was also the reason why Riko and company did not notice the commotion that happened in the lobby at the first floor.

Shi Xiaobai's room was Room 5 on the thirteenth floor. However, he did not receive a key, so he could only knock on Room 6, which was Riko's room.

Shi Xiaobai knocked twice and shouted once.

However, five doors opened simultaneously.

Yama Minamiya and Riko, Mozzie, Mu Yuesheng and Kevin came out from their respective rooms.

Yama Minamiya said angrily, "Shi Xiaobai, what did you do all night in Sunless' room? If you do not honestly explain yourself,



stay away from my daughter in the future.”

“Dad, what are you talking about?”

Riko rolled her eyes and said to Shi Xiaobai, “Xiaobai, explain yourself properly.”

Mozzie blinked her eyes and said, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, it must be Sunless who seduced you, right?”

Mu Yuesheng sighed and said, “I never expected you to be such an impressive hooligan.”

Kevin glanced at Mozzie and said to Shi Xiaobai shortly after, “Hmph, This Genius will not comment on this matter, but if you were to two-time, This Genius will definitely not sit idle!”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly dumbfounded. He said with a frown, “Why does This King not understand a thing of what all of you are saying?”

...

...

Five minutes later, after a series of interrogations, Shi Xiaobai finally understood the reason behind the misunderstanding.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat at a loss whether to laugh or to cry regarding this misunderstanding. He also finally understood the reason of Heartless and company's extreme reactions and bizarre questions.

Finally, he told to Riko and company a normal version that was closer to the truth.

The general gist was that he had accidentally damaged Sunless' purplish-gold silver dragon sword, and gave her something similar to a sword manual as reparations. Finally, Sunless gave him a true sword manual, and he was engrossed reading the sword manual and sat in a corner of the hallway for five whole hours.

Although this explanation had concealed a lot of important information, it had easily resolved most of the misunderstandings. However, it was difficult to explain why he had spent the whole night in Sunless' room. Shi Xiaobai could only describe the matter in general terms.

But unexpectedly, Yama Minamiya immediately understood what Shi Xiaobai was referring to. He said with a sigh, "This is an extremely rare spiritual connection phenomenon. It requires the correct combination of luck and people. You are pretty lucky to be able to engage in an entire night of sword sparring with Sunless. It will definitely improve your sword comprehension!"

Shi Xiaobai nodded upon hearing these words. He had indeed improved a lot. Taking driving skills as an analogy, he was a bad driver driving a Ferrari before last night, but after last night, he finally learned how to drift around the bends. However, he needed

a period of time and opportunities before he could become a truly experienced driver!

With the misunderstandings finally resolved, everyone spontaneously heaved a sigh of relief. They immediately began speaking on hindsight.

Yama Minamiya: “I knew there must have been a misunderstanding somewhere.”

Riko: “Hmph, I knew a fool like you who has no sexual urges or intent would do that.”

Mozzie: “This Mosquito said so early on. Lord Shi Xiaobai refrains from lust. Lord Shi Xiaobai is an honest gentleman.”

Mu Yuesheng: “Looks like I overestimated your abilities.”

Kevin: “Thankfully This Genius always rejects this wave of lovey-dovey ideas.”

Shi Xiaobai: “...”

Shi Xiaobai ignored them and asked Yama Minamiya for his key. Entering his hotel room, he took out a change of clothes from his luggage and took a refreshing cold shower.

The mass selection was beginning today, and the selection venue

and rules would be sent to each organization's supervisor.

Hence, at seven o'clock sharp, everyone gathered in Yama Minamiya's room. Yama Minamiya held his cellphone while the rest began waiting in boredom.

At this moment, Riko said with a smile, "What do you guess the first round would be?"

Shi Xiaobai boredly said without thinking, "Long-distance running."

Mozzie said with a sly smile, "Long-distance running!"

Kevin immediately echoed, "Long-distance running!"

Mu Yuesheng could not help but smile as she said, "Long-distance running!"

Riko said in surprise, "It's rare for all of you to have such uniform thoughts!"

Yama Minamiya gave himself a facepalm as he laughed. These fellows were pulling his leg. If the first round was not long-distance running, he would be somewhat embarrassed.

"Ding Dong!"

With a ringtone playing, the cellphone suddenly vibrated.

Yama Minamiya immediately raised his phone and looked down.

Everyone else also looked curiously at Yama Minamiya.

Moments later, Yama Minamiya frowned slightly as he looked at everyone and said with a wry smile, “It’s not long-distance running. Furthermore...there is nothing beyond the first round.”

Riko said out of curiosity, “What do you mean by that?”

Yama Minamiya immediately handed his cellphone to Riko and said with a sigh, “The mass selection...only has one round! A single round of selection will choose ten from a thousand people!”

“Ah?”

Mozzie exclaimed.

Mu Yuesheng frowned slightly and said, “Isn’t a single round too hasty? If a single round can select ten out of a thousand, wouldn’t this selection round be extremely grand and comprehensive in order to be fair? It couldn’t be a thousand-person free-for-all battle, right?”

“It’s not a thousand-person free-for-all battle.”

Riko looked up at this moment, her eyes dazzling bright. She said, “But it’s not much different from a thousand-person free-for-all battle!”

Kevin threw up his hands and said, “Miss Riko, Division Minister Minamiya, can you not keep us guessing?”

Riko did not say a single word as she handed the cellphone over.

When Kevin took the cellphone and looked at it, his pupils violently constricted as he exclaimed, “Holy shit, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower!?”

“What? Are you serious?”

Mozzie hurriedly snatched the phone from Kevin and when she looked at it, she exclaimed, “It’s really true!”

Mu Yuesheng’s eyes shimmered and she said, “That’s a good thing.”

Yama Minamiya nodded and said, “It’s indeed a good thing. It’s no wonder they set the selection venue in Shanghai. The time also happens to be in the middle of the month. However, I’m truly surprised that the organization senate would go this far for this matter.”

Riko waved her fist and said, “How much money would it cost to reserve the entire Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower? No,

just money alone isn't enough! All of you have truly lucked out!"

Mozzie and the other two immediately nodded their heads in excitement. Mozzie said cutely, "Boohooohoo, This Mosquito never expected that she would be able to enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower in her life."

Shi Xiaobai, who had been silent all this while, could no longer resist. He pulled out a coin and said to everyone, "This King requires a patient and intimate little jacket [1](#) to explain to This King what the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is. A Divine Coin will be given as a reward!"

## Chapter 220: Please Read The Setting Patiently!

---

Seeing the coin in Shi Xiaobai's hand, Riko rolled her eyes and said, "Hmph, illiterate."

Mozzie blinked her eyes and said, "Sorry, Lord Shi Xiaobai, I'm actually just a member of the audience who doesn't really understand anything. I do not know much about the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower either."

Kevin turned his head around, using his icy attitude to express his refusal to answer.

Yama Minamiya gave an awkward smile. He wanted to explain it to Shi Xiaobai, but seeing that extremely normal looking coin, and how Shi Xiaobai used the words, "patient and intimate little jacket", he found it embarrassing to do so.

Shi Xiaobai scanned the people around him before pinning his last hopes on Mu Yuesheng. He looked at her with a sincere gaze.

Mu Yuesheng felt creeped out after being stared at by Shi Xiaobai. With a sigh, she said, "I really can't do a thing about you... The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is one of the most famous training grounds in China. It is even famous internationally. Furthermore, the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is a training ground only limited to people at the Psionic Mortal Realm. It's termed as the best training ground for people at the Psionic Mortal Realm. The sages once said



—If one does not challenge the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower before the Psionic Soul Realm, it would be equivalent to losing out the best opportunity while in the Psionic Mortal Realm. This sentence has been recorded as one of the nine greatest regrets of Psionites. Therefore, the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is extremely important to Psionites.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head blankly, feeling somewhat confused about it.

Mu Yuesheng added on again, “The moment of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower’s appearance, as well as the reasons for its existence are unknown. However, it has an extremely complete assessment program. Furthermore, the tower has many treasures as training rewards. There are even some extremely rare sacred items among them. It’s a training ground that can be used for a long period of time. Most believe that the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is an advanced technological product left behind by aliens that formerly ruled over human civilization. It was used for the training of their younger generation.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai asked with a deep voice, “This King now has a rough understanding, but can you explain what you meant by ‘assessment program’?”

The others quietened down and looked at Mu Yuesheng. Her explanations were as detailed as though they were from a textbook.

Mu Yuesheng said patiently, “There are many training grounds in the world. The reason for their existence is, firstly, to set up

levels of difficulty for the trial-takers to challenge themselves. Secondly, it's to choose the master of a sacred item, divine tool, enchanted equipment, or spiritual treasure. Thirdly, legends say that training grounds are meant to pass on their heritage, so it is held to choose a suitable successor. A typical training ground would only serve one of these three purposes, but the reason why the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is famous is because it fulfills all three. The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is a training ground meant for challenging people, allowing them the chance of obtaining treasures and the passing on of heritage. And for any training ground to achieve its sustainability and fairness, it would require a complex but extremely logical 'assessment program'!"

Shi Xiaobai's eyes gradually lit up. Although he remained unable to understand everything she said, the words 'sacred item' and 'divine tools' had attracted his attention.

Mozzie also said in excitement, "Sister Yuesheng, carry on, carry on!"

Mu Yuesheng felt somewhat embarrassed seeing everyone looking at her. After she considered her words, she said, "The assessment program is a product of an advanced civilization, so there is no way to comprehend it with our understanding of science. Humans have been researching it for years, but have yet to truly crack its logic. The assessment program has remained the same since ancient times. If you want to explain the assessment program in common-day terms, it's like the source code of a computer game. It has a variety of features that are assembled together to run a complete game engine. Every training ground's programming features are different. There are only two features

that are absolutely necessary for every training ground. One is the set of entry restrictions, and second is the exit command.”

“For example, the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower’s entry restrictions are: Anyone in the Psionic Mortal Realm. Any existence that exceeds this realm has no way of stepping into the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. This makes it easier to set the difficulty of the trials. And the exit command is ‘Open Sesame’. Once the trial-taker says the two words, they would instantly leave the training ground. This is an emergency measure used for trial-takers when their lives are severely threatened. After all, the training ground is only used to test and train the trial-takers.”

“Of course, the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower has countless other programming features as well. It’s like a machine that requires all sorts of gears. As for the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, its most important program is the mission program! The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is not just a single tower, but an alternate world that stacks nine small worlds together. On first entry, the trial-takers would enter the first small world. The training program will give a trial to every trial-taker. Only by completing the mission can one proceed to the next level’s world. Every level’s difficulty would geometrically increase, but the number of treasures and heritage would also increase. It is just like a tower.”

“If I did not guess wrongly, the organization senate’s selection criteria will be based on the level achieved when the candidate fails, or level of completion of the mission so as to decide on the top ten!”

Mu Yuesheng finished her long passage in one breath before lowering her head out of embarrassment. She felt somewhat flustered having the feeling of a teacher teaching elementary school children.

“Well said!”

Yama Minamiya was the first to praise her as he said, “Yuesheng, thank you. I’ll add on. The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower has another important program, known as competitive mode. Riko, you have once taken the trials of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. Explain to them what competitive mode is in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.”

Riko nodded and said seriously, “The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower’s competitive mode is more brutal. When everyone enters the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, a timer will begin counting down. The length of time will depend on the mission given out. Anyways, when the timer counts down, a monster known as the Level Lord will appear. The Level Lord’s strength far exceeds the Psionic Mortal Realm, so the trial-takers have no way of resisting. Therefore, if those who are unable to complete the mission to enter the next level before the timer hits zero, they would be pursued by the Level Lord. When the time comes, that is equivalent to entering hell mode.”

“And worst of all, the second level’s countdown will begin after 10% of the challengers have arrived at the second level! That is to say, if you were to fall behind too much at the first level, by the time you enter the second level, the Level Lord might soon appear, or have already appeared. When that happens, the chances of you

failing to complete the mission would be extremely high. This is a vicious competition. The situation for the people who fall behind will be harsher, so they will fall behind even further. Hence, try to constantly be in the group that is leading, and try to be in the top 10% all the time.”

After Riko had finished her explanation, Mozzie and Kevin’s expressions immediately turned ugly. It was obvious that they would not be able to enter the leading 10%. The greater the gap from the leading group, the higher the probability of encountering the Level Lord at every level. If they accidentally became the target of the Level Lord, other than shouting out the exit command, there was no other option.

Yama Minamiya lamented, “The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is a challenge and a trial for you, but it is also a competition with other challengers. It is indeed very suitable as a mass selection. The organization senate has truly committed a lot for this matter.”

## Chapter 221: A Wondrous Lucky Charm

---

As Yama Minamiya reflected over the lengths to which the organization senate was willing to go, Mu Yuesheng also said with mixed emotions, “The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower’s assessment program takes a month to initialize. Therefore, the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is opened only once a month. It costs a great deal for every trial-taker’s spot, yet the organization senate has reserved the entire Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower for a month. The amount of money they have spent must be some astronomical number.”

Riko said enviously, “So, it is an extremely rare opportunity for all of you. To be able to enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower for free really makes me jealous. All of you must grasp this opportunity well. Even if you can’t enter the top ten, if you are able to obtain any one of the treasures or an ancient heritage, it would have been worth it.”

Mozzie nodded in excitement, “I got it. This is truly an unexpected surprise!”

However, Yama Minamiya suddenly said seriously, “Remember, do not be brave and persist on. You must never hesitate to use the exit command to leave the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower when the time comes! Although the training ground has the exit command as a safety measure, there is still a certain risk of death. Although the likelihood isn’t high, it is best to be careful. Make sure that you do not become greedy and careless.”

Upon hearing this, Mozzie suddenly frowned and said, “Since the

exit command is ‘Open Sesame’, what if one is a mute?”

Yama Minamiya said, “This is a good question. Remember that you have to say it out loud, regardless of how soft it is. As long as you read out the two words, you will immediately leave the training ground. Mutes obviously are unable to speak the exit command, so mutes are barred from challenging any training ground. There was once a powerful mute who believed that he would not need to use the exit command. He believed he could easily pass the training ground, but as a result of an accident, he was trapped alive in the training ground.”

Riko sighed and said, “Back then, among the people who challenged the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower with me, one of them had damaged his throat, so he was unable to escape. He was eventually killed by the Level Lord. Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower has its dangers. When you need to leave, you have to be resolute. Also, make sure to protect your throats!”

The others nodded their heads solemnly. Shi Xiaobai also firmly kept this sentence in mind.

“Alright, we should be setting off now!” Yama Minamiya said.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai walked over to Mu Yuesheng. Mu Yuesheng faltered slightly and wondered out aloud, “What’s the matter?”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly reached out his hand to grab Mu Yuesheng’s hand.

“You!”

Mu Yuesheng’s eyes stared, but suddenly she felt a coldness in her palm. She immediately looked down and saw a coin Shi Xiaobai had put into her palm.

Mu Yuesheng was at a loss whether to laugh or cry as she said, “What are you doing?”

Shi Xiaobai said seriously, “This is no ordinary coin, but a Divine Coin. This is a reward This King has bestowed you. Take good care of it!”

Mu Yuesheng rolled her eyes, but she held the coin and placed it in her pocket. She secretly thought to herself to treat it as a wondrous lucky charm.

...

...

After dealing with their personal matters and a simple breakfast, everyone set off.

After half an hour in traffic, the group arrived at the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.



The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower was naturally not in the shape of a tower in the human world. Instead, it was a gigantic teleportation nexus.

This nexus was inscribed on the ground with gold lines stretching out in winding patterns. It did not fade despite the thousands of years, also because of a protective domain around the training ground, it was not damaged in any way.

The nexus was huge, allowing it to hold more than ten thousand people without it being packed. However, there were at most one thousand people about to be teleported this time. This was probably because there were only a thousand spots for the mass selection.

The activation of the teleportation nexus needed an initialization key, which was held by a national department. It was called the 'Trial Department'.

The 'Trial Department for the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower' was responsible for managing it.

When Shi Xiaobai and company arrived, a number of staff came forward to lead them. The quartet bade farewell to Riko and Yama Minamiya, and soon arrived at the teleportation nexus.

At this moment, there were hundreds of people waiting at the teleportation nexus. As it was vast in size, it did not appear packed. There were clusters of people in various different spots.

There was no lack of famous rookies. For example, there were the ten rookies who had been officially forecast to enter the top ten. They were no doubt the focus of attention.

And most notable of all was Zeus's seven-person team. As a first-tier organization domestically, Zeus attracted a lot of publicity. Furthermore, they had two rookies in the official forecast, third place, Sunless, and fifth place, Heartless. They were naturally the focus of attention.

And most important of all, Sunless' beauty and fairy-like bearing, and Heartless' handsomeness were just pure eye-candy.

The only people who could receive such attention as the Ye siblings were probably only first and second on the forecast, Speechless and Mu Lengxi.

However, Speechless was proficient at disguises and was probably disguised as a normal person amongst the crowd. As for Mu Lengxi, there was not even a bit of information about her.

When Shi Xiaobai and company entered the teleportation nexus, they obviously saw the Zeus rookies.

The Zeus rookies apparently noticed them as well.

Other than the Ye siblings, the other five looked pale in the face. They had dark circles under their eyes and looked somewhat weak. They immediately stared at Shi Xiaobai with hateful gazes.

Shi Xiaobai ignored them and nodded at Sunless, who nodded in response from a distance.

Following that, Shi Xiaobai and company found a spot to stand.

The trio were somewhat nervous. They were about to enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, which was both a trial, as well as a selection. They were still feeling quite a lot of pressure.

“Do you need This King to help you relax through massaging?” Shi Xiaobai thought of a good idea and proposed it.

Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng immediately stared at Shi Xiaobai with a repulsed look. If they were to be massaged by Shi Xiaobai here, wouldn't they embarrass themselves if they moaned?

Noticing how everyone ignored him, he could only stand there waiting in a bored manner.

Suddenly, a flurry of discussion broke out nearby.

“Do you think that anyone among the thousand of us will be able to reach the seventh level?”

“You are overthinking things. No one has entered the seventh level in a hundred years, right?”

“But isn’t there Speechless this time?”

“Oh, that’s true. If it’s Speechless, there’s a one in a hundred chance of that happening.”

“One in a hundred? Then, wouldn’t the probability of Speechless reaching the eighth level be less than one in ten thousand?”

“Heh heh, there were only four people who reached the eighth level throughout history. What do you think? As for the ninth level, don’t even mention it. No one has ever gone there.”

“Tsk, it’s after all restricted to the Psionic Mortal Realm. I heard that from the seventh level onwards, the ordinary monsters are already at the early stages of the Psionic Soul Realm. How can someone at the Psionic Mortal Realm beat that?”

These people discussed but did not deliberately lower their voices.

At this moment, a voice suddenly interjected and interrupted their dialogue.

“Brother, you are truly ignorant. There’s a rookie this year called Shi Xiaobai. Have you never heard of him? This person is the King of Gods reincarnated, the reappearance of the Demon King, the mortal form of the Heretic King. It would be easy for him to reach the ninth level in a single step.”

The two people immediately turned silent, apparently stunned by what the voice said.

At this moment, a deafening roar like a tiger's resounded outside the nexus.

“Who is Tu Dahei? Get the fuck out here!”

## Chapter 222: Mt. Chang Pulp Farmer

---

Shi Xiaobai felt that his other name, 'Tu Dahei', was considered somewhat famous after being termed the 'Rookie's Mudslide', but for his actual name, 'Shi Xiaobai', to remain unknown was quite problematic.

Hence, when he heard the discussion mention how no one had ever been able to reach the ninth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Shi Xiaobai immediately took this opportunity to brag about 'Shi Xiaobai'. The two of them were indeed stunned by him!

Just as Shi Xiaobai wanted to continue on bragging about the greatness of 'Shi Xiaobai', an angry bellow that sounded like a tiger's roar sounded from a hill outside the nexus.

“Who is Tu Dahei? Get the fuck out here!”

When everyone heard this angry roar, they involuntarily turned their heads. They saw a youth about eight feet tall with thick eyebrows and large eyes, a broad jawline and cut facial features standing on a hill. The youth was wearing silver feather chest armor and holding a silver spear in hand. He looked majestic and domineering.

The domineering youth bellowed once again, “I’m Mt. Chang’s Pulp Farmer. Does Tu Dahei dare to get the fuck out here to fight me?”

Everyone immediately reacted as a flurry of discussion broke out.

“He is fourth of the official forecast, Pulp Farmer!”

“Mt. Chang’s Pulp Farmer. He has been the champion of the National Secondary School Martial Tournament for three years. He’s proficient in the spear, but his fists and kicks are equally impressive. He’s known as a young God of War!”

“It’s said that this person comes from Mt. Chang. His mother is in the pulp industry and his father is a farmer; hence, he changed his name to Pulp Farmer. He’s a teenager with quite a character. Meeting him today, he truly has a character.”

“A simple roar from him to get Tu Dahei to fight. He is truly arrogant and domineering! I wonder what grudge he has with Tu Dahei?”

“Do you think Tu Dahei will accept the challenge?”

“Definitely not. Didn’t you see that analysis thread of the anti-fake news expert, ‘Fang Zhouzi’? In his analysis, Fang Zhouzi said that it was completed in a planned fashion for Tu Dahei to be able to one-shot Heartless. Furthermore, there was an extremely high possibility of him using a mystic technique that required an extremely high price. It was said to be a secret move designed by the organization, Gaia, and that Tu Dahei’s true strength is no match for Heartless at all, much less against Pulp Farmer, whose ranking is higher. If Tu Dahei is present, he will definitely coward away.”

“Fang Zhouzi’s anti-fake news have been always accurate. It seems like Tu Dahei will not appear.”

“ ... ”

A din stirred, roared and flailed. The youth on the hill was in no hurry as he looked at everyone in the nexus. He stood there silently, like a majestic statue.

“This is the Pulp Farmer from Mt. Chang that is ranked fourth? Shi Xiaobai can finish him in three seconds.”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and sighed, with an expression filled with disappointment.

Two people in front of Shi Xiaobai immediately stared at him, and one of them said with scorn, “Who is Shi Xiaobai? Why have I never heard of him?”

Another person also derided him and said, “Who are you? How much did that Shi Xiaobai pay you for you to brag about him?”

“Who is This King?”

Shi Xiaobai sneered and began using Crab Steps as he transformed into a fast beam of light and passed the duo. He darted through the crowd, causing startled cries, and in an instant,



appeared on the hill. He stood ten meters across the magnificent youth.

The hundreds of people in the nexus exclaimed as they looked at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai looked at Pulp Farmer and loudly said, “This King Tu Dahei will accept the challenge!”

Immediately an uproar broke out.

“Who said that Tu Dahei would not dare to appear?”

“Ss... That Fang Zhouzi’s anti-fake news report is wrong or is Tu Dahei forcefully courting death?”

“Regardless of the case, this will be interesting.”

“...”

Mu Yuesheng and company revealed wry smiles. Previously, Yama Minamiya had deliberately used the name, ‘Shi Xiaobai’, to sign him up so as to avoid the attention of ‘Tu Dahei’, but now, everything was for naught.

Pulp Farmer pricked his eyebrows slightly as he raised his spear and pointed its tip at Shi Xiaobai. He shouted, “Pull your sword out!”

Shi Xiaobai did not engage in nonsensical banter with him. He had never seen Pulp Farmer before, nor did he know why Pulp Farmer wanted to battle him, however, he was never afraid of a challenge. Shi Xiaobai stretched out his hand forward, as a white psionic sword instantly appeared in his hand!

“That was fast. Isn’t his psionic construction way too fast?”

“He formed the sword in a second. Tu Dahei’s psionic control is somewhat terrifying.”

“Just a basic move like psionic construction can actually be this cool?”

“...”

Pulp Farmer hissed with a grin as he said, “Psionic sword?”

Pulp Farmer looked with disdain, and a cold expression. Without another word, he strode towards Shi Xiaobai with a spear in hand.

Shi Xiaobai was obviously not going to back down. Without using the advantage from his Crab Steps, he similarly strode forward.

As the distance between the two shrank, everyone stared with widened eyes as they held their breaths.

When the two were separated by three meters, Pulp Farmer took the initiative to stab forward!

Boom!

The spear was as fast as lightning, and as fierce as a burning inferno. When it stabbed forward, air seemed to fracture, as a spear shadow seemed to tear through the void!

Shi Xiaobai's pupils contracted slightly. The unfancy stab was many times stronger than WindWithoutTrace's Wind Three Strikes!

However, Shi Xiaobai did not retreat nor did he dodge. Instead he took a step forward and brandished his sword to clash with the spear!

This slash was even more simple and plain than Pulp Farmer's stab!

However, its strength and speed astounded everyone!

Beginner Sword!

No, this was the Beginner Sword technique that had reached the Crest of Perfection realm, with strength and speed maximized to their limits!

Peng!

The sword and spear clashed as a deafening collision reverberated!

This single stab and slash both contained pure energy. It was a collision of surging force!

Boom!

Air burst forth as the sunlight seemed to shatter from the collision forces. Shi Xiaobai and Pulp Farmer took a step back from this force.

Shi Xiaobai's psionic sword was after all weaker. It could not withstand the impact of the force, so it shattered into pieces.

But at the moment it shattered, Shi Xiaobai immediately constructed a new psionic sword. He held his sword while he waited for Pulp Farmer's second strike.

At this moment, the rookies in the nexus exclaimed.

“What terrifying strength!”

“This is pure speed and power, a spear and a sword.”

“The first clash is a tie!”

“No, the first clash is Tu Dahei’s win. Don’t forget that he’s using a psionic sword!”

“Ss... Tu Dahei lives up to his name indeed. I’m afraid that Fang Zhouzi’s smack down on fake news has ended up smacking him in his face!”

“No hurry, the battle has just begun!”

“...”

The battle had indeed just begun, but Pulp Farmer did not immediately attack again. Instead, he said with a deep voice, “This strike only used 10% of my strength. If you do not want to be defeated too terribly, quickly pull out your sword!”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, “What a joke. This King’s strike had only used 1% of his strength. You do not have the qualification to even see This King’s sacred sword.”

Pulp Farmer’s eyes turned cold as he held his spear to stab forward again. At this moment, a commanding voice boomed from the distance.

“No fooling around!”

A blue barrier suddenly fell from the sky as it separated Shi Xiaobai and Pulp Farmer.

# Chapter 223: Tu Dahei Says Shi Xiaobai Is Awesome

---

This blue barrier had fallen from the sky, blocking Pulp Farmer's stab and Shi Xiaobai's slash. It was extremely hard as it separated the duo.

A skinny old man walked towards them from a distance. Following behind him were a few men and women.

“Elder Jiang!”

“Senator Jiang...”

Immediately, keen-eyed people recognized the skinny old man's identity.

The elder said coldly, “The selection is around the corner, why would you begin fighting now?”

Shi Xiaobai remained silent and only looked at Pulp Farmer. He had no idea why Pulp Farmer had challenged him to a fight.

Pulp Farmer's expression was slightly cold. He knew that there was no way for him to continue this battle, so he withdrew his spear and said to the elder, “Private grudge”.

The elder said with a deep voice, “Regardless if it's a private

grudge or not, settle it on your own in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. Now, go to the teleportation nexus and stay there. The selection is about to begin.”

Pulp Farmer nodded and with a leap, he jumped into the nexus from the hill. After landing on the ground, he walked straight into the crowd.

Everyone’s eyes were on him as they saw him slowly walk towards the Zeus rookies.

Heartless came forward and greeted, “Brother Pulp Farmer, it’s been a while.”

Pulp Farmer nodded and immediately took out a phone and said with a deep voice, “What’s the matter with this?”

Heartless looked at it, and there was a picture of Sunless holding onto Shi Xiaobai’s hand at the hotel lobby yesterday.

Heartless shook his head with a bitter smile, “They are...mutual lovers.”

Pulp Farmer’s eyebrows pricked up and he cocked his head to glance at Sunless to the side. However, all he saw was Sunless’ eyes on Shi Xiaobai, who was still on the hill.

Pulp Farmer gave a wry smile. “I thought she would only like swords.”



Heartless felt silent for a moment before saying, “What do you plan on doing?”

Pulp Farmer said, “It never began, so it can’t be called giving up or not giving up... However, I have to see if Tu Dahei actually has the qualifications!”

After Pulp Farmer had said this, he turned and walked far away. A few teenage boys and girls followed him. Apparently, they were rookies from the same organization as Pulp Farmer.

Many people did not understand their conversation, but a few who understood felt slightly surprised. The way they looked at Shi Xiaobai was of extreme shock. They found it unbelievable for Heartless to say the words ‘mutual lovers’.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai walked down from the hill. He found it somewhat regrettable that the battle only lasted a single strike. Soon, he returned to where Mu Yuesheng and company were.

Dozens of gazes landed on Shi Xiaobai as they began whispering. Ever since the organization senate released the forecast ranking, there was much talk about Tu Dahei among the rookies. The ever-bored anti-fake news expert, Fang Zhouzi, had even produced an analysis of Tu Dahei’s deceitfulness.

Hence, the rookies who had read the analysis felt that Fang Zhouzi’s reasoning was believable, so there were quite a number of

people who were doubtful about Tu Dahei.

But from that short exchange of blows, they could not help but question their doubts.

This was because that strike was a sheer clash of force. Although it was unknown how much strength each of them used, from the result of the draw, Tu Dahei, who had used a psionic sword, clearly was better.

Pulp Farmer was ranked fourth, so in that case, Tu Dahei was definitely worthy of his reputation.

At this moment, two people were astounded. It was obvious they were ordinary passersby.

“He’s actually Tu Dahei, then who is the Shi Xiaobai, who he spoke so highly of? Why have I never heard of him? Why didn’t he appear in the official forecast?”

“Shi Xiaobai...must be a super expert who keeps an extremely low profile. For a person like Tu Dahei, there’s no reason for him to exaggerate without reason. Even if that Shi Xiaobai is not as awesome as he says, he must also be extremely powerful. He should be stronger than Tu Dahei!”

“It appears that Shi Xiaobai is a hidden monster even the officials do not know of!”

“What should we do...must we keep this a secret?”

“Do you think with that big mouth of yours you’d be able to resist telling others?”

“Ss... I can’t!”

“Then there you have it!”

The two of them tacitly nodded at each other and turned towards people they knew. They began whispering, “Hey, brother. I have a secret to tell you. Actually...we have a rookie that is stronger than Speechless... It was told to me by Tu Dahei. That person is named Shi Xiaobai, and it’s said that he can beat Pulp Farmer in three seconds...”

Following that, a bizarre situation unfolded. Probably it was because Tu Dahei had just attracted the attention of everyone, news about ‘Shi Xiaobai’ that spread in the name of Tu Dahei, quickly proliferated in a few short minutes. Soon, it had spread throughout the entire nexus.

Very quickly, the discussions regarding ‘Shi Xiaobai’ increased in number. However, many people held a doubtful attitude.

“Who is Shi Xiaobai?”

“Shi Xiaobai is stronger than Speechless? Defeating Pulp Farmer would only take three seconds? I can only ‘heh heh’ about it. It’s

just a nobody that has not even entered the official forecast rankings.”

“But, it was said by Tu Dahei!”

“Tu Dahei said it? I think it’s just made up. Someone said it using Tu Dahei’s name.”

“I also think that if Shi Xiaobai was that powerful, the officials would not have missed him.”

“I remember that on Gaia’s side, there’s some very famous rookie called Shi Xiaobai...”

“You must have remembered wrongly. I believe that Tu Dahei is very powerful, but I’ll definitely not believe that Shi Xiaobai is a figure on that level.”

“Eh? Who is Shi Xiaobai? Why is everyone discussing him?”

“...”

The rookies who were waiting in the nexus were feeling extremely bored. With their tense feelings, a topic of discussion immediately attracted a lot of attention.

Mu Yuesheng and company slowly heard the rookies around discussing, and easily, they deduced the cause and effect of the

matter.

Mu Yuesheng felt speechless as she whispered, “Shi Xiaobai, can you not be so shameless?”

Mozzie also whispered, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, you are so bad.”

Kevin responded with a sneer, “Shi Xiaobai, This Genius accepts the way you hyped yourself up. Unfortunately, they will not buy it. No one will believe your bragging.”

Shi Xiaobai was feeling rather pleased at the moment, so when he heard the trio’s words, he said in high spirits, “This King will soon let them have no choice but to believe!”

...

After about ten minutes, the rookies had changed to another topic and continued chatting. Most people looked nervous and excited. Entering the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower for training was truly an extremely rare opportunity.

Suddenly, without any warning, a golden beam along the perimeter of the nexus shot into the sky. A barrier in the shape of a circular column encircled the nexus, with every rookie enclosed in it.

“Everyone is here. Be prepared to enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower!”

On the hill outside the golden barrier, the skinny elder said, “I shall emphasize once again the importance of the selection. Listen carefully!”

The rookies pricked up their ears.

The skinny elder’s figure was obscured by the golden barrier. All they could see was a skinny and short, somewhat fuzzy black figure. It looked somewhat eerie, but what he said next was even more frightening.

“Among you, there will be people who will be left in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower forever, without even a complete corpse!”

## Chapter 224: Team Leader Tu Dahei

---

“Among you, there will be people who will be left in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower forever, without even a complete corpse!”

The skinny elder’s shocking words stunned the rookies on the nexus ashen.

The skinny elder smiled and said, “Don’t worry. Who I mentioned, were those people who do not cherish their lives, or people obsessed with treasures, or simply careless fools. They miss the opportunity to escape due to their personal weaknesses. If you have a heart that cherishes your life, you will definitely return safely.”

The rookies gradually calmed down upon hearing this.

“But,” the skinny elder gave another eerie laugh as he said, “if you really die in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, the organization senate will send only a minimal consolation money to your family. No one will be responsible for your deaths, do you understand? Now is the last chance for you to leave. Once you enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, it is equivalent to signing a life waiver by default.”

The atmosphere turned heavy once again, but not a single rookie chose to leave. This was because the mortality rate of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower in past years was not considered high. As long as one cherished their life sufficiently,

just saying the exit command, 'Open Sesame', which took less than a second, allowed them to basically escape from any danger.

They just needed to fight their desire for treasures and heritage.

No one would risk their own lives for treasures or heritage.

The rookies thought so.

However, with the golden barrier blocking them, no one could see the skinny elder's strange smile.

Moments later, the skinny elder said again, "I believe your supervisors have already clearly informed and analyzed for you the few functions of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, such as competitive mode, mission mode... So, I will not delve any further on this matter."

"The selection will be to choose ten people out of a thousand. It will be based on the order in which you arrive at a level. If the level is the same, it will depend on the completion progress of the mission. Although we would not be able to have an understanding of the specific situation inside the tower, we will be able to obtain detailed information of everyone who enters. For example, we will know who reaches the second level first or which people are currently in the lead and which people are falling behind. We will also know which people are eliminated at which level. So work hard. Your performance will be seen by your various organizations."



“Next, you will be teleported to the world of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower’s first level. There will be a hundred teleportation waypoints there. You would be randomly split into a hundred ten-person teams and arrive at different locations. The other nine might be strangers to you, or there might be partners for you. That will require a bit of luck, so, I’m wishing you the best of luck.”

“You can always cooperate together or viciously compete against each other. In short, by completing the mission and completing the mission faster than the other 90% of survivors is the most important goal. Oh, forgive me for using the term survivors, but this term is very apt, isn’t it? Heh heh...”

“Alright, enough of nonsense. I wish...for all of you to return alive.”

“Teleportation, begin!”

Before the skinny elder was done with his speech, beams of golden light shot out from all the golden runic patterns of the nexus. Before the rookies managed to digest the elder’s long and strange speech, they were enveloped completely by the golden light and disappeared.

...

At the moment the golden light enveloped them, their consciousness went hazy. Immediately they felt a sense of weightlessness, as though they had stepped into empty air, but for

some reason, they did not fall through.

Shi Xiaobai activated 'Unleaking Turtle Aura' to curb the stimulus on his senses. Opening his eyes, he saw the color of gold flooding his vision.

Moments later, the golden color gradually dissipated, as other colors began appearing in his hazy vision.

His deafened ears gradually recovered their sense of hearing, and he heard a slight noise in his ears.

Shi Xiaobai closed his eyes tightly before opening them wide once again. Finally he could see his surroundings clearly. He was surrounded by a golden screen that extended up into the sky. However, this golden screen was much smaller. The former golden screen was able to encircle more than ten thousand people, but the current golden screen could only encircle area the size of a soccer field.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings and saw a few people standing around him in a scattered fashion. These people still had their eyes shut, but their mouths were subconsciously mumbling.

He did a count, and there were a total of ten people including him being enveloped in the golden screen.

From the looks of it, they had arrived in the teleportation waypoint in the first level the skinny elder had mentioned.

Shi Xiaobai took a closer look, but none of the other nine were people he knew. They were all strangers.

“Dong!”

At this moment, a deafening gong of a bell echoed throughout the sky!

The nine other rookies immediately opened their eyes.

As they tried to adjust their eyes, they surveyed their surroundings and looked at others, before speaking.

“This is...inside the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower?”

“We have arrived. Teleportation waypoint?”

“Sigh, I don’t know a single person.”

“Me too. I don’t know anyone.”

“After all, it’s a random selection of ten people out of a thousand. The chances of being with an acquaintance is just too low.”

“...”

A few began having simple exchanges.

At this moment, a youth with glasses came to the middle of the waypoint and loudly said, “Everyone, quiet down and hear me out.”

The rookies on the waypoint settled down.

The bespectacled youth pushed his rim and said, “Firstly, we are very lucky to be grouped with Tu Dahei!”

With this said, the rookies immediately looked around and concentrated their gazes on Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, “Your luck is indeed good to have the opportunity to witness This King’s charm.”

The bespectacled youth immediately gave an awkward smile as he turned to say to the rest, “If I’m not wrong, we are currently having a valuable preparation time. Once the golden screen disappears, the trial will begin officially. I think we should use this time to decide on...a cooperative relationship!”

The youth scanned the expressions of everyone and before anyone reacted, he immediately said, “Cooperation definitely has more advantages than nasty competition! The strength of ten people is definitely better than a single person fighting alone. Furthermore, the other 990 people on other waypoints are our true opponents. And the other people present here should be opponents

of our opponents, which means we are friends!”

The youth’s words made the rest lose themselves in thought for a while before they responded.

“Yes, this brother is right. We should become friends!”

“Yea, cooperation is indeed advantageous.”

“We need to talk over the details of cooperation.”

“Everyone, let’s work together!”

“ ... ”

The eyes of the bespectacled youth flashed a look of glee before he said to everyone, “To sum it up, I believe we should form a ten-person team. Furthermore, I suggest letting Brother Tu Dahei be our team leader!”

...

## Chapter 225: None Of You Are Qualified!

---

“To sum it up, I believe we should form a ten-person team. Furthermore, I suggest letting Brother Tu Dahei be our team leader!” the bespectacled youth said.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised.

The bespectacled youth was suggesting for him to be leader?

The other rookies turned to look at Shi Xiaobai and frowned for a moment. They finally understood the intent behind the bespectacled youth’s speech!

If Tu Dahei was the leader, it was equivalent to being in the same boat with Tu Dahei. If that was the case, Tu Dahei had the responsibility and obligation to protect them!

This was equivalent to clinging onto Tu Dahei’s leg!

“I think it’s reasonable!”

“Tu Dahei as leader, I’m fully in favor!”

“I’m willing to join the team led by Tu Dahei!”

“Leader Tu Dahei!”

“Leader!”

“ ... ”

The rookies began to echo the bespectacled youth’s suggestion, and even began addressing Tu Dahei as leader loudly.

The bespectacled youth was extremely pleased. If they formed a team and clung onto Tu Dahei, they could then use the newly forged relations to ensure that Tu Dahei would help them complete future missions more easily.

A thirteen-year-old teenager would usually have some silly concept of heroism, even more so for a youth with eighth-grader syndrome who addresses himself as king. Sucking up to him would naturally make him develop a silly sense of responsibility.

The bespectacled youth clapped his hands and said, “Everyone, quiet down. Let our leader speak a few words!”

This sort of false leadership speeches would easily lead a person into thinking that he was truly in charge.

Everyone looked at Shi Xiaobai and waited for him to speak.

“This King refuses!” Shi Xiaobai said with a cold look, “This King refuses to form a team with all of you, and refuses to be your

leader!”

The bespectacled youth’s eyebrows twitched before he immediately said with a laugh, “Brother Dahei, is there something you are not satisfied with?”

The other eight rookies frowned.

Shi Xiaobai looked at everyone and said solemnly, “Sorry, none of you are temporarily qualified to become This King’s subjects.”

With that said, Shi Xiaobai quietly walked towards a corner, leaving them staring at a cold back.

For Shi Xiaobai, the relationship between a leader and a team was equivalent to the relationship between a king and his subjects. As king, he had to be responsible for every subject! And the nine people on the waypoint were strangers to him. He would not establish a relationship of king and subjects with them easily!

This was because once this relationship was established, Shi Xiaobai would do many things that they would never expect. As king, he was even willing to sacrifice his life.

And as strangers, they were temporarily unqualified to receive this!

However, Shi Xiaobai’s qualifying words and mental activity was not something the other nine rookies knew of. Hence, what Shi



Xiaobai said sounded harsh to their ears.

“Heh heh, this fellow actually thinks of himself as a king?”

“Unqualified? What a joke. Letting you be the leader is just giving you face. Do you think we need it?”

“Fuck, does he truly think he’s that good? Your tricks have long been exposed by Fang Zhouzi. To think you think of yourself as some mighty figure.”

“Fuck it, I want to say that such a person is unqualified to be our teammate.”

“ ... ”

The rookies on the waypoint began a cynical derision as a result of their rage.

The eyes of the bespectacled youth flashed coldly as he said, “Everyone, since he belittles us, why should we think highly of him? With the nine of us forming a team, we’ll let him see that we are equally as strong even without him!”

The bespectacled youth decisively gave up on Shi Xiaobai. There was a need to form a cooperative team, and using the common hatred that permeated the atmosphere was perfect.

Indeed, the few rookies did not have a second thought due to their wrath. They immediately went to the bespectacled youth's side and soon, all nine were gathered together. There were a few who proposed for the bespectacled youth to be the leader. After pretending to refuse the role, the bespectacled youth eventually took up the leadership of the nine-person team. They began looking angrily and nefariously at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai did not speak, nor did he turn around. He only left them watching his silent back.

Suddenly, a resounding gong echoed throughout the sky!

Following that, a majestic and divine voice, from which it was impossible to distinguish its owner's gender, reverberated through every corner of this tiny world.

“Welcome everyone to the first level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental World—Nightmare Terror Island!”

Everyone pricked up their ears.

“The clearance requirement for Nightmare Terror Island—Killing a hundred Darkness Nightmare Terrors!”

“The Nightmare Terror Level Lord will arrive in five hours!”

“In a while, the final thirty seconds of protection will begin. When the countdown ends, the trial will officially begin!”

“I’m wishing you all the best of luck!”

The moment the sacred voice finished speaking, the golden screen that surrounded the waypoint faded away, turning transparent!

Once the gold barrier disappeared, from the waypoint where Shi Xiaobai was rang out numerous sounds of terror.

“Ah!”

“How could this be?”

“Holy shit...”

“...”

Outside the transparent barrier was a horrible sight. Dense clouds of smoke that were constituted of thousands of black Nightmare Terrors were floating around the waypoint. They surrounded the entire perimeter of the waypoint!

Pairs of deep blue eyes were watching the people on the waypoint. The scene appeared as though darkness had enveloped the entire world. It was as if there were countless stars adorning the sky, but most frightening of all, the blue stars contained ruthless killing intent.

The black Nightmare Terrors blotted out the sky and land, surrounding the entire waypoint. Once the transparent barrier disappeared, they would tear the rookies in the waypoint to shreds!

The bespectacled youth cursed angrily, “Fuck! Why are we so fucking unlucky! We have been sent to the only death waypoint!”

A rookie trembled while asking, “What...what is a death waypoint?”

Immediately, someone answered, “Among the hundred waypoints in the first level, there is one waypoint located in the demons’ nest. It’s known as the death waypoint. Trial-takers who are unlucky enough to be sent to the death waypoint have only two choices—dying or escaping!”

Several rookies immediately turned frantic!

“Ah? Then what should be done? We can only escape?”

“Fuck, why are we so unlucky?”

“Leader, quickly think of something. Leader!”

“Leader, speak!”

“Leader, quickly think of something!”

“...”

The eight rookies had looks of indignation.

The bespectacled youth’s expression was gloomy, but after a moment of silence, he motioned for everyone to gather together. He said in an extremely low voice, “Now the only method is to escape. Firstly, we shall use Tu Dahei as bait to attract a portion of the Nightmare Terrors and then open up a route to escape. If we can’t escape, try to use the exit command as soon as possible!”

The rookies immediately nodded as they looked coldly at Shi Xiaobai’s back.

At this moment, the sacred and solemn voice resounded again.

“Ten seconds of protection left. Ten, nine, eight...”

The nine rookies gathered into a circle, while Shi Xiaobai stood quietly at a corner of the waypoint.

“Three, two...one!”

The transparent barrier disappeared completely as the overwhelming number of Nightmare Terrors howled. The nine rookies turned pale in the face, and were unsure of their actions.

At this moment, a figure charged out from the waypoint!

The figure was as fast as lightning, and instantly, it was in the middle of the crowd of Nightmare Terrors!

Following that was a series of screams, the screams of Nightmare Terrors!

The nine rookies watched in despair as the Nightmare Terrors gradually gathered around. They immediately looked in shock when they heard the series of screams!

Yet, they saw Tu Dahei dancing amidst the Nightmare Terrors!

Yes, in their eyes, it was a dance!

However, it was a cold but gorgeous dance of death!

They saw Shi Xiaobai holding a short knife constructed out of white Psionic Power, and as though he was slashing through straw, he danced among the Nightmare Terrors with devilish footwork. A series of screams resounded as one Nightmare Terror after another dissipated like a vanishing mist!

A single strike took a few, or at least one Nightmare Terror!

In a second, there could be several or even more than a dozen of Nightmare Terrors being ruthlessly killed!

Therefore, in just slightly more than ten seconds, a whole cloud of black Nightmare Terrors had been cleared!

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai stopped and turned around. He looked at the nine rookies who were about to be flooded by the black Nightmare Terrors and waved.

The nine rookies were taken aback but they only heard Shi Xiaobai say a single word.

“Goodbye!”

Even before his voice disappeared, Shi Xiaobai’s body transformed into a beam of light and shot out into the sky, vanishing from their vision.

At the same time, a sacred voice filled with authority resounded through the entire world, entering the ears of every rookie!

“The first person to clear Nightmare Terror Island has appeared. Participant, Shi Xiaobai, has been sent to the second level!”

...

# Chapter 226: An Earthquake Amongst Rookies

---

“The first person to clear Nightmare Terror Island has appeared. Participant, Shi Xiaobai, has been sent to the second level!”

This resounding voice filled with authority entered every rookie's ears. Nearly everyone was dumbfounded.

How long has it been?

He killed a hundred Nightmare Terrors in less than twenty seconds!?

Furthermore, the person who finished first was Shi Xiaobai, who did not enter the official forecasts!

At that moment, many rookies recalled of the recent rumor. Immediately, all sorts of heated discussions broke out around Nightmare Terror Island.

“Holy shit, in just over ten seconds? I just fucking killed three and Shi Xiaobai has already killed a hundred? I'm kowtowing to Shi Xiaobai!”

“I'm kowtowing too! I have to apologize for my words from before. The person, Shi Xiaobai, truly exists. Furthermore, he is as awesome as Tu Dahei said!”



“Tu Dahei said that Shi Xiaobai can defeat Speechless, and defeat Pulp Farmer in three seconds. I was originally just heh heh-ing over it, but now I feel like there’s a smack smack smack on my face. In less than twenty seconds, even Speechless can’t do that!”

“Shi Xiaobai is another hidden super rookie. No, he’s a monster more terrifying than a super rookie.”

“Man, no wonder Tu Dahei touted Shi Xiaobai so highly. From this moment forth, Shi Xiaobai is the name noone would dare to ignore!”

“If Tu Dahei is said to be a mudslide amongst the rookies, then Shi Xiaobai is probably an earthquake. To complete the first level in less than twenty seconds. Did he break the record!?”

“...”

...

At the waypoint Shi Xiaobai was at, the nine rookies were speechless and filled with horror!

This Tu Dahei was actually Shi Xiaobai!

Fuck, how shameless was he!?

But then...

He was so powerful!

The nine rookies simultaneously thought of what Shi Xiaobai had said. They were not qualified to become his subjects, and from the looks of it, they truly lacked the qualifications!

He had jumped into the middle of thousands of Nightmare Terrors and brandished his psionic knife in a dance of death. A single step of his made ten perish!

The scene was too astounding. Having witnessed this scene with their own eyes, they could not even use words to describe their feelings.

The bespectacled youth had a wry smile. “We are indeed not qualified to cling on to such a large pillar.”

The other rookies fell silent and nodded their heads silently.

At this moment, the black swarm of Nightmare Terrors had surrounded them completely and with a fearsome cry, they were about to pounce at them!

“Open Sesame!”

A rookie finally could not resist it and shouted out the exit

command. Immediately following that, the others also shouted out the two words.

The nine rookies were immediately shrouded in a golden light and disappeared, leaving behind Nightmare Terrors that filled the mountain as angry roars reverberated throughout the lands.

...

### Waypoint #3

Mu Yuesheng penetrated a Darkness Nightmare Terror with an electro-cannon beam. There were not many Darkness Nightmare Terrors in this region, so by the time she heard the news of Shi Xiaobai's clearance, she had only just killed her seventh Darkness Nightmare Terror.

The pair of brown eyes immediately flashed a look of alarm before it quickly calmed down.

As heated discussions from the other unfamiliar rookies around her entered her ears, Mu Yuesheng rubbed the coin in her pocket as fighting spirit burned in her eyes.

“Shi Xiaobai, I will not be left in your dust! Not a chance!”

...

## Waypoint #7

Mozzie was very lucky to be in the same group as Sunless, so she naturally clung onto her with a smile.

Probably because of Shi Xiaobai, Sunless did not reject her.

The two-female team ignored the other rookies and walked in another direction. Sunless was in no hurry to clear the level. When they encountered isolated Darkness Nightmare Terrors, she would leave them to Mozzie, and when they met a group of Nightmare Terrors, she would kill a portion of them before leaving the rest for Mozzie.

Mozzie was completely moved as she finally could not resist saying, “Sister Sunless, I can’t hide this from you anymore. Actually...actually, that participant, Shi Xiaobai, is Tu Dahei!”

Sunless’ footsteps paused and after a long moment of silence, she whispered, “We...should be faster?”

Mozzie’s eyes lit up and without any sense of shame for clinging onto her, she waved her hand and said, “Alright, we have to chase after Lord Shi Xiaobai!”

...

## Waypoint #19

Kevin had used ‘Black Bear Dominating Palm’ to smack the Darkness Nightmare Terrors in front of him. Just after ten seconds, he had already killed five!

“The Level Lord will arrive in five hours. This Genius’ speed is just nice and appears to be above average. Perhaps, This Genius might even be in the leading group!”

Kevin began thinking beautifully. Soon after, when the news of Shi Xiaobai clearing the level was announced, Kevin was immediately left astounded.

Immediately, there were exclamation sounds all around him.

“That’s too formidable! This clearing speed is heaven defying!”

“Shi Xiaobai...isn’t that the hidden rookie Tu Dahei touted?”

“No wonder Tu Dahei touted him. He’s indeed terrifying!”

“It was said that Shi Xiaobai is stronger than Speechless, and can beat Pulp Farmer in three seconds. I’m beginning to believe it.”

“Me too. This clearing speed must have broken the records. Speechless is still inferior to that!”

“ ... ”

Upon hearing the discussion beside him, Kevin secretly clenched his fists.

He recalled what Shi Xiaobai had just recently said—”This King will soon let them have no choice but to believe!”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had truly managed to use his actions to make the rookies believe that he was not spouting nonsense.

Who else but him could do this!?

...

Waypoint #25

Heartless had just pulled out his black sword when he heard the news of Shi Xiaobai clearing the level. He fell silent for a moment before using Heaven Shrouding Eclipse!

“Shi Xiaobai, what is your relationship with Tu Dahei?”

...

Waypoint #33

Pulp Farmer stabbed out with his spear, causing the Nightmare

Terror in front of him to explode into smithereens. As he slowly pulled his spear back, he heard the rookies not far from him whispering. A cold smile suffused across his lips.

“Defeat me in three seconds? Shi Xiaobai, regardless of who you are, we will fight it out sooner or later.”

...

...

## Waypoint #19

A plain-looking youth was strolling in the woods. He held a tree branch in his hand and nibbled a tree leaf in his mouth. The Darkness Nightmare Terrors around him were trembling in fear, afraid of even moving.

“This Emperor admits that he has been given a fright by you.”

...

...

## Waypoint #90

On the waypoint, an ugly youth dressed in a black robe held a

crimson sickle which was constantly dripping with fresh blood.

The eight corpses lying around the ugly youth had their heads separated from their bodies.

There was still a living person amidst the corpses, but he did not look too far from death. His spine had been broken, and his guts were flowing out from his upper body. His pale face was filled with terror and despair. He kept trying to shout something with his gaped mouth, but not a single sound came out.

From the looks of his mouth, it was the two words—Open Sesame.

However, regardless of how this pitiful person who had his spine broken and was nearing death struggled to shout, not a single sound of even one decibel was produced.

The sickle-wielding youth suddenly waved his hand, as the person's head flew up into the sky before rolling on the ground a few times like a soccer ball.

“Shi Xiaobai...”

The ugly youth's voice was hoarse and dry, as though he was an old man in his seventies. He took out a crumpled piece of paper from his pocket and took a few careful looks. “The list doesn't have this person, but..., there's this urge to kill him.”



“Then, he shall be killed!”

# Chapter 227: Tower Defense

---

Shanghai City, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Main Auditorium.

On a gigantic black stone monument erected on the auditorium's stage was a dense series of white text, constantly flowing.

There were hundreds of people sitting in the auditorium, the majority of which were middle-aged men and women. There were a few youths and elders, and a small number of members of the media holding cameras.

The auditorium was silent, with no one speaking. Everyone was staring intently at the stone monument on-stage.

Suddenly, the silence in the auditorium was broken. Hundreds of people cried out as though an explosion had occurred.

At that moment, a line of green text was highlighted on the stone monument!

“The first person who cleared the level is out? How is it so fast?”

“Thirteen seconds...that has broken the fastest clearing record of the first level!”

“Eh? Shi Xiaobai...why do I not have any impression of this

name?”

“It’s like I’ve heard of it before...”

“I remember! Isn’t Shi Xiaobai a dual S-class genius from Gaia who suddenly disappeared a while ago?”

“Gaia? Impossible! How can a second-tier organization like Gaia have such a talent?”

“No, it is indeed a rookie from Gaia. My database has a bit of information regarding him.”

“Ss... Is Gaia going to rise up?”

“...”

Yama Minamiya and Riko were sitting near the corner of the auditorium. They were extremely shocked, yet pleasantly surprised. From time to time, there would be people asking them if Shi Xiaobai was a Gaia rookie. There was even the media that came over to interview them regarding Shi Xiaobai. The two of them felt overwhelmingly flattered.

Shi Xiaobai’s sudden performance stunned nearly everyone who paid attention to the selection. Furthermore, with Shi Xiaobai’s earlier exposure being exceedingly low, he was an extremely mysterious person to everyone. This shroud of mystery made the shock delivered to them even more intense. Instantly, the

auditorium was filled with voices discussing Shi Xiaobai!

Maybe to the entire China, this was a trivial event that would not stir any waves, but to the parties concerned with the mass selection, the name ‘Shi Xiaobai’ had gone viral!

...

...

Shi Xiaobai did not know that his real name, ‘Shi Xiaobai’, had been remembered by numerous people or that they had begun to pay attention to his name. If he knew of it, he would have definitely said, “This King has yet to do anything serious, and you are already kowtowing?”

In fact, him being able to kill a hundred Darkness Nightmare Terrors in such a short period of time was that, firstly, he was lucky to be sent directly into the Darkness Nightmare Terrors’ nest. There were mountain loads of Darkness Nightmare Terrors for him to kill. Secondly, the Pig Slaughtering Knife he used appeared to be particularly effective against creatures of darkness.

Hence, this matter that had taken aback so many people was actually an extremely trivial task for Shi Xiaobai.

When Shi Xiaobai was transported to the second level, his vision went into a blur for a few moments. As his vision cleared, the scene in front of him had indeed changed.

Shi Xiaobai realized that he was standing on a raised platform that resembled a waypoint. Below the waypoint was dark purple ground. There were four three-meter-tall brown walls surrounding him, forming a square. This square was about the size of ten soccer fields, as though it was a small city. In the middle of each of the walls, there was a gigantic squarish hole. It looked like four gigantic entrances to the city with no gates.

In the small city, there were a few houses scattered around. In the center was a luxuriant tree that was not too tall. Its trunk was stout, and probably needed more than ten people to wrap themselves around it. There were hundreds of vines hanging downwards, making it look spectacular. Its lush leaves made it look as though it was bustling with life.

Shi Xiaobai was just about to carefully observe it when the sacred voice boomed in his mind.

“Welcome to the Nine Revolutions Transcendental World’s second level—Tower Defense.”

“There are a total of thirty small cities in ‘Tower Defense’. The trial-takers would be randomly assigned to one of the cities and assigned the mission of protecting the city!”

“The city you are currently in is City #1. Due to your arrival, the defense mission of City #1 has officially begun. In three minutes, you will face the first assault wave of demonic beasts.”

“You need to protect the Tree of Life from the demonic beast invasion. Killing the demonic beasts will earn you Tower Defense Points. When your Tower Defense Points reach 500 or beyond, it will be considered clearing the mission. You will then be able to choose at any time to head to the third level.”

“If the Tree of Life dies under the demonic beast invasion, the city will be considered compromised. You will then be randomly sent to another city. However, your Tower Defense Points will be reduced to zero!”

“With the arrival of a new wave of demonic beasts, the countdown for the next wave will immediately commence. Furthermore, each demonic beast horde will improve in strength. Be sure to cherish the first few waves and earn enough Tower Defense Points while the hordes are weaker.”

“There will be other trial-takers transferred to City #1 at a later time.”

“Gentle Reminder: Take advantage of the resources in the city, they will be helpful in defending the city!”

“The first wave of demonic beasts will arrive in three minutes. The countdown shall begin.”

“Wishing you best of luck!”

...

The sacred voice that was filled with authority faded away. Shi Xiaobai could not help but reveal a smile across his lips.

This trial was very interesting!

Shi Xiaobai scanned his surroundings of the waypoint and began speculating in his mind.

The large tree in the middle of the city was probably the Tree of Life. The four entrances to the city were probably where the demonic beast horde would enter from. In that case, it was best to have four people protect the four entrances.

If one person were to defend the city, it was inevitable that the demonic beasts would enter the city premises. If that happened, even if he could kill the demonic beasts, it would be very difficult to protect the Tree of Life. However, the first wave would come in three minutes. Shi Xiaobai estimated that he would have to defend the city alone for the first wave of attacks.

In that case, the speed at which he killed the demonic beasts, the number of demonic beasts in each horde, and the amount of life the Tree of Life had were extremely important. There was no way for Shi Xiaobai to know the latter two, so he could only rely on the former.

How could he accelerate the speed at which he killed the demonic beasts?

Shi Xiaobai fell into deep thought for a moment, when he suddenly recalled the “gentle reminder” the voice added at the end.

Take advantage of the resources in the city?

The deserted city had nothing other than the Tree of Life and a few crumbling low houses.

Shi Xiaobai jumped off from the waypoint and headed for the small house closest to him. There, he noticed that there was a dusty sign hanging on the door.

Shi Xiaobai wiped the dust away and the sign read—Points Treasury.

This name was somewhat weird.

Shi Xiaobai gently pushed the door open, revealing what was inside the house. There was nothing inside, but it was extremely clean and tidy. It was in stark contrast with its dilapidated external appearance.

However, the four walls were filled with dense text. A single glance at it would make anyone lightheaded.

Shi Xiaobai randomly looked for a line and focused at it. He saw



the line that read:

“Summon Hellfire: Summon a powerful Hellfire to help you defend the city. Requires 1000 Tower Defense Points!”

## Chapter 228: Kun-Stewing Wok

---

“Summon Hellfire: Summon a powerful Hellfire to help you defend the city. Requires 1000 Tower Defense Points!”

Summon Hellfire?

Shi Xiaobai was startled as he continued reading the next line.

“Summon Black Frost Dragon: Summons a powerful Black Frost Dragon to aid you in defending the city. Requires 3000 Tower Defense Points!”

Shi Xiaobai quickly accepted the possibility of summoning powerful creatures to help in the defense of the city. He could only sigh that such an advanced civilization’s assessment program indeed appeared unscientific. It had changed the real world into one that resembled a game world.

However, Shi Xiaobai was somewhat puzzled.

If 500 Tower Defense Points were enough to clear this trial, how powerful were the Hellfire and Black Frost Dragon that consumed a thousand or even three thousand points?

Furthermore, how crazy was it to get these two to defend against the demonic beast horde?

Shi Xiaobai turned his sights onto the other walls, and after hastily reading a few dozen lines, he discovered that the Points Treasury allowed him to exchange points for a myriad of items. There were summoned creatures, weapons, cultivation techniques, herbs, city construction materials, etc.

After looking for two minutes, he walked out of the Points Treasury. He did not have a single Tower Defense Point, so it was useless staring at the exchangeable items in the treasury.

If the resources were made good use of, it would indeed be very helpful at defending the city. However, most of the items in the Points Treasury exceeded 500 points. Furthermore, completing the second level only required 500 points. It sounded like a contradiction.

Shi Xiaobai rushed to another low house nearby and swept the dust from the sign. It read 'Warehouse'.

Shi Xiaobai immediately pushed the door open. The warehouse was similarly clean and tidy, but it was not empty. On the contrary, it was stocked with all sorts of things.

But on closer look, these items were extremely ordinary instruments such as scissors, shovels, chairs, tables, axes, fruit knives, etc.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat disappointed. Just as he was about to leave the place, he suddenly noticed something that caught his eye in the messy stacks of equipment.

Shi Xiaobai immediately stretched out his hand to move the equipment away. Finally, he pulled the object out.

It was a sword, a rusty bronze sword.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but smile. He was in need of a sword at the moment!

In fact, he had a golden holy sword hidden in his right hand, but according to what the Sword Spirit loli said, with the amount of Psionic Power he had, just waving the holy sword was enough to drain him of his Psionic Power.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai could only use his Psionic Power to construct a psionic sword. However, a psionic sword was not sufficient.

And now, he had suddenly found a bronze sword. Although the edge appeared somewhat blunt, it was still a real sword after all.

With the bronze sword in hand, Shi Xiaobai left the warehouse. Just as he wanted to take the remaining time to investigate the other houses, the sacred voice boomed in his mind once again.

“The first wave of the demonic beasts, [Forest Wolf], has arrived. Take note of your defense!”

“The second wave of demonic beasts will arrive in ten minutes.

The countdown begins!”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised and immediately used Crab Steps to rush to the southern gate which was closest to him. In a few seconds, he was standing outside the city gate. All he saw was a dilapidated scene. There was a large purple door that resembled a waterfall about a hundred meters from the city gate amidst ruins. Gray wolves slightly bigger than ordinary wolves walked out from the purple portal.

In just a few seconds, more than ten came out!

Shi Xiaobai immediately charged at the wolves with bronze sword in hand!

The wolf let out a chilling howl and suddenly pounced at Shi Xiaobai. Its speed was surprisingly fast. Its shimmering claws were obviously sharp. If they ripped through Shi Xiaobai’s flesh, consequences would be disastrous.

Shi Xiaobai was extremely calm as he dodged the Forest Wolf’s attack. With a slash, he sliced through the wolf’s belly. Blood gushed out as the wolf let out a cry before slamming to the ground.

A voice immediately resounded in Shi Xiaobai’s mind.

“Forest Wolf has been killed. Tower Defense Point +1!”

Shi Xiaobai immediately turned around to strike again as another

Forest Wolf that pounced at him crashed to the ground with a cry.

Shi Xiaobai realized that when he had killing intent in him, he could see the red lines on his targets. And as long as he struck at a red line, it was basically a fatal strike!

Shi Xiaobai obviously showed no mercy to these Forest Wolves. Hence, he could very clearly see the red lines on every Forest Wolf. These Forest Wolves were not very powerful, so they had numerous thick red lines on their bodies.

Shi Xiaobai brandished his sword around while the simple and unfancy Beginner Sword was not lacking in both strength and speed. Furthermore, by slashing at every red line, there was no need to describe how destructive his attacks were. Every slash caused a Forest Wolf to drop to the ground with a cry.

In a short while, the Forest Wolves that walked out of the purple portal were all killed by Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai had been counting in his heart. A total of fifty Forest Wolves came out of this purple portal. So he had obtained fifty Tower Defense Points.

After killing the Forest Wolves, Shi Xiaobai did not dare to loiter any longer. Immediately, he charged towards the city gate which he reached in a few seconds at his blazing speed. However, he noticed that Forest Wolves were flooding in from the other three city gates. There were even a few Forest Wolves who were in close proximity to the Tree of Life!

Shi Xiaobai frowned. He had misjudged his clearing speed and the speed at which the Forest Wolves proceeded forward.

Beginner Sword was a single-target attack after all. Even if he could kill one wolf with one strike, killing fifty Forest Wolves still took him some time.

Shi Xiaobai rushed to the Forest Wolves, which were munching on the tree vines, and killed them.

Shi Xiaobai was very fast, and his actions were simple and crude. Every strike was direct and could even be described as suave. A large swath of Forest Wolves on the left died with a whimper like the scattering of leaves by an autumn wind.

At this moment, a human-like scream resounded.

Shi Xiaobai jerked his head back and noticed a few Forest Wolves pouncing onto the Tree of Life's trunk. They were ripping the trunk, resulting in the leaves on the Tree of Life to shake violently.

The scream, that sounded like a girl, was being emitted by the Tree of Life!

Shi Xiaobai immediately rushed over in anger. Slash after slash, he killed all the Forest Wolves that had pounced onto the Tree of Life!

However, there were almost a hundred Forest Wolves that surrounded the tree that seemed to ignore Shi Xiaobai's massacre. They pounced at the Tree of Life as though they were death squads!

The Tree of Life screamed incessantly as its leaves shriveled up at a visible speed. Green leaves began to turn gray as they dropped down the branches from the shaking.

Shi Xiaobai frowned. He knew that his clearing speed was not fast enough. If this carried on, the Tree of Life would be dead before he finished clearing the Forest Wolves!

He needed an attack that allowed him to strike a group!

However, all he had was Turtle-speed Divine Punch, Beginner Sword, and Massage Technique of God, which were all single-target offensive techniques. What could he do?

No, that's not right!

He still had another move!

This move was something he had recently learned. He had yet to try out this offensive skill!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes burned with an intense flame as he gripped the bronze sword tightly with both hands. As he slightly gathered strength, he bellowed and slashed towards the sky!



“Kun-Stewing Wok!”

The bronze sword slashed upwards towards the sky as a raging sword beam slashed out from the bronze sword’s edge!

A moment later, a large sword aura in the form of a gigantic, transparent wok came crashing down from the sky. Dozens of Forest Wolves were engulfed when the transparent sword aura in the shape of a wok made contact!

“Woo! Woo! Woo! ...”

The dozens of Forest Wolves that were engulfed by the wok-shaped sword aura were instantly toasted red. Hot air emanated out from their bodies as the Forest Wolves let out whimpering cries as though they had been soaked in boiling water. Their bodies looked boiled as they crashed to the ground while still steaming.

This strike, Kun-Stewing Wok, was an Area of Effect (AoE) attack that Shi Xiaobai learned from the mantra in the ‘Kun Peng Sword Technique’ manual that Sunless had given him.

After killing more than half of the Forest Wolves in one strike, there were few Forest Wolves left. The pressure on Shi Xiaobai dropped drastically.

Shortly after, Shi Xiaobai finally killed all the Forest Wolves.

At this moment, there were wolf corpses all over the city, but soon, the Forest Wolves' corpses and the blood on the ground suddenly seeped into the ground. The city still looked as dilapidated as before, but it was restored to its original clean state. The bloody smell in the air was also dissipated by a sudden blow of a wind.

However, the luxuriant and vibrant Tree of Life had more than half its leaves withered. The green stems had also darkened.

From the looks of it, the Tree of Life's restorative ability was not very strong. If another few waves of stronger demonic beasts attacked, it was probably difficult for him to protect the Tree of Life alone. After all, the demonic beasts would charge straight for the Tree of Life without any reason!

Shi Xiaobai did not rest. Instead, he prepared to head to the other low houses to see if there were any resources he could use.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly sensed something. He turned around abruptly and saw a person sitting on the stone step at the top of the waypoint!

The person was a petite girl with silver-white hair. She had amber eyes and wore a pair of black thick-framed glasses. Her skin was fair and she had delicate facial features. She held a book in her hand. At this moment, she was engrossed in reading the book while sitting on the stone step!

## Chapter 229: This Mute Is A Chatterbox

---

The silver-haired girl with the thick-rimmed black glasses sat on a stone step above the waypoint. She wore a white school uniform and a black, short skirt. At this moment, her legs were stretched straight out above the stone step, revealing a portion of her smooth thighs and white as jade calves. She was wholesome and beautiful.

The girl was engrossed in reading a thick hardback book in her hands. Beside her was a cute pink backpack.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback. This girl was probably another rookie that had been randomly sent to City #1 like him, but he did not know when she had arrived.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment before walking towards the waypoint.

The girl was engrossed in her reading, so only when Shi Xiaobai was past the halfway mark from the stone step did she look up from her book. Her confused look made her rather lovely.

Shi Xiaobai was just about to say something when he saw the girl quickly take out a board from her backpack. She pulled out an oil-based pen from the board and began writing on it. Her actions looked like she was well-practiced in this.

Shi Xiaobai choked back the words he was about to say as he waited silently.

In a while, the girl had raised the board at Shi Xiaobai.

“Tu Dahei? No, Shi Xiaobai? You are Shi Xiaobai, right?”

The black handwriting was not at all neat and was highly cursive, but it looked somewhat cute. After the line of text, the girl had specially drawn a puzzled-looking emoji. However, her drawing skills were not something worth complimenting.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised as he did not deliberately conceal the fact. He nodded and said with a smile, “That’s right. This King is Shi Xiaobai. Girl, it looks like you have a pair of clever eyes that surpasses mortals!”

The silver-haired girl squinted her eyes with a smile, making her look lovely.

Shi Xiaobai took a look at the board, and said in wonderment, “You...can’t speak?”

The girl blinked with her amber eyes. With a pull of the eraser on the edge along the board to remove the marks on it, she wrote a single word.

“Yea.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. This was because he

remembered Yama Minamiya saying in the morning that mutes were banned from entering the training grounds. Then, what was up with the girl in glasses in front of him?

But before Shi Xiaobai asked another question, the girl had already finished writing another line of text.

“I have a question. How did you kill a hundred Darkness Nightmare Terrors in less than twenty seconds?”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised, but the girl only gave him a glance before she wiped away her words on the board and carried on writing.

“Were you randomly sent to the death waypoint?”

The girl did not wait for Shi Xiaobai’s response and continuously wrote, erased, wrote again and erased again. It was as though she was writing out every question she had in one breath.

“You have a light-elemental AoE offensive skill?”

“Is your real name Tu Dahei or Shi Xiaobai?”

“Are you really stronger than Speechless?”

“Can you really defeat Pulp Farmer in three seconds?”

“Why do you call yourself This King?”

“Are you an idiot with eighth-grader syndrome?”

“What is your favorite anime?”

“...”

The girl kept writing her questions, and only after a very long while did she stop her inquiries. On the board remained only four words.

“I am very curious!”

The girl raised her writing board in front as she widened her amber eyes. Her left hand nudged her glasses, giving off a very adorable look of naive curiosity.

Shi Xiaobai knitted his brows and hesitated for a moment. He asked solemnly, “Do you really want to know?”

The girl’s eyes immediately sparkled as she nodded heavily.

Shi Xiaobai grinned. The girl had sent him a barrage of questions, several of them had been asked without any scruples. If it were any ordinary person, they would have turned impatient or irritated, however, Shi Xiaobai wouldn’t. Instead, he felt a sense of pity for her.

A girl like a tender cardamom sprig who was such a chatterbox was unable to speak. Wasn't that somewhat pitiful?

“This King shall kindly satisfy your curiosity!”

Shi Xiaobai said in high spirits, “Why can This King kill a hundred Nightmare Terrors in less than twenty seconds? Very simple. That's because This King possesses the power of light, so it is trivial slaughtering creatures of darkness. The waypoint This King arrived at was indeed a death waypoint for the Nightmare Terrors. Light-elemental AoE offensive skill? Against such trash with a power level of five [1](#), This King can kill ten with a knife, leaving not a trace while traversing a thousand miles...”

Shi Xiaobai answered the girl's questions one after another, while the girl listened intently. From time to time, she would ask questions after Shi Xiaobai gave his answers.

As time passed, the girl's eyes became increasingly brighter. The speed and frequency at which she asked questions were also increasing. Shi Xiaobai answered patiently even if the questions seemed somewhat abrupt. Some of the questions even involved his personal privacy, but Shi Xiaobai never revealed a look of impatience. He continued answering in a serious manner, although some of his answers had hints of ‘exaggeration’ or ‘embellishment’. However, it did not stop the girl from relish listening to him.

The duo formed a tacit question and answer format until the

sacred and authoritative voice boomed in their minds.

“The second wave of the demonic beasts, [Nerubian Spiders] has arrived. Take note of your defense!”

“The third wave of demonic beasts would arrive in ten minutes. The countdown begins!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyebrows pricked up. As they chatted, they had forgotten this important matter. He immediately turned around and was about to charge down the waypoint.

A hand tugged at his sleeve.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head and saw the girl writing on the board. On it were the words: “I can settle one side. The other three sides shall be left to Brother Xiaobai, okay?”

The girl seemed to be fond of Shi Xiaobai, so she had already began to address the older Shi Xiaobai affectionately as ‘Brother Xiaobai’.

Shi Xiaobai immediately nodded and said, “Alright, the east gate is yours, but don’t force it!”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai quickly rushed to the western gate.

Shi Xiaobai could obviously defend four sides, but he could not



fully guarantee the safety of the Tree of Life. With the silver-haired girl offering to settle the attacks from one side, it was only natural for Shi Xiaobai to readily accept it.

Shi Xiaobai rushed to the western gate. There were dozens of black spiders the size of wolves that were already approaching the western gate.

Shi Xiaobai immediately slashed out from bottom to top with his bronze sword!

“Kun-Stewing Wok!”

A transparent sword aura in the shape of a wok slammed down from the sky. The air in an area five meters in radius immediately boiled over when the strike touched down. The Nerubian Spiders that were enveloped in it let out shrill screams, and soon the black arachnid bodies quickly evaporated or disintegrated.

However, a few Nerubian Spiders managed to escape the sword aura’s range. Many of the Nerubian Spiders were not struck, so the strike had only killed about a quarter of the Nerubian Spiders.

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. His Kun Peng Sword Technique was only at the Grasped Basics realm. In terms of range and speed at which it came crashing down, it was still far from satisfactory. Against the dispersed Nerubian Spiders, it was extremely ineffective.

Furthermore, 'Kun-Stewing Wok' consumed a great deal of Psionic Power. It could not be continuously used. Shi Xiaobai did not use Kun-Stewing Wok again, nor did he rush over to slash around with Beginner Sword. Instead, he turned around and ran back into the city.

When he rushed back to the Tree of Life, the western, southern and northern sides were beginning to be filled with Nerubian Spiders. The dense pack made them appear like black waves that slowly came flooding over.

# Chapter 230: Aggro Mobbing

---

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and began to feel slightly pressured. The first few waves of demonic beasts were not strong, but they came in large numbers. Furthermore, they attacked the Tree of Life without regard for their lives. They ignored his attacks.

Shi Xiaobai did not need a long time to destroy all the Nerubian Spiders, but he could not guarantee the safety of the Tree of Life during this period of time. And based on the situation from before, the Tree of Life started off extremely weak.

Shi Xiaobai remembered that he saw an exchange option, ‘Upgrade Tree of Life’ in the Points Treasury. Therefore, it was obvious that upgrading the Tree of Life was necessary if one wanted to defend for a prolonged period of time. The chewing of a few Forest Wolves had managed to turn half of the initial Tree of Life gray. And for future waves, probably a prod on the initial Tree of Life would doom it.

However, this was not the time for Shi Xiaobai to consider the problem. The problem he was facing was about protecting the Tree of Life. If the Nerubian Spiders reached a distance one meter of the Tree of Life, Shi Xiaobai could no longer use ‘Kun-Stewing Wok’ on them, or it might end up damaging the Tree of Life as well.

“They have to notice This King’s existence.”

A glimmer flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes. If he could attract the

aggro from the Nerubian Spiders and pulled them into a bunch, things would be a lot simpler.

However, how was he to attract aggro?

As Shi Xiaobai slashed out Kun-Stewing Wok, he calmly considered his options.

The Nerubian Spiders had already fanned out. They were less than ten meters away from the Tree of Life.

The more critical a moment was, the calmer Shi Xiaobai became.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up. He turned around and leaped onto one of the large tree branches and quickly arrived at the base of the tree's crown. Without any hesitation, he sliced a tree branch with green leaves off the Tree of Life. The Tree of Life's crown immediately trembled violently and let out a soft cry.

“Sorry.”

Shi Xiaobai patted the Tree of Life's trunk. With the luxuriant tree branch in hand, he leaped forward and jumped to the focal point of the fan-shaped formation the Nerubian Spiders were in.

The Nerubian Spiders let out fierce cries as they suddenly surrounded Shi Xiaobai's position. There were even a few Nerubian Spiders that could not help but charge at him!

“Indeed!” Shi Xiaobai grinned.

These Forest Wolves and Nerubian Spiders were attracted to the dense life force the Tree of Life had. The tree branch in his hand also contained the life force these demonic beasts coveted.

Shi Xiaobai slashed out a few sword strikes, killing the spiders that attacked him. He turned around and ran to the side, but he did not run far. Instead, he maintained a safe distance from the Nerubian Spiders.

The Nerubian Spiders were creatures of instinct, with no intelligence whatsoever. Indeed, they were attracted by the tree branch near to them and had completely forgotten the distant Tree of Life that contained even more life force. They all turned to chase after Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai began to circle around the Nerubian Spiders and from time to time, a spider would charge at him. As Shi Xiaobai ran, he would use Beginner Sword until he managed to cluster the Nerubian Spiders into a mob. Only then, would Shi Xiaobai slash out Wok-stewing Kun!

The wok-shaped sword aura smashed down, and with the Nerubian Spiders grouped in a large cluster, there was no way for them to escape. A large swath of Nerubian Spiders was burnt to crisp as they issued out shrill cries.

After striking once, he would rush into the middle of the

Nerubian Spider mob which had been emptied out. The Nerubian Spiders that had dispersed in fear would immediately scream and gather over once again mindlessly.

Shi Xiaobai used Crab Steps to rush out of the Nerubian Spider encirclement, and once again, maintained an aggro distance. The Nerubian Spiders apparently did not learn their lesson because their instincts were governed by their greed and desire.

Following that, Shi Xiaobai pulled the same tactic. Again and again, he attracted aggro and lumped the Nerubian Spiders into a clump before using Kun-Stewing Wok. The effects were outstanding every single time.

Not much later, only when the final Nerubian Spider died with a scream did Shi Xiaobai give a sigh of relief.

Thankfully, these Nerubian Spiders were mindless, allowing him to attract their aggro. If they had rushed at the Tree of Life mindlessly, Shi Xiaobai could not ensure the perfect safety of the Tree of Life. It was just too weak, as weak as an infant.

Every time he killed the Nerubian Spiders, the words, “Nerubian Spider has been killed, Tower Defense Points+1”, would boom in his mind. This made Shi Xiaobai wonder. He believed that with subsequent waves, the number of Tower Defense Points would increase with each demonic beast killed, but from the looks of it, it wasn’t the case?

Or could it be that the Tower Defense Points would only increase

after a few waves?

If that was the case, the rookies that arrived at ‘Tower Defense’ late would face more powerful demonic beasts, but the accumulation of points would not be any faster. The disadvantage was obvious. No wonder the sacred voice said “Please ensure that you cherish the first few waves of attacks when they are weaker to earn enough Tower Defense Points.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly curious about the number of Tower Defense Points he had accumulated, but he had no idea how to make the query.

However, as soon as Shi Xiaobai raised such a thought, the sacred voice boomed in his mind.

“You currently have 380 Tower Defense Points.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback. He never expected to have earned 380 points so quickly. In that case, it was very likely he could earn 500 points by the next wave. He was at a great advantage.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly recalled of the bespectacled silver-haired girl guarding the eastern gate. However, not a single Nerubian Spider entered from the east gate, so it was obvious that the girl was not in danger but it was unknown if she had cleaned up all the spiders.

Shi Xiaobai turned to walk towards the eastern gate. At the entrance, he finally saw the silver-haired girl. There was nothing outside the city gate. The Nerubian Spiders probably were dead and cleared up by the assessment program.

And at this moment, the girl was standing at the city gate with a book in hand. She was engrossed in her reading.

“You like reading that much?” Shi Xiaobai asked softly.

The silver-haired girl raised her head slightly and smiled with squinted eyes. She nodded her head heavily. Her affection for books was palpable.

Shi Xiaobai did not bother her any further as he turned around and walked into the city. There were a few houses in the city that he had yet to explore.

However, just as Shi Xiaobai entered the city, a golden beam of light fell from the sky, landing on the waypoint!

The golden light dispersed and on the waypoint appeared a youth dressed in a loose Daoist outfit. He was handsome with droopy eyelids. His hair was pulled up into a knot, and held a horse-tail whisk. He was a Daoist priest.

Clearly, the youth in a Daoist attire was the third rookie that had been randomly sent to City #1.



At the moment the youth arrived, a thundering voice resounded throughout the world!

“A tenth of all trial-takers have arrived in the second level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental World ‘Tower Defense’. This level’s Level Lord, [Demonic Beast Level Lord] will arrive in three hours. The countdown begins!”

The youth was apparently the last person in the leading team!

# Chapter 231: You Seem To Have Big Breasts

---

After the youth in a Daoist outfit landed on the waypoint, he surveyed his surroundings with his drooping eyelids. When he saw Shi Xiaobai, his eyelids raised up suddenly. And with a few brisk steps, he jumped off the waypoint.

The Daoist robe flared as he floated to the ground with an extremely cool and refined pose.

The youth reached out his right hand and with his index and middle fingers stretched out, he pointed at Shi Xiaobai and said, “Benefactor! This Penniless Priest notices that your glabella seems dark, that’s an ominous portent [1](#)!”

Shi Xiaobai gave the youth a deadpan glance and turned around to walk towards one of the low houses.

The Daoist youth was taken aback as he hurriedly chased over and said, “Benefactor, do you not believe?”

Shi Xiaobai sneered and said, “Foolish mortal, This King doesn’t believe in the Dao.”

The Daoist youth ran a few steps and blocked Shi Xiaobai’s path and said with a deep voice, “This Penniless Priest’s name is Liu Yu. People call me “Half-Dao Sage”, who is proficient at Dao inference. This Penniless Priest is able to prove that Benefactor has ominous signs!”

Shi Xiaobai stopped. Turning his head, he said, “This King gives you thirty seconds.”

“Alright!”

Liu Yu cut the nonsense and waved the whisk in his hand forcefully at Shi Xiaobai, causing a white cloud to billow.

“The primordial universe of the Heaven and Earth, Mystic Heart True Teachings, Great Dao Inference, show!”

Liu Yu roared as the white cloud suddenly became as bright as a mirror. It reflected Shi Xiaobai’s appearance, and in the cloud mirror, a black gas was lingering around Shi Xiaobai’s forehead.

The cloud mirror lasted less than a second before shattering and dispersing like a white mist.

Liu Yu breathed out and looked at Shi Xiaobai. He said, “Benefactor, did you see what was in the mirror?”

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment and said, “This King saw a vast heaven and earth, and This King was standing amongst the firmament like a god, with a magical robe on his body and a crown on his head. The left hand held an Optimus Staff, and the right hand held an Annihilation Axe. Behind This King were thousands of swords that filled the sky, and on the land, thousands of beings knelt in reverence!”

Liu Yu was dumbfounded and was momentarily at a loss for words.

“The thirty seconds are up.”

Saying that, Shi Xiaobai turned around and ignored Liu Yu. Moments later, he arrived at the other side of a low house.

Liu Yu drew a deep breath after a long moment. With a wave of his whisk, another white cloud was produced.

And when the white cloud formed a mirror again, it reflected Liu Yu’s appearance. In the reflection, there was also a black gas lingering around Liu Yu’s forehead. And similarly, the cloud mirror shattered less than a second later.

Liu Yu drooped his eyelids again before sighing and saying, “Tu Dahei, you sure are great at bullshitting. You made This Penniless Priest’s thoughts go haywire.”

...

Shi Xiaobai would never believe in any ‘ominous portent’. This was because back on Earth, his roommate, Yang Wei, had previously had a mantra he often recited—”Hey beauty, you seem to have big breasts (ominous portent), I can help you take your clothes off (escape it)!”

Whenever Yang Wei saw chicks, he would say that line before coming back dejectedly. This made Shi Xiaobai have a negative impression towards the words ‘ominous portent’.

If Liu Yu had used a different phrase, Shi Xiaobai might have listened to him attentively, but Liu Yu had used the words, ‘ominous portent’. Shi Xiaobai could not even be bothered to carry on listening and had just been perfunctory with him.

Shi Xiaobai quickly came in front of a low house. He reached out his hand to sweep the dust off the sign. On the sign was a row of gray text, “Unlocked at the tenth wave.”

Unlocked at the tenth wave?

Shi Xiaobai immediately stretched his hand out to push on the door, but felt as though he was pushing against a heavy mountain.

After pondering for a few moments, Shi Xiaobai gave up on using ‘Turtle-speed Divine Punch’ to forcibly break through the door. This highly-advanced program which bordered on fantasy probably did not leave behind a loophole of allowing a door that “unlocked at the tenth wave” to be broken through.

Shi Xiaobai turned around and went to the other houses. He realized that in the two houses he had yet to explore, the signs read “unlocked at the twentieth wave” and “unlocked at the thirtieth wave”.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat disappointed. From the looks of it, the only city resources he could use were the Points Treasury that required a great deal of points or the abandoned warehouse filled with junk. He could only stare at one helplessly while he had to search blindly among trash for the other.

Shi Xiaobai finally decided to head to the Points Treasury to see if there was anything good that could be used. However, when he entered the Points Treasury, he saw Liu Yu.

The two looked each other in the eye before turning away.

The two quietly read the walls of text. There were many enviable items that could be exchanged, but the number of points needed was too much.

After an unknown period of time, the sacred but authoritative voice boomed in their minds.

“The third wave of the demonic beasts, [Murloc Warrior] has arrived. Take note of your defense!”

“The fourth wave of demonic beasts would arrive in ten minutes. The countdown begins!”

Shi Xiaobai immediately reacted and looked at Liu Yu. He asked, “There’s someone defending the eastern gate. Can you defend the south?”

Liu Yu immediately nodded and said, “Alright!”

The two turned around and nearly rushed out the door at the same moment. Liu Yu was not slow either, and quickly, he was outside the southern gate.

Shi Xiaobai did not rush out the city gate, and instead cut off another tree branch and went to a point which formed a triangle with the northern and western gates.

If he only needed to guard two gates, it was a breeze for Shi Xiaobai.

Soon, saber-wielding murloc monsters dressed in blue armor began surging from the two gates.

Shi Xiaobai waved the branch in his hand, causing the blue murlocs to gather towards him.

Shi Xiaobai first slew the Murloc Warriors that were charging in front before he slowly clustered the Murloc Warriors that were to the back. He began attracting the aggro and quickly, the Murloc Warriors mobbed together.

“Kun-Stewing Wok!”

Shi Xiaobai slashed out the Kun-Stewing strike as large swaths of Murloc Warriors crashed to the ground screaming. Even the murlocs that were not directly enveloped by the wok-shaped sword

aura were inflicted damage by the boiling air around them. Immediately, they turned extremely weak.

The Kun-Stewing Wok was exceptionally effective against fish species!

Shi Xiaobai charged over and used Beginner Sword to slay the remaining Murloc Warriors, as though he was an autumn breeze that swept the leaves.

Just as there were fewer than twenty Murloc Warriors left, a hammer came crashing from the sky, as numerous Murloc Warriors were killed.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head in surprise and saw the adonis from Zeus holding a gigantic hammer beside him. The adonis had a cold expression, and at the moment Shi Xiaobai looked over, he slammed his hammer again. When he slammed down, it became a humongous white hammer.

“Boom!”

When the white hammer hit the ground, an explosion boomed. It caused the ground to quake as the handful of remaining Murloc Warriors were hammered to death by that strike!

The adonis glanced at Shi Xiaobai with a trace of hatred in his eyes.



Shi Xiaobai frowned. It was apparent that the adonis had been randomly transported here. The moment he arrived, he charged over to ‘clean up the mess’. However, it was not to help, but to... snatch points from Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai sighed as he silently inquired about the number of points he had accumulated.

He had...499 points!

...

# Chapter 232: The Tree Of Life Is About To Die

---

With 499 points, he was just one point short of 500. He just needed to kill one more Murloc Warrior to pass the second level, but it was ruined by the adonis!

Shi Xiaobai was rendered somewhat speechless.

This adonis fucking knew how to kill steal.

At this moment, the adonis turned around and said with a sneer, “Tu Dahei, you are not worthy of Miss Sunless. Be sensible and get the fuck away, so as to not incur ridicule on yourself.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his anger turned into amusement.

This idiot made him fall short of a point, yet he dared to say such nasty words?

It was impossible for Shi Xiaobai to tolerate the fellow. With a cold beam flashing in his eyes, he charged at the adonis.

The adonis was apparently prepared. He retreated frantically. Even with a metallic hammer in hand, his speed was still remarkably fast.

Unfortunately, he was facing against Shi Xiaobai. In front of Shi

Xiaobai, his speed was as slow as a turtle's crawl.

Shi Xiaobai appeared nearly instantly in front of the adonis.

The adonis' expression drastically changed as he hammered at Shi Xiaobai with an angry bellow.

The hammer swept through the air, leaving reverberations behind that shattered an astral figure.

It was Shi Xiaobai's phantom image!

Shi Xiaobai had already appeared behind the adonis, and slashed his sword out at a lightning speed.

The adonis felt a chill in his heart as he frantically rushed forward. He traversed about a dozen meters out before turning around in a flustered manner. However, Shi Xiaobai had not chased after him and was still standing at his original spot.

The adonis heaved a sigh of relief. That strike had nearly killed him. He never expected Tu Dahei to be fast enough to dodge his attack.

Suddenly, the adonis felt a coldness on his scalp. Reaching out his hand to touch his scalp, he immediately shouted, "My hair!"

Taking another look, there was a lock of blond hair on the

ground in front of Shi Xiaobai.

Wasn't that his hair?

At this moment, Liu Yu happened to enter the city. Taking a glance at the adonis, he burst out laughing as he said, "This Benefactor, where did you get this hairstyle cut? It's truly artistic!"

The adonis hurriedly took out a mirror he brought with him. His tears immediately flowed down when he saw his reflection.

From the reflection, the middle portion of his hair had been shaved clean. He looked like a balding middle-aged man.

Shi Xiaobai said coldly, "Remember not to infuriate This King. If not, the next thing that drops might not only be hair!"

After Shi Xiaobai said this, he headed for the Points Treasury. Although he was somewhat angry, he did not need to be too heavy-handed. However, for a wretch like the adonis, Shi Xiaobai would typically give them an impressionable lesson.

...

...

While staring helplessly in the Points Treasury for a long while, Shi Xiaobai managed to see quite a number of superb items. He

began to have all sorts of fantasies about them, but unfortunately, they were too ‘expensive’, with most of them not worth the points. As such, most of those fantasies were just that, fantasies.

During this period, the adonis came to look for Shi Xiaobai with a livid but trembling expression. He wanted to defend one city gate.

Shi Xiaobai was not oppressive enough to deprive the adonis of his right to do so. Furthermore, he was just one point short of clearing the level, so he did not mind the points.

Hence, they set the rules of one person defending per side, with no one interfering with the others.

Shi Xiaobai took some time to check on the bespectacled girl and found her sitting on a half-meter-tall stone by the city gate. As she waited for the beast horde to arrive, she read and looked truly relaxed.

Shi Xiaobai chatted with the talkative girl for a few moments before the sacred voice boomed again.

“The fourth wave of the demonic beasts, [Harpy Huntress], has arrived. Take note of your defense!”

“The fifth wave of demonic beasts will arrive in five minutes. The countdown shall begin.”

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily surprised. The previous waves

came in ten-minute-intervals, but why did it become five minutes at the fifth wave?

However, there was no time to consider this. Shi Xiaobai turned around and rushed to the city gate he was defending. When he rushed out the city gate, he saw birdlike humanoids obscuring the sky as they flew over.

Shi Xiaobai immediately slashed out ‘Kun-Stewing Wok’, killing a bunch of Harpy Huntresses.

Immediately, the sacred voice boomed in his mind.

“You have accumulated 500 Tower Defense Points. Do you want to head for the third level?”

Shi Xiaobai was taken aback before he decisively chose ‘no’. If he were to leave, the harpies would be able to freely invade the city. Wouldn’t he be harming the other three if the Tree of Life died as a result of his choice?

He did not mind harming the adonis or Liu Yu, but if he harmed the pitiful and adorable mute, it wouldn’t be nice.

Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai remembered that the assessment program had previously said that he was free to leave at any time once he had 500 points. Hence, he was in no hurry.

Shi Xiaobai decisively used the same method of attracting aggro

with the tree branch and clustered the harpies together.

The harpies shot out their arrows and immediately a rain of arrows came falling from the sky.

Shi Xiaobai constantly dodged and produced a few 'Kun-Stewing Wok' strikes before finally killing all of the harpies. During this time, he was always on the alert. Any time a harpy tried to fly past him into the city, Shi Xiaobai would hunt it down.

He did not even miss out on a single Harpy Huntress.

Shi Xiaobai turned around and headed towards the southern gate. He wanted to bid farewell to the silver-haired girl and head for the next level.

But at this moment, a sharp scream sounded from the city.

Following that, the authoritative voice boomed in his mind.

"The Tree of Life is under attack. It's in grave danger. Quickly rescue it!"

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly turned around and raced towards the city gate. When he entered the city, he saw more than a dozen Harpy Huntresses forming a line not far from the Tree of Life. They were constantly shooting arrows at it!

The Tree of Life thrashed around violently as it constantly screamed. Its green leaves turned gray and were constantly shaken off. The tree branches and tree trunk were rapidly withering.

Shi Xiaobai slashed our three consecutive ‘Kun-Stewing Wok’ strikes and instantly killed all the Harpy Huntresses. At this moment, the other three rookies who were defending the other three gates came into the city. The four were simultaneously rushing towards the Tree of Life. At this moment, the sides where Shi Xiaobai and the silver-haired girl was defending no longer had any Harpy Huntresses, while there were still Harpy Huntresses coming from Liu Yu and the adonis’ sides.

Shi Xiaobai used ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’ to repress the feeling of emptiness after using three consecutive ‘Kun-Stewing Wok’ strikes, and forcibly produced a few more.

Liu Yu flicked his whisk around as harpies exploded one after another. The adonis waved his hammer around and was able to barely crush a harpy to death, but it was obviously quite tough on him.

After a short while, the Harpy Huntresses were finally completely wiped out.

At this moment, the adonis said with a livid expression as he roared, “Which idiot let them through!?”

Upon hearing this, a cold glimmer flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes. He was just about to say something when the sacred voice boomed



once again.

“Warning! Warning! The Tree of Life will die in thirty seconds!”

The Tree of Life which was bustling with life was currently completely gray. Most of its leaves had shed, leaving behind dry and bare branches.

The Tree of Life was about to die!

## Chapter 233: True Glory

---

The sacred voice only prompted them that the Tree of Life would die after thirty seconds. However, it did not explain how the Tree of Life could be saved. It was as though it was just telling the quartet to make certain necessary preparations.

According to the rules, if the Tree of Life were to die, it was equivalent to the fall of the city. The trial-takers would then be transported to other cities, but their Tower Defense Points were to be reset to zero.

It could be said that the consequences were not as serious as one would imagine. It only meant restarting.

But surprisingly enough, it was the adonis who had the fewest points that was most agitated about it, despite him suffering the least losses. He angrily yelled, “Fuck! Who was the one who let the mobs in?”

The adonis suddenly pointed his finger at the silver-haired girl and roared, “Was it you? Yes, it must be you and Tu Dahei. Both your sides do not have any demonic beasts. How could it be possible to clear them so fast? It must be the two of you who let them through!”

However, the silver-haired girl completely ignored the adonis. She could not even be bothered to turn her head. Instead, she walked in front of Shi Xiaobai and wrote on her writing board.

“Brother Xiaobai, I did some calculations. You must have more than 500 points now. Quickly take the opportunity to enter the third level!”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent. It was unknown what was on his mind.

As the incessant sounds of the adonis’ angry curses entered his ears, while words written by the silver-haired girl out of concerned entered his sight. “Brother Xiaobai, the Tree of Life’s death only means a restart. I’ll be able to catch up with you soon. Hurry up and go. There isn’t much time. There won’t be any time left if you don’t go now!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly laughed. It was a relieved laugh, a laugh with resolute eyes.

He suddenly turned around and charged straight for the Points Treasury.

The other three were given a fright by Shi Xiaobai’s speed. But what followed next astonished them greatly.

They saw a golden beam of light shoot down from the sky as it completely enveloped the Tree of Life. The Tree of Life’s withered branches slowly became fuller as greenness started appearing above the gray tree trunk.

The golden light only lasted for a few seconds, but the Tree of Life had been pulled back from the brink of death.

The authoritative voice boomed once again.

“Lesser Healing has been used. The Tree of Life is out of its dying state.”

Questions filled the trio’s minds.

Why did a Lesser Healing suddenly appear?

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai slowly walked out the Points Treasury.

Liu Yu suddenly widened his eyes and shouted, “Tu Dahei, you exchanged your points for the Lesser Healing of the Tree of Life!?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded silently.

However, the adonis sneered and said, “So it can be healed. No wonder you did not look worried at all. Were those demonic beasts let in because of your carelessness?”

Before the adonis finished his sentence, Liu Yu’s expression changed drastically. He angrily growled, “Shut up!”

The adonis turned around in shock, while Liu Yu said with a sneer, “Do you know how many points Lesser Healing costs? A full 500 points! Do you understand? Tu Dahei could have used his 500

points to clear the level, but he used it to heal the Tree of Life. Who do you think he did this for?”

The adonis’ face immediately turned pale. However, he insisted softly, “He must be feeling guilty for letting in some of the harpies.”

Liu Yu stared at him and raised his hand to slap at the adonis.

But at this moment, a voice resounded throughout the skies!

“The first person to clear Tower Defense has appeared. Participant, Speechless Li, has been sent to the third level!”

Time seemed to come to a halt.

Liu Yu lowered his hand in a dejected manner. With his drooping eyelids, he sighed and said, “This glory should have belonged to Tu Dahei. Sigh.”

The adonis also lowered his head. He did not dare to say another word, but a trace of schadenfreude flashed in his eyes.

The silver-haired girl had already stood beside Shi Xiaobai. She gently held Shi Xiaobai’s hand, her eyes looking sorry for him.

But at this moment, Shi Xiaobai slowly stretched his mouth open and smiled.

This was a smile that came from the bottom of his heart. It was as resplendent as the warm and bright sunlight.

The trio looked in disbelief at Shi Xiaobai's smile. They even forgot to breathe for a moment.

“In fact, This King had been hesitating previously. This King nearly chose to head to the third level, but This King is thankful for not making that choice. This is because if This King were to disregard something he had once defended, despite being able to save it, to leave, or if he could clearly help his friend but decided to leave selfishly, then even This King will look down on himself!”

Shi Xiaobai reached out his hand and patted the silver-haired girl's hair and said gently, “So, This King is very happy to have made the correct choice. This King has defeated his selfish devils, as well as defeating the occasional me who gets disorientated. By making a choice that is not regrettable before actually regretting is This King's path of a King. That is This King's true glory!”

The silver-haired girl was astounded. She reached out her hand to hold onto the stroking hand which was not much bigger than her own. A look of amazement and worship flashed in her eyes.

Liu Yu gave a relieved smile, as a glimmer flashed in his eyes while he looked at Shi Xiaobai.

The adonis lowered his head deeply and felt extremely indignant, but he did not dare to reveal it.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was like a hot sun, warm and dazzling.

Suddenly, the authoritative voice boomed once again in their minds.

“The fifth wave of the demonic beasts, the first BOSS level, [Dark Rider] has arrived. Take note of your defense!”

“The sixth wave of demonic beast horde would arrive in thirty minutes. The countdown begins!”

The BOSS level had appeared only five minutes after the previous wave had started!

Furthermore, with the sixth wave’s countdown set to thirty minutes later, it meant that the BOSS level would be rather terrifying!

The quartet did not dare to stay put as they immediately rushed to their respective city gates.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath. Standing at the gate, he calmed his mood.

Out of the purple door charged a silver-armored demon whose body was purplish-brown in color. It held two spears in its hands,

while it rode on a black steed which was clothed in armor as well.

At a glance, the Dark Rider was obviously different from the trash mobs from before. There was a terrifying aura emanating from it as its killing intent surged. It was a suffocating presence.

However, Shi Xiaobai was elated. Throwing away the bronze sword in his hand, he immediately formed a psionic knife.

He saw three thin, short, red lines on the Dark Rider. It indicated that the Dark Rider had very few weaknesses.

However, as long as there was a red line, Shi Xiaobai was confident enough to slay anything!

Furthermore, this Dark Rider was emanating an aura of darkness from top to bottom. Shi Xiaobai had now realized that the reason why his Pig Slaughtering Knife was able to deal such terrifying power in the virtual world but failed against the golden-white holy dragon was because the Pig Slaughtering Knife was effective against darkness-elemental beings.

The richer one's darkness aura was, the more terrifying the damage of Pig Slaughtering Knife was. If it was struck on the fatal red line, the damage was beyond imagination.

Shi Xiaobai charged forward, while the Dark Rider also charged at him. The battle had begun.



## Chapter 234: Hero And Villain

---

The battle only lasted for ten seconds. By the time Shi Xiaobai turned around and picked up the bronze sword on the ground, the Dark Rider had already fallen to the ground.

“Dark Rider killed. Tower Defense Points+230.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes nearly popped out.

A BOSS alone was worth 230 points!?

Shi Xiaobai felt that bliss truly came too suddenly.

Shi Xiaobai was elated for a moment before he headed back for the city. Immediately, he saw a strange sight.

He saw the adonis running desperately for his life, while the Dark Rider was chasing him with raging killing intent. The distance between the two was gradually decreasing.

This Dark Rider was different from the other small fries. It did not take the initiative to attack the Tree of Life, but instead engaged in a hot pursuit with the participants!

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment before he figured it out. From the looks of it, it would be too difficult to defend the Tree of Life if the extremely powerful Dark Riders were to only attack the

Tree of Life. Therefore, such a situation was the reason for the thirty-minute gap.

The Dark Rider, which Shi Xiaobai could easily destroy, was too difficult for most Psionic Mortal Realm trial-takers.

The adonis did not even have the ability to counter-attack. He had been running for his life from the beginning.

When the adonis caught a glimpse of Shi Xiaobai, he immediately felt as though he had seen help. He immediately shouted out, “Tu Dahei! Save me! This Dark Rider is locked onto me!”

“You can do it!” Shi Xiaobai said as he nodded at the adonis, without any intention of helping him.

“Fuck! Tu Dahei, how can you stand there idly without helping?”

The adonis looked at the Dark Rider which was closing in on him as his face turned hideous.

“You sanctimonious hypocrite! What you said previously sounded good, but because of a little grudge, you ignore me and wish for me to die early! A disgusting bastard like yourself is not worthy of Sunless!”

The adonis cursed furiously, as though he was going hysterical.

Shi Xiaobai looked calm and appeared as though he was about to laugh.

“Why? Why can you be this ruthless?”

The adonis barely avoided a stab from the Dark Rider. He said with gritted teeth, “Tu Dahei, I’m begging you. Save me. This is an extremely easy task for you, right? We only had a tiny vendetta between us. How can you bear to see me being pursued to my death?”

Shi Xiaobai said without any expression, “Death? You just need to say those two words and you will rescue yourself.”

The adonis’s face changed drastically as he suddenly laughed hysterically, “Alright, Tu Dahei, you are ruthless enough! You are a bastard that’s worse than beasts!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly sighed and said with a deep voice, “Do you think that This King doesn’t know who was the one who let the dozen Harpy Huntresses in? Foolish mortal. The spot where the Harpy Huntresses stopped at points to the city gate you defended.”

Upon hearing this, the adonis’s face turned ghastly pale. A long-ranged demonic beast like the Harpy Huntress would likely head in a straight line after entering the city. Naturally, they would come to a stop, and from their location, one could judge where they came from!

He had played the role of the questioner from the very beginning because he was afraid the other three would suspect him. However, he never expected Tu Dahei to be the first to see through him.

The adonis instantly judged that Tu Dahei would not do anything to save him, and as the Dark Rider was already at hand, the only choice he had was shout 'Open Sesame' to escape the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.

But!

He could not accept it!

A hint of madness flashed in the adonis's eyes. He turned to rush towards the eastern gate. At this moment, he needed a lure to transfer his aggro. Tu Dahei's speed was too great, so the silver-haired girl was the best candidate!

A look of hysteric glimmer of hope flashed in the adonis' eyes. Regardless of anything, he had to escape this calamity that had befallen him.

Since the girl was another idiot who had been deceived by Tu Dahei, who else should he harm but her?

Just as he was about to arrive at the city gate, the adonis noticed the girl who was reading a book, with her back facing him. He was astonished at how fast the girl had managed to defeat the Dark

Rider that he had no means of resisting. At the same time, he also felt lucky.

As long as he pulled the girl to the ground, the Dark Rider would definitely transfer its aggro onto her!

The adonis laughed heartily in his heart. He was about to pass the city gate.

At this moment, a figure appeared to the side of the adonis, and sent him flying with a kick.

The adonis fell to the ground while feeling alarmed. He saw Shi Xiaobai standing by the city gate as he looked coldly at him.

As for the Dark Rider, it was also charging straight at him!

He had nowhere to run!

It was impossible for Tu Dahei to save him. The only way to save himself was to shout the two words!

However the extreme indignation and hatred in his heart resulted in those two words being stuck in his throat. He was unable to truly say it out.

Only until the Dark Rider's spear stabbed at him forcefully, did he hurriedly shout, "Open Sesame!"

However, what followed was a shrill scream. The spear had stabbed him in the right arm as the Dark Rider immediately jerked the spear upwards.

The adonis suddenly transformed into a golden beam of light and shot into the sky.

But a bloody arm was left behind.

When Shi Xiaobai saw this scene from afar, he sighed silently.

The adonis could have shouted 'Open Sesame' early on to escape the grounds, yet he was unable to overcome his negative emotions. It resulted in him being a moment too late. Although he did not lose his life, he had lost an arm.

It could be said that the evil brought on by himself is the hardest to bear!

At that moment, the Dark Rider turned its head and charged at Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai instantly conjured a psionic knife and charged forward!

Pig Slaughtering Knife!

Killing demons like slaughtering pigs!

The Dark Rider screamed and crashed to the ground with a splash.

Shi Xiaobai slowly dispersed his knife and turned his head. Up above the city gate, the bespectacled girl was staring confoundedly at him. Her glasses nearly fell off her nose bridge, but she had forgotten to push them up.

Shi Xiaobai smiled and said, “Sorry for disturbing your reading.”

...

At the instant Shi Xiaobai killed the Dark Rider, he earned another 230 points.

Immediately, the sacred voice boomed in his mind.

“You have accumulated 500 Tower Defense Points. Do you want to head for the third level?”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. After killing two BOSSES consecutively, he had earned 460 points. In addition to the remaining 59 points he had earlier, he now had a total of 519 points. He could already head to the third level.

Shi Xiaobai did not immediately reply this time. He walked to the silver-haired girl, but before he even said a thing, the silver-haired girl had raised her writing board.

“Brother Xiaobai, I have exceeded 500 points. You must have too, right?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded.

The silver-haired girl wrote again, “Then...shall we leave together?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head once again and said, “Alright, let us leave together.”

The silver-haired girl smiled with her eyes squinted.

Just as Shi Xiaobai wanted to say “yes” in his heart, time suddenly came to a halt!

“Make your choice, youth!”

The familiar fiery voice boomed once again.

The black text slowly materialized in front of Shi Xiaobai’s eyes!

[ Choice 1: Defend against thirty waves of demonic beasts, becoming the greatest hero of “Tower Defense” (B-level reward) ]



[ Choice 2: Personally destroy fifteen cities, becoming the greatest villain of “Tower Defense” (B-level reward) ]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “daily-style choice” where there is only one opportunity after choosing. Successfully completing the choice’s mission will yield a reward, and failure will lead to punishment of the same level.)

“Make your choice, youth!”

...

## Chapter 235: Shi Xiaobai Has Come

---

Due to the Absolute Choice, Shi Xiaobai couldn't help but stay behind despite already having earned 500 points. However, he did not reveal any abnormalities. He bade farewell to the silver-haired girl with a smile. Only after the silver-haired girl had transformed into a beam of golden light and left did Shi Xiaobai turn around to head back into the city.

When he returned to the city, he noticed that two trial-takers had arrived during this short period of time.

They were strangers to Shi Xiaobai, so he only gave them a knowing nod. He then informed Liu Yu and said that he was about to leave the city.

Liu Yu would obviously not force him to stay. However, his mood was somewhat heavy. The four of them who came to City #1 at the beginning were clearly one of the cream of the crop among the rookies. But even so, they nearly failed while defending the first five waves. Now Shi Xiaobai and the silver-haired girl were leaving, while the adonis had used the exit command to return to human civilization.

He was the only one left.

There might be other rookies who might come later, but what would happen after he left?

Those weaker rookies who came would immediately face

demonic beast hordes much stronger than the first five waves.

How could they defend against the hordes?

The cities would probably be destroyed one after another?

It was much better to destroy the other cities and gather all the rookies together in one main city. It would ensure that all the rookies that were later sent to this level would arrive in the same city. Later on, with the numbers advantage, most of them would be able to leave by defending the city.

By gathering the scattered sand earlier, the city walls that were formed would be stronger.

“Sigh, this penniless priest is too benevolent. The goal of the assessment program is to allow the survival of the fittest, and to let natural selection take place. What’s there to be fair?”

Liu Yu sighed and composing himself, he turned towards the two rookies who had just arrived. He pointed two fingers at one of them and said loudly, “Benefactor, this penniless priest notices that your glabella seems dark, that’s an ominous portent!”

...

...

Shi Xiaobai obviously did not head for the third level because of the reason Liu Yu thought of. Instead, he entered the Points Treasury. In the Points Treasury, he had once discovered many interesting and strange exchange items. It also gave him a lot of fascinating ideas.

Previously, it was just fantasy, but due to the sudden appearance of the Absolute Choice, the fulfillment of one of Shi Xiaobai's fascinating ideas became necessary.

On an extremely secluded spot on the left wall, Shi Xiaobai found a particular line of text he had previously seen.

“Teleport scroll: Randomly sends user to other cities. Will be treated as an intruder. Requires 20 Tower Defense Points.”

Shi Xiaobai grinned. After exchanging his Tower Defense Points for 24 Teleport scrolls, he exchanged for a Town Portal scroll that cost 30 points. Instantly, he spent 510 points.

Yes, Shi Xiaobai had chosen option two. To personally destroy fifteen cities!

It might sound unbelievable, but before the Absolute Choice appeared, Shi Xiaobai had such a thought when he saw the Teleport scroll in the Points Treasury.

Defending for thirty waves was quite an interesting option. However, the chances of success could be extremely slim. After all,

at a later stage, the people who could leave would have left. The remaining were the weaklings after “survival of the fittest”. Trying to rely on these people to successfully defend for thirty waves was fool’s talk.

Of course, this was not the reason why the usually fearless Shi Xiaobai did not make the choice.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai had been in a dilemma regarding the two choices. If the two rewards of the two choices had a difference in levels, Shi Xiaobai would have immediately chosen the one with a better reward, unfortunately, the two choices were B-level rewards.

Only when the countdown began did Shi Xiaobai choose the option of destroying fifteen cities.

Shi Xiaobai’s reason was in fact very simple, which is...

Not telling you at this time!

...

...

City #19

At this moment, there were only four rookies defending the city.

Heartless said to a short-haired teenager beside him, “I have enough points. I’ll be leaving first?”

The short-haired teenager was one of the Zeus rookies that had “ganked” Shi Xiaobai. He nodded at Heartless and said, “Alright. I’m just short of thirty points. I’ll be able to leave in the next wave. Boss, go ahead. I’ll soon catch up with you.”

Just as Heartless was about to leave after giving a terse acknowledge, two rookies standing beside them suddenly said in a hurry,

“If all of you are gone, what are we to do?”

“With only the two of us left, how are we to defend against the wave after the next?”

The short-haired teenager said in a deadpan manner, “There will be other rookies sent here in a while.”

One of them, a bespectacled rookie, said with a frown, “It’s unknown when they will arrive. Furthermore, those who come later are definitely very weak. There’s no way to defend the city with them.”

Another slightly overweight rookie hurriedly said, “We are now around 200 points. Just stay behind to defend another one or two waves, and then both of us will be able to leave. If the two of you

were to leave, we would have to restart again if the Tree of Life gets destroyed.”

The short-haired teenager immediately sneered and said, “So what? What has that got to do with us?”

The slightly overweight teenager stiffened his face as he said, “We have at least defended two waves and can be considered to have gone through thick and thin. All you need to do is stay behind for another ten minutes. We will definitely repay you in the future!”

At this moment, Heartless suddenly said, “If the two of us were to stay behind to help you accumulate enough points, what would happen to the rookies after the four of us leave together? According to your theory, should the two of you stay behind to help the rookies that come later to gather enough points?”

The slightly overweight rookie’s face turned aghast, but he did not know how to reply.

The bespectacled rookie muttered, “That...is different...”

The short-haired teenager sneered and said, “Different? What a joke. You think too specially of yourselves. To us, all of you are strangers. No one owes anyone else.”

The slightly overweight rookie flashed a look of anger with his eyes as he angrily said, “Without the two of us, the both of you

might not have been able to defend up to this point. Shouldn't you feel a bit of gratefulness?"

The short-haired teenager gave a disdainful laugh as he said, "What a joke. If not for the two of you sharing points with us, Boss Heartless and I would have long left."

The slightly overweight and bespectacled rookies were outraged. They were at a loss for words. Even though they wanted to throw invectives and attack them, they knew that they were no match.

Heartless sighed and ignored the duo. He walked to the side of the short-haired youth and whispered into his ear, "Be careful. After I leave, all of you might not be able to defend the city. Leave the moment you accumulate 500 points. You can't take care of others in such a trial."

The short-haired teenager nodded and said matter-of-factly, "Of course!"

Heartless did not speak a word further. He suddenly transformed into a golden beam of light that shot into the sky.

The short-haired youth glanced at the two rookies, as he was prepared to leave the moment he had enough points.

The two rookies looked at the short-haired teenager with angry stares that had a trace of bitterness as well.



At this moment, a golden beam of light fell from the sky as a black-haired youth appeared on the waypoint.

At the same time, an authoritative voice resounded in the three people's heads.

“An intruder has been randomly sent to City #19. Make sure to take note of your defense!”

# Chapter 236: Two Peng Grills

---

Intruder?

The trio in City #19 were stunned. They focused their eyes on the black-haired youth.

“Tu Dahei!?” The trio exclaimed in unison.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to face the trio. He did not expect to see someone familiar. He walked down the waypoint with a deadpan expression.

The short-haired youth immediately shouted, “Tu Dahei, what’s the matter about being an intruder?”

Shi Xiaobai waved the bronze sword in his hand and said, “Intruder? This King prefers you to call This King the Destroyer. This King is here to destroy this city.”

The trio had their expressions changed drastically as they immediately charged in front of the Tree of Life. The short-haired teenager bellowed angrily, “What do you plan on doing?”

Shi Xiaobai did not answer him. Instead, he said, “Are you ready? Then This King shall be attacking.”

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked towards the trio.

“You’re courting death!”

The trio was alarmed and incensed, as well as somewhat confused. After looking each other in the eyes, they charged at Shi Xiaobai.

Although they did not know why Shi Xiaobai came to destroy their city, they had to stop him at all costs!

The short-haired youth pulled out a large saber, the slightly overweight rookie raised a stone axe, while the bespectacled teenager raised a spear.

The trio simultaneously frantically attacked Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai instantly accelerated and burst forward with an astonishing speed. A blurry figure appeared in the trio’s eyes which dazzled them. They could only attack based on their own sensations.

Without any surprise, their attacks missed, missed, and missed again!

Shi Xiaobai was as fast as lightning as he flashed past them one after another. In less than a few seconds, he had already broken their line of defense.

The trio turned around in horror and saw Shi Xiaobai raise his bronze sword!

“No!”

The trio yelled.

In their eyes, the back figure with the raised sword was as cold and cruel as a devil!

Shi Xiaobai slashed out when he was three meters away from the Tree of Life!

It was not one strike, but two!

Shi Xiaobai slashed out a diagonal right slash quickly before slashing another diagonal left slash. With the two slashes, they formed an ‘X’-shaped red sword beam that shot towards the Tree of Life!

The moment the red-sword crossbeam slammed into the Tree of Life’s trunk, a blackish-red pillar of flames burst towards the sky. The Tree of Life was consumed by the flaming pillar and in a few seconds, all the tree leaves were burnt to a crisp. The tree branches and trunk were completely blackened!

Shi Xiaobai slowly lowered his bronze sword. This sword technique was known as “Two Peng Grills”, and was similarly deduced from the Kun Peng mantra from which he figured out

“Kun-Stewing Wok” from. This strike was highly effective against vegetation like the Tree of Life that was extremely weak to fire!

The three rookies looked at the Tree of Life that had been burnt to a crisp by the flaming pillar that reached into the skies. Their eyes glazed over as the authoritative voice boomed in their minds.

“The Tree of Life has died. City #19 has been destroyed. You will be randomly sent to other cities after three seconds, and your Tower Defense Points will be reset to zero!”

There were only three seconds left!

During the last three seconds, the short-haired teenager chose to charge angrily at Shi Xiaobai. He wanted to seek revenge!

The other two rookies rushed to the Points Treasury in panic. They wanted to exchange all the points they had accumulated before it was reset!

However, they were too late!

The short-haired teenager missed again as he growled furiously, “Tu Dahei, this will not be the end of it!”

Heavens, he was just short of thirty points to clear the level!

The short-haired teenager was enveloped in a golden beam of

light as he was sent to another city with great indignation.

The other two rookies were transported away before they even reached the Points Treasury.

However, the hatred in their hearts was not as bad as the short-haired youth.

This was because compared to them losing about 200 points, the short-haired youth was clearly worse off. They did not feel less fortunate when they saw someone more unfortunate than them.

Shi Xiaobai stood there in silence. It was unknown what he was thinking when suddenly the authoritative voice resounded in his mind.

“Congratulations for destroying City #19. You have stolen 860 Tower Defense Points. You have accumulated more than 500 Tower Defense Points. Do you want to head for the third level?”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but widen his eyes.

He could even steal Tower Defense Points by destroying the cities of others!?

There was such a good thing?

Shi Xiaobai felt as though he had discovered a brand new world.

This matter seemed like a computer bug, but on careful thought, other than as a result of the Absolute Choice, who would do such a wretched thing like destroying the cities of others?

Ignoring the fact that the “Teleport scroll” was located in an extremely secluded corner, even if a person had discovered the existence of the “Teleport scroll” and had equally fascinating thoughts just like Shi Xiaobai, it was unlikely that the person would generate such a thought of “seeking trouble whenever possible” when all the person needed was a simple requirement of 500 points to clear the level.

There was nearly no one who would partake in the destruction of other cities.

It had to be said that this was quite an unexpected surprise.

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes brightened up as he surveyed his surroundings. He noticed that although City #19 had been declared destroyed, the low houses did not seem to undergo even the slightest change. Shi Xiaobai immediately headed for the Points Treasury.

However, Shi Xiaobai was informed that he could not use the Points Treasury of other cities when he tried to exchange his points.

Shi Xiaobai had guessed that was the case, so he was not too disappointed. He did not stay any longer and used another

Teleport scroll.

He had to stay motionless when using the Teleport scroll or the Town Portal scroll. The channeling time was ten seconds, and he could not be interrupted during the channeling.

In fact, this made the act of destroying a city very dangerous. After all, the city he was sent to was random. Furthermore, the moment he was transported, he would be declared an intruder. If he failed to destroy the other party's Tree of Life, he would be the one doomed.

Ten seconds later, Shi Xiaobai left City #19.

...

As he was enveloped by the golden beam of light, his consciousness went into a blur. A few moments later, it became clear as the authoritative voice boomed in his mind.

“You have been sent to City #22. As you have destroyed another city, you are now identified as ‘City Destroyer Villain’. Every defender in City #22 will be informed.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly astonished as a few surprised voices were heard.

“Tu Dahei?”



“Holy shit, City Destroyer Villain?”

“Lord Shi—...Tu Dahei!”

“...”

From the cacophony of astonished yelling, Shi Xiaobai heard a familiar voice. He turned his head immediately and saw a girl with orange hair running towards him from a short distance away. Who else was this but Mozzie?

On a closer look, there was an azure-dressed girl walking slowly behind Mozzie. She was Sunless.

There were four other rookies gathered underneath the waypoint as they looked warily at Shi Xiaobai.

Mozzie ran to Shi Xiaobai’s side and asked with a whisper, “Lord Tu Dahei, what’s the matter with City Destroyer Villain?”

At this moment, Sunless had come to the side. She looked calm, but there was a trace of curiosity in her eyes.

Shi Xiaobai did not deceive them and said, “This King just destroyed City #19.”

Shi Xiaobai did not artificially lower his voice. When the four

rookies heard this, their expressions changed drastically. They questioned him loudly, “So are you now here to destroy our city?”

# Chapter 237: A True Man Never Turns His Head To Watch An Explosion

---

“So you are now here to destroy our city?”

The four rookies raised their weapons.

Before Shi Xiaobai answered, Mozzie said, “So what if he destroys it. This Mosquito unconditionally supports Lord Tu Dahei!”

Sunless also nodded her head, indicating her indifference on this matter.

The four rookies stared at them with looks of disbelief as ten thousand horses with mud-stained hooves rushed across their minds.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the four rookies and said with a smile, “Don’t worry. This King is just here in passing.”

The four rookies were astonished.

What the heck did he mean by in passing?

Shi Xiaobai did not want to waste time. He obviously would not destroy the city Sunless and Mozzie was in. He whispered to the two of them, “Do your best. Head for the third level as soon as possible. This King has matters to attend to, so This King shall be

leaving first.”

Saying that, Shi Xiaobai used a Teleport scroll and a thin golden column of light descended upon him before it grew thicker at a visible rate until it completely enveloped Shi Xiaobai. This entire process took ten seconds which could be interrupted.

The four rookies wished for Shi Xiaobai to leave earlier, and with Sunless standing there, they did not have the guts to interrupt him.

“See you. Third level.”

Just as Shi Xiaobai was about to leave, Sunless suddenly said softly.

Shi Xiaobai was taken aback before saying with a nod, “Alright!”

...

“You have been sent to City #7. As you have destroyed another city, you are now identified as ‘City Destroyer Villain’. Every defender in City #7 will be informed.”

The moment Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes and looked down from above, he immediately noticed that City #7 had ten defenders. No, there were more than that. He had only seen ten at a glance. There were definitely more than ten in this city!

The so-called random teleportation was vicious. Wasn't the distribution amongst the cities a bit uneven?

Shi Xiaobai decided promptly. As the ten defenders stared in shock, Shi Xiaobai had already used Crab Steps to rush down the waypoint.

Alarmed voices immediately filled the city which Shi Xiaobai paid no attention to. At an extremely fast speed, he rushed towards the Tree of Life.

“Quick, stop him!”

“Don't let him near the Tree of Life!”

“Kill him!”

“...”

About five rookies came from outside the city or inside the houses. More than ten rookies roared anxiously as they charged at Shi Xiaobai with weapons in hands.

Those long-range attack users who used guns or bows and arrows began to crazily fire at him.

Shi Xiaobai dodged with all he had in a bid to rush towards the

Tree of Life as though he was crazy. After passing one rookie after another, in order to break through their defenses, Shi Xiaobai had chosen to forcefully take a few hits from them.

But thanks to ‘This Turtle Is Hardest’ and ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’, these attacks that did not harm vital parts of his body became body-tempering fodder for Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai began using Crab Steps’ passing off the spurious as genuine and mirages as he ingeniously darted past the attacking rookies. Just as he was about to approach the Tree of Life, there were already five rookies standing in a line in front of the Tree of Life, as though they were a solid wall.

Shi Xiaobai raised his bronze sword as he charged forward.

The five rookies bellowed as they immediately conjured a gigantic psionic barrier.

No, it was not a psionic barrier, but a psionic domain!

When Shi Xiaobai’s strike hit the psionic domain, it felt as though he had struck hard steel. The only result was a tiny crack.

The other ten rookies that Shi Xiaobai had left behind were rushing over like ferocious wolves!

The five rookies did not rush forward in anger. Instead, they calmly combined their powers to continuously produce the psionic

domain to protect the Tree of Life. This perfect choice plunged Shi Xiaobai into an extremely dangerous situation.

In front of him was a difficult to crack psionic domain, and behind him were ten rookies with burning killing intent!

Shi Xiaobai could only escape!

However, Shi Xiaobai did not escape straight away. Instead, he circled halfway around the psionic domain, and came behind the five rookies.

“Idiot. A psionic domain can defend in all directions. Do you think it will be any different by attacking from behind?”

One of the rookies that was putting up the psionic domain sneered.

“Quick finish him!”

The ten pursuing rookies did not dare to procrastinate. They charged towards Shi Xiaobai in a bid to surround him.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly came to a halt and took a deep breath. Raising his right hand, a golden beam of light suddenly shot into the sky.

The golden beam of light was different from the teleportation's.

This golden beam of light was thinner and more exquisite. Its golden color was purer, and it was more resplendent.

A golden sword suddenly appeared in Shi Xiaobai's right hand.

“Two Peng Grills!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly slashed out twice as a golden fiery crossbeam flew forward like from a cannon. With that, the golden sword in Shi Xiaobai's hand suddenly shattered and was reduced to points of light that scattered to the ground!

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt dizzy. Pulling the golden holy sword for just a second had nearly drained all his psionic power. Shi Xiaobai immediately used ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’ and retreated!

The golden fiery crossbeam struck the psionic domain as the five rookies had their expressions drastically changed. Spewing a mouthful of blood, they were sent flying forward as the domain shattered, allowing free passage for the golden crossbeam to strike the Tree of Life.

“Boom!”

A tumultuous explosion sounded as half of the ten pursuing rookies were sent flying in dread by the aftershocks of the explosion.

Shi Xiaobai continued running forward and never turned back.



“A true man never turns his head to watch an explosion.”

City #7, destroyed!

...

...

The story that followed was a nightmare the ‘City Destroyer Villain’ left for the rookies.

Shi Xiaobai was constantly sent to other cities, and he was increasingly adept at destroying the Tree of Life. He also had various means of doing so.

There were not many fortuitous cities like City #7 which had many rookies gathered. However, with the passage of time, the number of rookies in each city was gradually increasing.

Therefore, despite Shi Xiaobai being more in line with the title of ‘City Destroyer Villain’, the process of destroying a city gradually became more difficult. But thankfully, for some reason, Shi Xiaobai never encountered any rookie from a city he had previously destroyed in any of the cities he was sent to.

It was unknown where all the rookies whose cities were destroyed by him had gone to.

This gave an advantage to Shi Xiaobai. Many's the time, he would rush down the waypoint the moment he arrived and head straight for the Tree of Life. The rookies would spend one or two seconds to realize what 'City Destroyer Villain' meant, but would eventually be a second or two too slow. They would then watch helplessly as Shi Xiaobai used a 'Two Peng Grills' strike to reduce the Tree of Life to black ash.

When Shi Xiaobai was sent to the city Kevin was in, Shi Xiaobai had chosen to give up on destroying the city. However, Kevin clearly could not stop the other rookies. Shi Xiaobai could only rush to a safe zone before using 'Teleport scroll'. At this moment, Kevin had stepped forward to help Shi Xiaobai hold back the other rookies, greatly increasing Shi Xiaobai's opinion of Kevin.

Shi Xiaobai did not meet Mu Yuesheng and guessed that she had already headed for the third level.

In fact, the reason why Shi Xiaobai's destruction of the cities went so smoothly was mostly because the truly powerful rookies had already headed for the third level. There were very few powerful rookies like Sunless, who had stayed behind in the second level for Mozzie.

And the remaining were just trash. There was no way they could compete with Shi Xiaobai's Crab Steps that was closing in on the Crest of Perfection realm. Although they could deal some damage to Shi Xiaobai with their advantage in numbers, they still failed to prevent Shi Xiaobai from destroying the Tree of Life in one strike.

The Two Peng Grills strike was too effective against the initial Tree of Life that had extremely low defense. It was truly an instant kill.

“Congratulations for destroying City #16. You have stolen 1320 Tower Defense Points. You have accumulated more than 500 Tower Defense Points. Do you want to head for the third level?”

City #16 was the fifteenth city Shi Xiaobai destroyed!

Shi Xiaobai could not help but slump down to the ground. He closed his eyes wearily. His body was filled with cuts and bruises.

Soon, the fiery voice resounded in his mind.

“Absolute Choice completed. Congratulations on obtaining a ‘B-level reward’, [Master Conquest Ball]: Using the Master Conquest Ball guarantees the conquest of any non-highly intelligent biological being that would be stored in the Conquest Ball’s space, becoming a private pet!”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned as a golden ball the size of a baseball dropped out of thin air into his palm.

Guarantees the conquest of any non-highly intelligent biological being?

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes brightened slightly. Although he did not know what the exact definition of non-highly intelligent biological being

was, the word ‘conquest’ greatly satisfied Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai kept the tiny golden ball into his pocket and rested for a few minutes.

“Town Portal scroll!”

Shi Xiaobai bathed in the golden light. He currently had...13505 points. He was like a nouveau riche, so he had to return to his city to spend lavishly!

Ten seconds quickly passed. After a moment of haziness, Shi Xiaobai had returned to City #1!

However, at the moment he landed on City #1’s waypoint, he heard a noisy din before he even opened his eyes.

Shi Xiaobai frowned as he slowly opened his eyes.

He was immediately dumbfounded.

He saw the city filled with people. There were more than a hundred people, or even hundreds of people. There were quite a number of familiar faces amongst them.

Weren’t they the rookies that had been transported away after he destroyed their cities!?

Shi Xiaobai was instantly enlightened. It was no wonder he never met rookies that had been transported away a second time during his seventeen teleportations. After their cities were destroyed, not only were their Tower Defense Points stolen from them, they had been forcefully sent to his City #1.

“Tu! Da! Hei!”

The densely-packed crowd of rookies looked at the ‘City Destroyer Villain’ that made them gnash their teeth in bitter hatred as they gathered around him. Immediately, the waypoint was swarmed!

...

## Chapter 238: Letting Everyone Clear

---

Nearly three hundred rookies crowded the waypoint, making it packed like sardines. With Shi Xiaobai standing on the waypoint, unless he had wings to fly, there was nowhere for him to hide.

Furious voices boomed.

“Tu Dahei, you actually dare to appear in front of us!?”

“This time, I want to see how you can escape from me!”

“Kill him! At least prevent him from using the exit command!”

“Although I just came from Nightmare Terror Island, Tu Dahei you have gone too far. You are not to be tolerated!”

“Him being a City Destroyer Villain is enough reason for people to eliminate him!”

“...”

The rookies slowly approached him with fervent killing intent, as though they were clouds of doom that were crushing down on a city. However, they did not act rashly or mindlessly rush forward. This was because they knew that Tu Dahei could use the exit command to escape in an instant. Rushing forward would only force Tu Dahei to escape.

They needed an outlet to vent their anger. Simply eliminating Tu Dahei was clearly not enough.

The rookies closed in on him as they slowly climbed the steps. They were like fierce wolves that were approaching their prey. They wanted to see fear, upset, and regret in Tu Dahei and him pleading them for mercy.

However, what disappointed them was that there was not the fear they wanted to see on Tu Dahei's face. Instead, he looked unbelievably excited.

Yes, the expression was one of true excitement. Tu Dahei's expression was excitement while being surrounded by an angry mob?

Are you kidding me!?

Finally, someone could not tolerate any further and got onto the waypoint from the side.

Immediately, it felt like an explosive was detonated as one rookie after another began climbing up the waypoint from the sides. The crowd on the steps to the waypoint was also jostling forward.

Just as the incensed rookies were about to pounce on Shi Xiaobai, a voice that wasn't very loud was suddenly heard by everyone.

“Everyone, This King has a way to allow all of you to clear the level!”

With this said, time seemed to come to a halt. The rookies halted and looked in disbelief at the center of the waypoint.

Shi Xiaobai stood in the middle of the crowd, as though he was surrounded by a pack of ferocious wolves. He was just about a meter away from the closet rookie. The rookie had even raised his saber.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not reveal a glimmer of panic. Instead, he was full of excitement while his eyes burned with a glimmer. He looked at everyone and said loudly, “This King can allow every one of you here to clear the second level and head to the third level!”

The rookies were startled when they heard this, but immediately they voiced their doubts.

“What a joke. Do you think we will believe you?”

“Everyone, don’t believe his nonsense. This jerk is just speaking carelessly without concern for others!”

“Who would believe a City Destroyer Villain’s words?”

“Let everyone clear the level? Can you create a worse lie than this?”



“ ... ”

Shi Xiaobai calmly looked at the restless rookies and said loudly, “This King had long accumulated 500 points and could have headed for the third level at any time. Why do you think This King stayed behind in the second level? Why do you think This King would go to such lengths to destroy your cities? Why do you think This King is still standing here wasting his time talking to you instead of departing by transforming into a golden beam of light, making all of you look on helplessly?”

Shi Xiaobai’s words made the rookies involuntarily stop. They were truly wondering “why” Shi Xiaobai did not use the exit command the moment they rushed forward. And from what Shi Xiaobai said, he already had more than 500 points. Then, why didn’t he immediately escape to the third level?

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, “That’s because This King will be leading all of you to clear the level!”

The short-haired teenager that had been just shy of thirty points immediately shouted belligerently, “Shut up, if not for you, I’d have already cleared the level!”

Subsequently, there were a few furious voices that came from the crowd.

“Fuck, I was short of 50 points!”

“I was fucking short of 30!”

“Tu Dahei can you be any more shameless? Without you, I would have long cleared the level!”

“ ... ”

The rookies stirred up again. A cold glimmer flashed in the eyes of the rookie that was about a meter away from Shi Xiaobai. He was waiting for the opportunity when Shi Xiaobai turned inattentive.

Shi Xiaobai looked the rookie dead in the eye, and without minding him, turned his head and sneered at the crowd. He said, “There will indeed be a number of you that were just short of a few points to clear the level, but most of you here only had about a hundred points. There is even a number of you here who just came from Nightmare Terror Island. You are completely different from the few who were just short of a few points. Those who came to the second level late, what sort of situation would you have faced? You would face a situation of the early batches of people leaving, but the demonic beast hordes will become stronger, making the situation more difficult for you. In the situation of no one being willing to spend their points to upgrade the Tree of Life, sooner or later... No, soon, your cities would fall!”

Shi Xiaobai’s words were like a hammer, beating down on the hearts of all the rookies. Just as Shi Xiaobai said, there was only a small number of people among the three hundred rookies who

were part of the first batch of rookies that were about to leave. A majority of them were from the second batch who were still far from the 500 points or even third batch that had just arrived.

And the last few words Shi Xiaobai said were something the second and third batch of rookies had already figured out. They were already complaining of the unfairness of the assessment program, so they did not retort when Shi Xiaobai said “Soon, your cities would fall.”

In fact, the number of people in City #1 increasing so dramatically was not purely because of Shi Xiaobai. Some of them had failed to defend their cities, so a number of the three hundred people had been sent to City #1 after their city was overrun.

Furthermore, they had to admit that defending a city with three hundred people was much simpler. It could be said that although Shi Xiaobai had destroyed fifteen cities, it made City #1 more powerful than ever.

But!

“This is the reason for destroying our cities? So as to gather us together and defend together?”

“Fuck, do you treat us as fools? It was indeed very easy to defend a city with three hundred people, but what about the fucking points? Every wave of demonic beasts is limited. How long would it take to amass 500 points with three hundred people splitting the points?”

“Don’t forget that the Level Lord will descend in time to come. When that happens, even if we have five hundred people, we might still not be able to defend the city. Do you think we have the time to waste with you?”

“Idiot. Although the other cities might slowly fall, but before falling, there would still be a batch of people who would be able to accumulate enough points to leave. And what you have done is push everyone into a pit of doom!”

“ ... ”

The rookies were outraged as they looked at Shi Xiaobai as though they were looking at a retard. At the same time, they were rendered speechless. They found it fucked up that their cities had been destroyed due to such a retard’s foolish thinking.

Shi Xiaobai looked at everyone with a look as though he was looking at a group of retards. In a state of speechlessness, he said, “When did This King say that you were gathered together to defend?”

## Chapter 239: City Attack!

---

“When did This King say that you were gathered together to defend?”

Everyone was stunned when they heard Shi Xiaobai say this.

If not to defend, what else could it be?

Shi Xiaobai said, “This King going to great trouble to destroy your cities is of course to speed up the destruction of your cities, allowing the remaining rookies to gather together faster. Hence, when This King arrived in City #1, This King is very happy that all of you are gathered here! That’s because the more people gathered here, the more confident This King is in leading you to the third level. The method is clearly not to defend for thirty waves, fifty waves or more, but...”

Shi Xiaobai paused slightly. Everyone involuntarily held their breaths. This was the moment the answer was revealed. It was also the reason why they had let Shi Xiaobai say so much. They were waiting for this moment. If Shi Xiaobai’s answer did not satisfy them, they would vent all their rage at him!

Shi Xiaobai said the two words softly, “City attack!”

Everyone was taken aback, unable to understand what the two words, ‘City attack’ meant.

Did it mean attacking other cities and destroying all of the other cities?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes suddenly burst out with a dazzling brilliance as he took a step forward. An inconspicuous but forceful stance made the rookies in front of him involuntarily take a step back. Shi Xiaobai waved his hand and announced his true move loudly.

“This King wants to lead you to launch a counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

This was the fascinating idea Shi Xiaobai had. It was the most important reason he had had in his eventual choosing of the second choice—[Personally destroying fifteen cities]!

The rookies frowned and asked in wonderment.

“What's the Demon City? The assessment program did not mention it at all!”

“Counteroffensive on the Demon City? What a joke, where's the Demon City?”

“Do you think you can fool us by making up a Demon City?”

“...”

The rookies questioned angrily, but they did not attack him.

They were waiting for Shi Xiaobai's final 'excuse'.

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and sighed. He said with a tone of disappointment, "Your foolishness makes This King wonder if his choice was correct or not. Maybe This King should have left alone from the outset."

Everyone's faces turned aghast, as they took a big angry step forward.

Shi Xiaobai calmly faced them and said softly, "On the left wall of the Points Treasury, the fifty-eighth line, ninety-ninth column. Holy Radiance: A holy sword condensed out of the most sacred light. Effective against killing the Demon City's Demonic Tree. Requires 10,000 Tower Defense Points."

With this said, everyone drew a gasp and came to a stop. The rookies at the outer perimeter immediately rushed towards the Points Treasury.

Moments later, the rookies that went into the Points Treasury shouted loudly, "What Tu Dahei said is true, ad verbatim!"

Everybody looked in disbelief at Shi Xiaobai. There were people who had seen this line, but there were just too many things listed on the walls. Furthermore, they had hastily glanced through it. They did not pay much attention to the words "Demon City's Demonic Tree", much less make any connections.

Shi Xiaobai smiled and said, “I believe all of you aren’t stupid enough not to guess what the Demon City’s Demonic Tree is. Just as you have guessed, the Demon City’s Demonic Tree is the same kind of existence as our city’s Tree of Life. As long as we destroy the Demonic Tree, we will destroy the Demon City. And where is the Demon City? Very simple. Wherever the demonic beasts appear from is the entrance to the Demon City!”

Everyone immediately thought of the waterfall-like purple door. The door looked rather terrifying, so no one attempted to see if they could enter the door. However, since the demonic beasts came out of the four doors, it meant that the four doors were very likely the entrances to the Demon City!

But there were still many problems plaguing this matter.

The short-haired teenager sneered and said, “All of this is just your subjective speculation. How do you know that the Demon City’s Demonic Tree does not refer to a particular vegetation in the city of calamity fiends? And even if everything is as you have speculated, with the four portals the entrances to the Demon City, and we are able to luckily destroy the Demonic Tree through the combined efforts of three hundred of us, what do we gain from destroying the Demon City? Don’t forget. The clearance condition is accumulating 500 points. Who knows if destroying the Demon City would result in stopping the demonic beast waves from appearing? The completion process is fraught with difficulties, and we might end up harming ourselves. That is the good idea you have? This is the reason for destroying our cities? You truly deserve death!”



The short-haired teenager constantly shoved himself forward amid the crowd. When the rookies thought over the words he had just said, something dawned on them as they looked furiously at Shi Xiaobai. At this moment, they were unusually outraged. They had nearly been fooled by him!

“That’s a very good question.”

However, Shi Xiaobai smiled and said, “Then, please read this sentence in your mind—What is obtained by destroying the Demon City?”

The crowd was stunned but could not help but read the “what is obtained by destroying the Demon City” sentence Shi Xiaobai told them. Following that, they were all stunned as though they had seen a ghost.

At this moment there were more than ten people that had managed to squeeze onto the waypoint. There were even a few of them who were just two or three meters away from Shi Xiaobai. However, Shi Xiaobai appeared as fearless as ever, as though he was in an ethereal state. He looked at the astonished crowd and said softly, “You should have heard the same response—Destroying the Demon City would send everyone in the corresponding city to the third level.”

At this moment, a glimmer of hope sparked in the eyes of nearly every rookie.

Yes, when they questioned “what is obtained by destroying the

Demon City” in their minds, the sacred but authoritative voice had given the same answer Shi Xiaobai gave them.

This answer was enough to confirm every speculation Shi Xiaobai had made. The two words, “corresponding city”, indicated that every city was being attacked by an exclusive Demon City. And if this exclusive Demon City was destroyed, the city would no longer receive any more attacks from the demonic beasts. Hence, all the trial-takers in the city would be considered as having cleared the level!

Everyone looked at Shi Xiaobai with complex emotions. This youth had at once personally destroyed the hopes of a number of them, but now, he was giving everyone of them hope of clearing the level.

They were astounded. There were key phrases that the assessment program recognized, such as how they could question the points they had accumulated in their minds and the assessment program would automatically give them an answer. Clearly, ‘destroying the Demon City’ was one of the key phrases, but who would have thought of that?

Who would have figured out so much just from seeing the words ‘Demon City’s Demonic Tree’ amidst the dense wall of words? Furthermore, even questioned in their minds what ‘destroying the Demon City’ would give them?

This hidden clearing method was not something any ordinary person would have thought of. And from this, it could be clearly seen that Tu Dahei had done so with a plan in mind. It was

something that could be relied on!

The short-haired teenager's face experienced an upheaval of emotions. He felt the eyes of the rookies around him soften. Many of the rookies present were from the second or third batches. Their hatred for Tu Dahei was not as intense as for the first batch of rookies.

At this moment, Tu Dahei had given all of them hope of clearing the level, and on careful thought, those rookies from the second batch who were in a worrying situation, or those from the third batch who were those to be eliminated should not hate Tu Dahei for what he did. Instead, what they should feel was gratitude!

However, the short-haired teenager was one of the first batch of rookies who had been short of a few points. His hatred did not decrease but actually increased. This was because as one of the first batch rookies, he had become one of the sacrificial objects in Tu Dahei's plan. Even if they were the minority, they were still the elites. How could they tolerate being sacrificed for the trash that was the majority?

The short-haired teenager's eyes flashed coldly as he considered for a moment. His eyes brightened and he said loudly, "Even if what Tu Dahei said is true, it cannot hide the fact that he is a City Destroyer Villain. We do not need Tu Dahei in our counterattack against the Demon City! He needs to pay the price for his mistakes!"

# Chapter 240: The Youth Would Eventually Become A King

---

Yes, although it was unknown if the three hundred of them had the ability to launch a counteroffensive on the Demon City, it did not matter with or without Tu Dahei. They could first cull Tu Dahei before attacking the Demon City!

With this thought in mind, the short-haired teenager shouted once again, “Tu Dahei must pay the price for his mistakes!”

About thirty rookies from the first batch immediately proclaimed in unison.

“Tu Dahei is not to be forgiven!”

“We can launch a counteroffensive on the Demon City without Tu Dahei!”

“Tu Dahei must pay the price!”

“Him being a City Destroyer is enough reason for people to eliminate him!”

“...”

The thirty-odd rookies shouted, but they gradually realized a harsh reality. The other two hundred-odd rookies did not echo

them. They seemed to be pondering, hesitant about their next action.

The two hundred-odd rookies had wavered. Their hatred for Tu Dahei was not that strong from the very beginning. Furthermore, Tu Dahei had given them hope of clearing the level despite the grim backdrop they were facing. Tu Dahei's plans had kept in mind the second and third batches, to begin with. At that moment, they nearly felt a sense of gratitude, so how could they feel hatred?

Shi Xiaobai took in everyone's expressions as the corners of his lips gradually formed a smile. He said, "Very good. Your actions have not disappointed This King again. If all of you have continued denouncing This King, This King would have directly chosen to head for the third level. This King shall very responsibly tell all of you that without This King, the chances of you succeeding in taking down the Demon City would drop by more than half!"

The rookies were immediately startled when they heard this.

Where did Tu Dahei get the confidence from to say that their chances of success would drop by more than half without him? Wasn't that implying that he alone could match the three hundred of them?

The short-haired teenager immediately scoffed angrily, "What an arrogant person. How can you speak so arrogantly? I think you don't even think anything about the three hundred of us. You just want to use us to achieve your own goals!"

The short-haired teenager immediately grasped the opportunity to sow dissent.

The rookies did not show discontented looks the short-haired teenager wanted. This was because they were afraid that Tu Dahei would proceed to the third level without a word due to the discontent. And from the various indications, Tu Dahei appeared extremely reliable.

Shi Xiaobai was very pleased with the rookies' attitude. Looking at the short-haired teenager, he said, "This King currently has 13,000 points."

With that said, many people stared at him with widened eyes. Soon, people guessed where Shi Xiaobai had obtained the 13,000 points from, and immediately felt mixed emotions.

Shi Xiaobai said, "Getting those 13,000 points was not in This King's plans, so it can be said to be a pleasant surprise. However, with these 13,000 points, the chances of success when we launch our counteroffensive on the Demon City have increased tremendously. This is because This King can use 10,000 points to exchange for the Holy Radiance that can kill the Demon City's Demonic Tree!"

The hope in the rookies' eyes immediately increased in intensity.

The short-haired teenager said in indignation, "Even if you have the Holy Radiance, you can't be better than three hundred of us. Furthermore, those 13,000 points were forcibly snatched from our

hands!”

Shi Xiaobai glanced lightly at the short-haired teenager and sneered, “Think carefully, how are all of you currently addressing This King?”

Everyone was immediately stunned.

How were they addressing Tu Dahei?

Of course it was....City Destroyer Villain!

City Destroyer Villain?

City Destroyer Villain!

City Destroyer...

Everyone gasped.

Shi Xiaobai said loudly, “Have you recalled? In terms of means to destroy a city, who can compare to This King?”

At that moment, the rookies who had their cities destroyed recalled the terrifying means Tu Dahei had used to destroy their cities. Tu Dahei’s dazzling footwork that resembled a devil’s. That astonishing speed that left them agape, as well as that fiery

crossbeam strike that instantly killed the Tree of Life!

All of this was still vivid in their memories.

Who else was more insane than Tu Dahei when it came to being a City Destroyer Villain?

If the person who destroyed their city was labeled a City Destroyer Villain, was the person who destroyed the demonic beasts' Demon City a City Destroyer Villain?

No, he should be addressed as—City Destroyer Hero!

So it turned out that villain who had made every effort to destroy the cities at the cost of covering his body with injuries was not to become a villain. It was the complete opposite. Tu Dahei wanted to be...a hero!

A hero who helps and saves the weak!

Shi Xiaobai finally could not repress the excitement in his heart. His face was beaming, as his eyes glowed with a burning shimmer!

Yes, Shi Xiaobai had generated many fascinating ideas because of the items that could be exchanged in the Points Treasury. "Destroying the Demon City" was one of them. However, as he had too many fascinating ideas, Shi Xiaobai had to finally abandon the thought of executing them one after the other.



However, the Absolute Choice made it a necessity and the motivation for him to execute the ‘Plan of destroying the Demon City’!

Choice 1: Defend against thirty waves, becoming a hero!

Choice 2: Destroying fifteen cities, becoming a villain!

With Shi Xiaobai’s character, if not for any necessary reason, he would obviously not choose to be a villain!

However, was defending for thirty waves truly a hero?

Who was he helping or who was he saving as a hero?

That would just be the false honors of a hero!

And by destroying fifteen cities, allowing sufficient number of rookies to gather together to finally destroy the Demon City to let everyone clear the level was what a true hero was!

Hence, Shi Xiaobai chose to use the actions of a villain to achieve his objective as a hero!

He ignored what others thought of him. He ignored their hatred and abusive invectives, because he wanted to become a hero from deep within his heart. He had also put in the necessary hard work

to become a hero.

He was very happy that he had not made the wrong choice. This was because nearly all the rookies were looking mildly at him. This proved that the rookies he had to help were worth helping!

“Since the option of destroying the Demon City exists, that implies that a counteroffensive can be launched on the Demon City. We already have about three hundred people. Furthermore, our numbers would only increase. We will win this battle!”

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked forward and the rookies that blocked his path quickly made way. The rookie that had raised his saber had lowered it quietly. The short-haired teenager wanted to shove his way up the waypoint as his expression drastically changed, but he was held back by the rookies beside him.

The crowd moved aside like the sea that had been split. They automatically made way they revealed a path for a single person to walk through.

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked along this path and loudly said, “However, we have to destroy the Demon City with sacrifices minimized or even to the point of emerging unscathed. We do not know what the Demon City is like, nor do we know how many demonic beasts there are in the Demon City, but we do not need to know that. This is because we are not slaughtering demonic beasts, nor destroy the city. All we need to do, is kill the Demonic Tree!”

“And there is only one person who can kill the Demonic Tree.

Only one person is enough, the person holding Holy Radiance!”

“And that person is This King!”

“And what all of you need to do is to try your best to attract the aggro of the demonic beasts that are defending the city so as to buy time for This King. The moment it turns dangerous, all of you are to immediately retreat. Regardless of the case, This King will kill the Demonic Tree!”

“There is naturally the risk of failure in all this, but it is because there exists the possibility of failure that allows us to succeed!”

“So, don’t be afraid of failure. Those who are willing to bet on this and are willing to trust This King to not let all of you down, please raise your fists!”

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked in front of the crowd and raised his clenched right fist. He loudly said, “If you still have a tinge of anger about the unfairness of the assessment program, if you do not wish to be relegated to the elimination team, if you still have the will and courage to resist, then please follow This King to launch a counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

“We will not only succeed in the challenge, we will use the most hot-blooded method to tell that cold assessment program that we are here. We have defeated your rules. We have defeated your unfairness. We will not defend for thirty waves. We will not struggle defending!”

“We are going to attack, we are going for a counteroffensive, we are switching from defense to offense!”

“We want to shout out loudly to all the rookies that have left before us that our experience and victory cannot be compared. You are not to belittle our pace of catching up to you!”

“Come on. Follow the footsteps of This King. This King will lead you to victory!”

At that moment, everyone’s eyes glazed over as they felt their hearts quiver. Their minds resounded with the words Shi Xiaobai had just said. Suddenly they felt fighting spirit surging in them as though their blood was boiling. Their souls seemed to be consumed in fire in an irremediable manner!

One person lifted his right fist!

Two people, three people, ten people, thirty people, a hundred people... Everyone slowly raised their right fists high. Even the short-haired teenager eventually raised his fist with a stiffened expression.

“Counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

Suddenly, someone shouted!

“Counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

“Counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

One voice after another sounded from the crowd.

Shi Xiaobai grinned and bellowed, “Counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

“Counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

Everyone followed him and shouted in unison. A deafening cacophony seemed to tear the sky apart.

At that moment, there was this black-haired youth who was just a youth. He had delicate facial features without any domineering air to him. He was also just an inexperienced rookie just like them.

However, as that youth stood there, they recalled all his actions and words, and felt as though a king had appeared. Immediately they felt respect for him, one that bordered on reverence.

The youth would eventually become a king!

At that moment, nearly everyone had such a thought flash in their minds!

## Chapter 241: Venturing Alone

---

The launching of a counteroffensive on the Demon City naturally had its risks. The difficulty was immeasurable, and even after a spate of hard work, it might still result in utter defeat. However, if they were to carry on defending, with the defending against each wave becoming more difficult and the imminent arrival of the Level Lord, most of the rookies were bound to be eliminated. The extremely few who could clear the level also needed a certain level of luck. Hence, despite the fact that attacking the Demon City was a desperate bet, it was still worth attempting.

Of course, blindly attacking was certainly not going to work. There was a lot of preparatory work needed.

Shi Xiaobai walked into the Points Treasury. He had 13,505 points, so if he used them effectively, he could raise the chances of successfully attacking the Demon City greatly.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment but still chose to exchange for ‘Holy Radiance’. Although it was spending 10,000 points at a go, if the ‘killing effect’ it had in its description was true, it would allow them to eliminate the worry of the strength of the Demonic Tree’s defense.

As he reached his hand out to press on the words, ‘Holy Radiance’, a voice immediately boomed in his head—”Do you want to exchange for the Holy Radiance? Requires 10,000 Tower Defense Points.”

“Yes!”

Shi Xiaobai gave an affirmative answer. A layer of whiteness suddenly concealed the line of text and floated out of the wall. Following that, each word merged together and transformed into mysterious white textual runes.

The mysterious textual runes constantly increased in size again and again...until it was the height of a person. The pure whiteness suddenly cracked like an eggshell, and white fragments that looked extremely firm pared off. When the white fragments struck the ground, they seeped into the ground like water.

The pure white egg shells cracked incessantly as it gradually revealed what was inside it. It was a pure white sword!

It was as white as snow that resembled jade. The surface of the sword's blade had a faint layer of white radiant light.

This was Holy Radiance?

Shi Xiaobai stretched his hand out to hold the hilt and immediately a warmth spread to his palm. Suddenly he felt that sacred light seeped into his palm and flowed throughout his body. As it flowed past the injuries he had suffered while destroying the cities, black steam was released from his body. The wounds left on his body quickly vanished as a pure aura surged through his body. It was as though he had taken a cold bath. He had a very refreshed and comfortable feeling.

This was the healing property of light. The Holy Radiance contained a surging but pure light. Just holding the sword hilt resulted in such a powerful healing effect!

Shi Xiaobai was pleasantly surprised. He did not notice the golden pattern on the back of his right hand had flashed a few times.

After exchanging for Holy Radiance, he had 3505 points left.

Shi Xiaobai had plans in mind. He lightly tapped on a particular line of text—"War Cannons: Ordinary cannons frequently used in war. Requires 200 Tower Defense Points."

It was different from exchanging for Holy Radiance. There was no phenomena of the text floating out when he chose to exchange for the cannons. Instead exclamations were heard outside the house. Walking out, Shi Xiaobai discovered that a black cannon the size of a small sedan car had appeared in the empty space outside the house.

The surrounding rookies crowded around it. According to what they said, when the cannon appeared, an inexplicable force had pushed them aside, leaving an empty spot for the cannon to appear out of thin air.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised and returned to the Points Treasury. There, he discovered that the line 'Holy Radiance' had already disappeared, but the text 'War Cannon' still existed.



From the looks of it, the Points Treasury had a limited inventory. There was apparently only one Holy Radiance, while the War Cannons could be exchanged multiple times.

After a moment of consideration, Shi Xiaobai exchanged for another four War Cannons.

The five War Cannons cost him a total of 1000 points. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was left with 2505 points. He reached out his hand to tap on another line of text—"Wine of Immortality (Fake): Imitation of the Wine of Immortality. As the brewing process adds the sap of the Tree of Life, it contains a tiny amount of life force in it. Requires 100 Tower Defense Points."

Shi Xiaobai immediately exchanged for twenty bottles of fake Wine of Immortality, leaving him with 505 Tower Defense Points.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not stop. His eyes looked at the third line of text as his mouth slowly formed a smile. This line of text needed 500 points, but it was also the most important part of Shi Xiaobai's plan.

Without any hesitation, Shi Xiaobai exchanged for the item, leaving him with 5 Tower Defense Points!

...

When Shi Xiaobai walked out of the house, all the rookies settled down. Shi Xiaobai began describing his plan of launching the

counteroffensive on the Demon City. When everyone heard this, they stared agape and drew a gasp. The anxiety in their eyes slowly disappeared because his plan was too impressive!

However, the crowd slowly realized a problem and immediately a number of people voiced their concerns.

“We...just need to complete such a simple mission? The rest is all left to you?”

“Are you sure you are going to destroy the Demonic Tree alone?”

“Why do I feel like...we are there just to watch a show?”

“...”

Upon hearing these words, Shi Xiaobai said matter-of-factly, “Of course, when This King said that he would lead all of you to clearing the level, it would definitely not sacrifice any one of you. This plan just requires This King to take the risk. Don’t worry. This King will definitely lead all of you towards victory!”

Shi Xiaobai was filled with confidence. His fearless demeanor made others suffer a loss for words.

The rookies lowered their heads in succession. Back then, they believed that Tu Dahei had destroyed the cities to gather them and to use their numbers to attack the Demon City, but they never expected that the only person who needed to venture in Tu Dahei’s

plan was himself. They only needed to act as support, and could retreat at any time.

Even without the three hundred of them, just thirty of them were enough for Tu Dahei's plan to be perfectly implemented!

As such, the great efforts Tu Dahei went to destroying the cities to gather the rookies together was just to allow more rookies to obtain the reward of clearing the level. He was not selfish at all!

At this moment, the rookies who still had a trace of envy in their hearts had all their complaints washed away!

Moments later, there were rookies who walked out of the Points Treasury. Very soon, there were bottles of fake Wine of Immortality on the empty city grounds.

The Wine of Immortality which Shi Xiaobai had exchanged went from twenty to a hundred bottles after three minutes!

A number of rookies had used their remaining points. They had decided to go for broke!

The short-haired teenager used the one hundred points he had arduously accumulated to exchange for a bottle of fake Wine of Immortality. He walked in front of Shi Xiaobai and said with a deepened voice, "I'm still infuriated regarding your actions, but I choose to believe in you once. I hope you do not disappoint us!"

Shi Xiaobai said solemnly, “Alright!”

Following that, he faced everyone and said loudly, “Prepare yourselves. After finishing the next wave of demonic beasts, we will immediately launch our counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

# Chapter 242: Demonic Beasts That Filled The Lands!

---

During this period, more rookies were transported from Nightmare Terror Island. There were nearly four hundred people gathered in City #1. The twelfth wave of demonic beasts could not withstand the bombardment of the four hundred rookies, so the wave was cleared very quickly.

However, the number of points each person received was just too pathetic.

Although Shi Xiaobai's plan did not need many people to follow him, these rookies were after all the cream of the crop of their respective organizations. They naturally had their own pride and integrity. As such, many of them were resolute in accompanying Shi Xiaobai to the Demon City.

Finally, fifty rookies were left to stand guard in the city to protect the Tree of Life in order to be safe. The other three hundred and fifty people accompanied Shi Xiaobai out of the city gate.

There was a gigantic purple door that looked like a waterfall standing a hundred meters away from the eastern city gate. The demonic beasts walked out of this purple door.

The Demon City was apparently behind this door, but the question of whether a human could pass through the door or if it was dangerous was the first problem they had to face.

The rookies looked at each other. Who was the first to risk venturing into the purple door?

However, Shi Xiaobai, who was walking in front of them, did not even stop. Under the worried looks that were filled with reverence, he walked straight into the purple door.

The purple waterfall instantly engulfed Shi Xiaobai's figure!

The rookies held their breaths.

One second, two seconds, three seconds...

After ten seconds, Shi Xiaobai did not return!

The rookies gradually gave looks of disappointment.

So it turned out that the purple door barred humans from passing through? If that was the case, would Tu Dahei be in trouble?

Suddenly, half a head popped out of the purple waterfall and a familiar voice was heard.

“Follow quickly!”

The rookies looked up.

It was successful?

It really was successful!

It had really succeeded!

Although it was the easiest obstacle, everything was difficult at the beginning. The fact that they could pass through the purple door instantly gave them immense confidence.

“Beautiful!”

“Long live Tu Dahei!”

“Counteroffensive on the Demon City!”

“...”

The rookies excitedly followed him by stepping through the purple door!

...

...

What sort of existence was the Demon City?

Stepping through the purple door felt like one had walked through a waterfall, but they instantly arrived into another world.

The sky was overcast and it was dark. The entire world was dark, dead silent and extremely cold.

The land beneath their feet was empty and dark brown in color. Looking forward, everyone stared with widened eyes.

Their position was located on a gigantic high platform. Below the platform was a brown land that stretched out endlessly. Above, the dark brown land was densely-packed with sleeping demonic beasts!

There were all sorts of demonic beasts—clawed cats, black-striped tigers, single-horned eagles, treant warriors, clawed druids, raging orcs, bone dragons... All the same types of demonic beasts were clustered separately and lay on the ground. Bunches of them filled the vast lands. Their eyes were closed as they slept. However, it was imaginable that any signs of disturbance would awaken all the demonic beasts, resulting in an apocalyptic scene.

And at the ends of the plain was a gigantic black tree that stood erect. The tree was several times larger than the Tree of Life. However, it was equally short, but extremely thick. Black vines drooped down like cold chains. From the looks of it, that was the Demonic Tree.



Eight white cylindrical towers stood erect around the Demonic Tree. Their majestic presence inspired terror, as though they were eight authoritative guardians.

The rookies were left in shocked silence. This was Demon City, but there were no city walls. However, the vast number of demonic beasts made it nearly impossible to cross the land. The eight defensive towers was a line of defense that looked extremely difficult to cross.

How difficult would it be to destroy the Demonic Tree that was defended by tens of thousands of demonic beasts and eight defensive towers?

The only good news was that there were only four purple waterfalls behind them. This meant that they only needed to destroy one Demon City.

With Holy Radiance in hand, Shi Xiaobai stared at the Demonic Tree. He carefully observed the eight defensive towers around it and sighed. If not for the sudden 13,000 points he had received, the Demon City was truly too difficult to conquer. Just him alone was nearly impossible.

But thankfully, there were 13,000 points!

At this moment, a few rookies had slowly pushed the five War Cannons to the edge of the high platform as they aimed them at the densely-packed demonic beasts.

“Ready.”

Shi Xiaobai softly said.

Five strangely-shaped cannonballs were loaded into the cannons as the five War Cannons aimed in five different directions.

The rookies immediately felt their hearts racing. Although Tu Dahei’s plan was perfect, no one could predict what problems would crop up when they were executing it. The moment the five cannonballs were shot, the demonic beasts that covered the vast plains would be alerted. It could be said that once the attack was launched, there was no turning back!

The hands of the five rookies that were responsible for firing the cannons were already trembling slightly.

Shi Xiaobai slowly lifted his right hand as everyone held their breaths. More or less, they tensed up.

“Fire!”

Shi Xiaobai waved his hand downwards.

Five cannonballs flew out simultaneously and smashed into the horde of demonic beasts with a boom!

“Roar!”

Immediately, deafening roars could be heard from the plains. The sleeping demonic beasts were awakened as they looked up and let out furious roars. Following that, they looked at the rookies on the high platform with raging killing intent.

“Continue!”

Shi Xiaobai thundered.

Immediately, another five cannonballs flew out. The alerted demonic beasts attempted to disperse and dodge. This time, the cannonballs did not strike the demonic beasts and instead hit the ground. The outer shells of the cannonballs shattered, and a blue liquid that was wrapped by the outer shell splashed onto the surrounding demonic beasts.

Without a need for Shi Xiaobai to shout again, the rookies responsible for the reloading of the cannons immediately did their job, while the rookies responsible for firing immediately fired. Five cannonballs flew out once again. Either they smashed to the ground or on the demonic beasts. Blue water splashed out as aromatic wine began drenching the lands.

The surrounding demonic beasts suddenly turned around and began licking the alcohol on the ground or rushed to the demonic beasts that had been struck by the cannonballs.

Although this Wine of Immortality was fake, it was brewed with the Tree of Life's sap. Despite it being in tiny quantities, it still had a fatal attraction for these demonic beasts.

One cannonball after another flew over and crashed into the ground. The surge of demonic beasts became dispersed as they lunged towards the ground to lick the wine on the ground.

However, there were only a hundred cannonballs. It was impossible to cover the entire area. The demonic beasts that were unaffected charged angrily at the rookies. The high platform they were on was not very high. Furthermore, there was a gentle slope separating the high platform from the plains. Hence, they did not gain much of a height advantage from being on the high platform.

The roaring demonic beasts surged over like a tsunami. The vicious and frenetic killing intent was terrifying.

# Chapter 243: The Blinding Of Everyone's Eyes

---

“Psionic Domain!”

The short-haired teenager bellowed as three hundred rookies responded. White psionic power surged out from their hands as it flowed like a white river and slowly gathered towards the short-haired teenager's body!

The short-haired teenager lifted his hand high up and a gigantic domain that enveloped all the rookies slowly appeared!

The demonic beast that led the charge crashed into the domain, but it only caused the domain to quiver. It did not shatter immediately.

Shi Xiaobai, who was right in front, had charged forward. The dense radiance from the pure white sword slashed at the demonic beasts. Upon slashing a demonic beast, white light immediately shone. The demonic beast howled as its body evaporated into white smoke as though it had been burned.

This strike was the simplest Beginner Sword, but it was produced using Holy Radiance. In it was contained a rich amount of the power of light.

This power of light was highly effective against the darkness-based demonic beasts in the Demon City!

Shi Xiaobai slashed out one strike after another as one demonic beast after another fell to the ground with a wail. The rookies looked on in shock.

At this moment, a few strange yells came from far into the distance.

Following that, these strange yells began to undergo vicissitudes and intermixed within were angry roars!

The demonic beasts that were licking the wine on the ground had suddenly raised their heads. Their eyes were bloodshot as they burst forth with amazing speed and power. Instantly, they pounced onto the demonic beasts that were running past them.

The demonic beasts that were pushed down struggled desperately as they let out shrill but strange yelps. The demonic beast with bloodshot eyes was leaning over the other demonic beast as it roared. Then...its body began grinding!

One after another, the demonic beasts that had licked the wine on the ground began pushing down demonic beasts beside them while their eyes were bloodshot. They ignored the struggles of the demonic beast that they had pushed down, and began grinding their bodies.

As a result, there were pairs of entangled demonic beasts on the plains with one above the other. With bloodshot eyes, the demonic beast on top would begin moving in a rhythmic fashion, as strange

cries of pain or enjoyment resounded through the sky.

That scene blinded the eyes of everyone.

“Have we succeeded?” a girl covered her eyes and asked shyly.

“We’ve succeeded!”

A youth took a look and looked away.

Shi Xiaobai’s plan had succeeded. They had used the Wine of Immortality to make specially crafted cannonballs. Using the theory of the Tree of Life being able to attract the demonic beasts, it resulted in the demonic beasts to lick the Wine of Immortality that splashed to the ground.

They had added “Powerful Aphrodisiac (Beast)”, which cost 500 Tower Defense Points, into the Wine of Immortality to cause the demonic beasts to be in heat!

“Fuck, this plan actually worked! My eyes are going blind.”

“This aphrodisiac is so powerful? It’s like this group of demonic beasts has gone mad.”

“Demonic beasts that are in heat are terrifying.”

“I’m kowtowing to Tu Dahei for such a plan!”

“How lewd. Is Tu Dahei a Lewd King?”

“...”

The rookies voiced out their mixed emotions, but there was a look of excitement on their faces. At this moment, more than half the demonic beasts were doing unspeakable aerobics while in heat.

The few demonic beasts that had charged at the high platform also lost their lives with the slaying of Shi Xiaobai’s sword of light. At this moment, there were few demonic beasts that were free to move!

It could be said that the defense of the numerous demonic beasts suddenly revealed a gigantic flaw!

“Now!”

Finally, when the last demonic beast that attacked the Psionic Domain was killed, the short-haired teenager shouted.

In fact, just as the short-haired teenager opened his mouth, Shi Xiaobai had already shot forward like a cheetah on its hunt. His speed confounded everyone.

The rookies turned their heads as they looked at the charging



figure with a strong sense of hope in their eyes.

From this moment, whether they would succeed in conquering the Demon City to obtain the final victory was all on Tu Dahei's shoulders!

Although the aphrodisiac cannonballs had reduced more than half the demonic beasts, there were still vast numbers of demonic beasts on the plains. Furthermore, the eight white defensive towers still stood erect. Trying to dart through all these obstacles alone was extremely difficult and dangerous. Every rookie knew this in their hearts.

However, this was Tu Dahei's plan. He was the one who took the initiative to shoulder this responsibility. This was the reason why he made them feel an inexplicable sense of respect for him!

“Tu Dahei, go!”

“Tu Dahei, all the best!”

“Go for it!”

“Tu Dahei, we are relying on you!”

“Whether you succeed or not, I'll look up to you for the rest of my life!”

“You have to succeed!”

“...”

The rookies yelled out in high spirits. They became nervous as they stared intently at the figure that was crazily charging forward!

Shi Xiaobai darted past the demonic beasts that were still going at it again and again. The demonic beasts in heat ignored him, while the demonic beasts that were trapped beneath did not have the ability to do a thing. Very soon, those demonic beasts that had escaped the unexpected calamity discovered Shi Xiaobai in their confusion. It was as if they found their calling in life and began rushing at Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai remained expressionless as his mind was extremely calm. He did not slow down at all. The blinding scene around him did not affect him in any way, while the ferocious demonic beasts that came for him did not waver his resolve.

The rookies gaped as they came to the edge of the platform. They stared at the figure that was racing through the plains!

Tu Dahei!

Tu Dahei used his nimble footwork to dodge four black-striped tigers' jaws!

Tu Dahei with a deft turn of his body avoided the pincer attack of treant warriors!

Tu Dahei used his Crab Illusions to deceive ten single-horned eagles.

Tu Dahei's double mirage teased the clawed druids left and right!

Tu Dahei darted through the wall formed by the raging orcs and killed three on the way!

Tu Dahei clashed head on with the bone dragon, but suddenly he conjured a psionic knife and immediately reduced the bone dragon to a heap of bones!

No, Tu Dahei was being surrounded by three silver-scaled anacondas!

Ah, Tu Dahei's dazzling figures caused the three silver-scaled anacondas to bite each other's tails!

Tu Dahei was still proceeding forward!

Tu Dahei did not stop even once!

Tu Dahei traversed the vast plains at an extremely fast speed as he began to approach the zone where the Demonic Tree was!

Tu Dahei!

Tu Dahei, all the best!

The rookies had their hearts in their mouths as they screamed with all their might, “Tu Dahei, all the best!”

The eight white cold towers each had a white ball. Inside the white ball was a tiny black ball that made them look like a gigantic eyeball!

The eight gigantic tower eyeballs turned to look at Shi Xiaobai!

Eight beams of light shot out from the eyes at the moment Shi Xiaobai darted past all the demonic beasts!

“Boom! Boom! Boom! ...”

Eight deafening explosions sounded and amidst them were the screams of the demonic beasts. A mushroom cloud of smoke rose up as the entire area was covered by explosions!

“Tu Dahei!”

Everyone exclaimed. The explosive zone was too large. There was no way to dodge!

Suddenly, a keen-eyed rookie shouted, “Look, over there!”

They saw a figure amid the smoke charging forward, dispersing the smoke in front of it, as though clouds were being brushed aside. Tu Dahei was still charging forward!

Eight beams of light shot out from the eyeballs situated above the white towers once again. This time, the beams did not result in explosions. Instead, each of the eight beams was a continuous beam that left ravines in the ground wherever it swept past!

The eight beams of light fired quickly without any pattern. It nearly blanketed every path in front of Tu Dahei!

“How can he pass through that?” a girl said anxiously.

Everyone frowned. With the eight beams of light sweeping back and forth, they formed a light curtain that almost did not have any gaps in them. The light curtain contained terrifying power. Even the ground was left with deep ravines, so how could one pass through the light curtain?

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes remained calm. Instead of slowing down, he accelerated!

The light curtain had almost no gaps!

But it was only almost!

Since there existed a gap, as long as one was fast enough, one could pass through it by seizing the correct moment!

As long as he was faster, faster and even faster!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes burst out with a dazzling radiance. The eight beams of light that were sweeping back and forth suddenly appeared to slow down!

He saw a gap that was about to disappear in a flash!

Accelerate, accelerate, and more acceleration!

Shi Xiaobai's speed broke through his limits at that instant!

At the next moment, Shi Xiaobai clashed with the gigantic light curtain that stood in his path!

As the light flashed, everyone held their breaths as they saw a black figure on the other end of the light curtain. The black figure leaped high into the sky. Raising his word, he jumped towards the black Demonic Tree!

“He passed through it!”

“Holy shit, he really passed through!”

“Just a bit more!”

“Go on, Tu Dahei!”

“...”

Shi Xiaobai had leaped into mid air with the pure white sword lifted high into the sky. Suddenly a magnolia-colored beam of light contracted and expanded like a heart. It was like a divine heartbeat!

“Two!”

Shi Xiaobai slashed a diagonal slash towards the right!

“Peng Grills!”

Shi Xiaobai slashed a diagonal slash towards the left!

A gigantic magnolia-colored crossbeam of light surged straight at the gigantic Demonic Tree that had drooping black vines!

“Boom!”

A white flame shot up into the sky as the inferno lit up the entire dark sky!

The Demonic Tree issued out a shrill scream!

The white flames burned as a layer of creamy white emanated above the Demonic Tree. It was as though it had frozen as the screaming came to a halt!

The eyeballs on the eight white towers turned a crimson red as they shot out blackish-red beams of light in every direction as a series of explosions happened!

The demonic beasts stopped their actions and lay prostrate to the ground. They wailed, growled, cried or roared...as though it was the apocalypse.

At that moment, the authoritative voice boomed in the minds of all the rookies in the Demon City.

“Demon City #1 has been destroyed. All the trial-takers in City #1 will be transported to the third level after ten seconds!”

...



# Chapter 244: City Destroyer Hero

---

“Demon City #1 has been destroyed. All the trial-takers in City #1 will be transported to the third level after ten seconds!”

This sentence sounded in the minds of all the rookies in City #1. Everyone was overjoyed and astonished.

They had really succeeded?

They had really succeeded!

The Demonic Tree seemed frozen as its body was covered in a layer of white frost. The eight defense towers that were shooting beams of light came to a sudden halt. As the bloodshot eyes slowly closed, the demonic beasts prostrating on the ground collapsed to the ground subsequently. It was unknown if they were entering hibernation or if they were dying.

And at that instant, a black-haired youth stood amidst the desolate scene. He stood in front of the Demonic Tree with a pure white Holy Radiance in hand, as though he was a god that had descended to the mortal world.

He had traversed the sea of demonic beasts and dodged numerous attacks, evading the eight beams of light and killed the Demonic Tree in one strike! He had destroyed an entire Demon City almost with his strength alone!

“This is the City Destroyer Villain?”

A rookie that had recently come from Nightmare Terror Island was lost in a trance. The moment he came, he was informed of the “City Destroyer Villain”. Back then, he had scoffed at them, thinking that they were exaggerating.

However, now with him seeing this scene, he understood that reality was a hundred times more terrifying than the rumors. A sea of demonic beasts and eight defensive towers that shot beams of light had failed to prevent him from forging ahead. They did not even slow him down. He sped up again and again, and seemed to stab the Demon City in its heart. He had also stabbed ruthlessly into the hearts of everyone. The shock they received was something beyond words.

“This is the City Destroyer Villain!”

A rookie who had his city destroyed by Shi Xiaobai said with a relieved tone. He was even feeling proud. This City Destroyer Villain had once destroyed his city and he had not led them to destroy the Demon City. He had directly led them towards victory.

“No, he’s a hero! City Destroyer Hero!”

A girl’s eyes were filled with splendor and reverence. To be able to destroy the Demon City alone. That was truly one of the brave, a true hero. Tu Dahei was just too cool!

“Yes, City Destroyer Hero!”

Slowly, people began shouting ‘City Destroyer Hero’. And moments later, nearly everyone was yelling the three words at the top of their lungs, with the yelling growing in intensity.

“City Destroyer Hero! City Destroyer Hero! City Destroyer Hero!  
...”

In the final ten seconds, the rookies erupted into a roaring cheer.

...

...

Shanghai City, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Main Auditorium

The gigantic stone monument was covered with dense text. The text was the data the assessment program displayed to the external world.

At this moment, the information was constantly changing. However, there was a portion of information that appeared like a pool of stagnant water.

Many people in the auditorium had extremely ugly expressions.

“This batch of rookies is too disappointing,” a middle-aged man said with a sigh.

“That’s right. How long has it been, yet the number of people who have reached the third level is less than a hundred,” a teenager said.

“This is the batch of rookies with the worst quality I have ever seen. Thankfully, the competition between the two factions only requires ten people. If not, the organization faction would probably suffer an abject defeat.” An elder shook his head with a sigh.

Most of the people in the auditorium had such thoughts. The speed at which the rookies went from the first level to the second level was considered normal, but the speed at which they went from the second to the third level was surprisingly slow. This made people begin to suspect the quality of the current batch of rookies. After all, those who could partake in the trials were the best rookies in their respective organizations.

The quiet atmosphere felt somewhat repressive.

Suddenly, someone exclaimed.

“Holy shit, are my eyes tricking me?”

Everyone turned in surprise at that person as another person exclaimed loudly.

“Heavens, four hundred people in an instant?”

“Look at the data. Was there a bug?”

Everyone frowned and turned to look at the stone monument. Their eyes nearly popped out. The text on the stone monument was split into three parts by two red lines. The top indicated the trial-takers at the third level. There were less than a hundred people at the beginning, but at that moment, there were nearly five hundred people!

There were four hundred people sent to the third level in an instant? This was completely unheard of. It was preposterous!

However, having seen this scene with their own eyes, they could only watch in astonishment.

“Is this a bug?”

“What a joke. Have you ever seen the assessment program have a bug?”

The assessment program is produced by a highly-advanced civilization. Even if there are bugs, it would be some trivial bugs. It’s impossible for such an exaggerated bug to exist.”

“There must be a reason behind this matter. The speed at which

the rookies went from the second to third level was suddenly inexplicably slow. From the looks of it, there must be a reason.”

“Five hundred people have reached the third level. This is an extremely rare occurrence. Typically, having three hundred people reach the third level is already a pretty good result. Could the quality of this batch of rookies exceed our expectations?”

“Something unexpected must have happened. We can only wait and ask them after they come out.”

“For four hundred people to simultaneously pass the second level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower... I have a feeling that this will become quite a hot piece of news. After all, the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is infamous for its ‘cutthroat competition’!”

“Hey, didn’t you see those reporters running out to make phone calls? If this matter was not a bug and had happened for a reason, it would definitely make the front page of all major newspapers tomorrow.”

“ ... ”

Everyone broke out into a flurry of discussions. Compared to the silent and lifeless situation from before, it was as if they were two different worlds.

...

...

## Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, medical ward

Every time the trials happened, there would be a number of trial-takers among the thousand who would be forever left behind in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental World. Most of the others would be able to safely escape using the exit command.

However, after escaping, there would be a number of people covered in injuries. There were even a few who failed to use the exit command in time, resulting in untreatable trauma.

For example, the adonis who had just received treatment. He was lying in bed with an ashen expression. His right arm from the elbow had been ripped off, so there was no way to recover it. Having lost his right arm, he was now an amputee. He could already see the darkness in the path ahead of him. His beautiful future had come to an end.

Other than regret, the adonis felt mostly hatred. From his point of view, if Tu Dahei had chosen to save him, he would not have lost his arm. It had nothing to do with him not using the exit command in time, but Tu Dahei's fault.

It was Tu Dahei that harmed him!

There were anxious footsteps that came from outside the door.

The adonis turned his head stiffly and saw the middle-aged man and woman from Zeus that had led the delegation.

The middle-aged man and woman were clearly here to inquire. The moment they entered the room, they saw the adonis's pale face and the empty spot on his right sleeve.

“What happened?” The middle-aged man frowned as he walked towards the side of the bed.

“I exhorted all of you many a time to use the exit command in a timely fashion. You, sigh!” The middle-aged woman had an exasperated expression.

The adonis gaped. Although he had not interacted much with the middle-aged man and woman, it could even be considered as them barely knowing each other by participating in the selection.

They came from the same organization after all, but the first thing they said was not words of concern, but to question him and blame him?

The adonis gave a self-deprecating smile and he suddenly felt somewhat depressed.



# Chapter 245: I Have Champagne In My Room

---

In fact, the middle-aged man and woman were not particularly optimistic about the adonis. They felt rage more than pity when they saw the adonis's loss of an arm.

They were both angry because the organization had lost a talent they had arduously nurtured as well as angry over his carelessness.

The adonis could tell the angry expressions from the duo as he clenched his left fist.

“What exactly happened?” the middle-aged man asked again.

The adonis took a deep breath and said coldly, “It’s all because of Tu Dahei!”

With this said, a strange glint flashed in the eyes of the middle-aged man and woman. The middle-aged woman asked, “Are you saying Gaia’s Tu Dahei caused you to lose an arm?”

The adonis nodded in silence.

The adonis hesitated for a moment and was prepared to explain the situation.

However, the middle-aged man suddenly asked, “Did Tu Dahei

suddenly sneak up on you and cut off your right arm?”

The adonis was taken aback. Although he hated Tu Dahei, he would not go as far as fabricating a story. He shook his head and said, “That wasn’t the case, but...”

The middle-aged man interjected with a sullen face, “What do you mean but? That was what happened! Tu Dahei held a grudge with you because of the brawl that happened last night in the hotel. So he attempted to kill you while you were not attentive during the trials. Although you managed to dodge, your arm was cut off. Then, you used the exit command to escape successfully.”

“This...”

The adonis fell silent as his eyes flickered with uncertainty.

The middle-aged woman said with a solemn voice, “Since you said Tu Dahei was the one who caused you harm, don’t you have any resentment for him?”

The adonis’s pupils dilated. He obviously hated Tu Dahei. He did not hate Tu Dahei for not saving him at the critical moment, but he hated Tu Dahei for winning Sunless’ feelings.

How could Tu Dahei tarnish that heavenly snow lotus he could only watch from afar without daring to approach?

His jealousy for Tu Dahei had turned to hate.

The adonis nodded his head heavily.

The middle-aged woman said softly, “Then that’s all. Following that, you just need to follow as we tell you to do. We will guarantee you that Tu Dahei will pay the ultimate price! Remember, Tu Dahei attacked you because of a personal grudge. You failed to dodge in time, resulting in an arm being cut off. Right, was there anyone else there?”

The adonis shook his head in a deadpan manner.

The middle-aged woman smiled, “That’s great!”

The adonis looked up and saw the joy and smiles on the middle-aged man and woman’s faces.

He had lost an arm, but they could smile so happily?

“I’m tired. I need some quietness.”

The adonis sighed and turned around to let his back face them.

“Alright, have a good rest. Don’t worry. The organization will definitely seek justice for you!”

After the middle-aged man said this, the two turned around without looking back and walked out of the medical ward.

...

The middle-aged man and woman quickly walked to a secluded corner and conjured a soundproof domain.

The middle-aged man whispered, "This is a fantastic opportunity. It seems our plans on encroaching Gaia can be restarted."

The middle-aged woman gave a slight sneer and said, "Previously, that Tu Dahei destroyed our plans, but who knew he would offer himself like this. Remember to execute this matter without telling the elderly God of Swords. Ever since the battle exchange, he has been adamantly trying to prevent the encroaching plans, but he refuses to say the reason. He only mentions that Gaia is filled with hidden talents. What a joke. If Gaia truly had hidden talents, would they have been reduced to second tier? That old fogey must be cherishing his friendship with One-Pun. It's truly as the saying goes, once you turn old, your blade turns blunt."

The middle-aged man nodded and said, "We will secretly execute this matter. We need to find an appropriate opportunity and expose this matter. It's best when most rookies are present. It's rumored that Tu Dahei is extremely arrogant and is disliked by the rookies. When the time comes, we might even get some free support."

The middle-aged woman fell into silence for a moment and said,

“When the trials are reduced to the last few people, nearly everyone will be gathered in the auditorium to pay attention to the final level of the trial. At that moment, we can ‘seek justice’ from Yama Minamiya, and stir up the problem and make the situation tense and irrecoverable. Even if Yama Minamiya is willing to sacrifice Tu Dahei and compromise, we will insist on things. Then, we will angrily lose all decorum in front of everyone. When the time comes, Zeus will have enough reason to encroach onto Gaia.”

The middle-aged man revealed a smile and said, “That’s a good timing. Those rookies would have just finished the trial and would definitely be feeling unhappy. It would be the perfect time for them to vent their hatred for Tu Dahei too. I can already imagine how Tu Dahei is being condemned by everyone, the scene of him being unable to give a convincing explanation. It would definitely be very interesting.”

The middle-aged woman also smiled. “This matter shall be done in this way. Our positions will make a giant leap. Those old fogeys have been coveting Gaia’s heritage series greatly.”

The middle-aged man said, “Let’s celebrate tonight?”

The middle-aged woman nodded, “I have champagne in my room.”

...

...

As the organization faction was undergoing their selection, the academic faction was naturally doing the same. The academic faction had long begun the audition of the entire country. It was different from the organization's decision using one round. The academic faction had plenty of manpower, so the entire selection process was open and extensive.

All the freshmen could enroll to join in the mass training and selection. Every round, there would be recorded video that would be posted on the official video feed!

And today, the day when the organization faction was undergoing their selection, the academic faction's national audition had come to an end. The rookies chosen from each province's audition had arrived in Beijing today!

One super rookie after another walked out of the airport. The people who came to welcome them cheered. It was different from the organization faction where hero missions were considered. The academic faction paid more focus to the formation of the students' fame. If the academic institute could produce a celebrity-grade hero, that would greatly increase the reputation of the institute.

Hence, all the super rookies sent by the academic faction were exposed from the moment they entered their institutes. As such, their fame was much greater than the super rookies in the organization faction. Every year, the number of super rookies the academic faction received far exceeded the organization faction.

And this year, a new record was made. There were more than fifty super rookies throughout the country. More than forty of

them chose to carry on with their studied, with fewer than ten joining the organizations. This was also one of the reasons why the conflict between the two factions suddenly intensified.

Although the super rookies only represented being first in the overall quality assessment in their province, it did not mean they were the strongest. However, this situation clearly made the organization faction feel greatly threatened.

Noon.

At the academic faction's selection venue, it was a stadium that could hold ten thousand people. It was already filled with spectators.

The selection style of the academic faction had a very rich academic vibe to it. It was a single knockout duel!

The two hundred and fifty-six freshmen that were selected would participate in an elimination tournament until thirty-six people were left. Following that, they would be split into teams to vie for the top ten spots. Finally, a second round of elimination matches would decide the final rankings!

It would last for many days and it would be a feast for the audience's eyes, creating several headlines. This was the standard style of the academic faction!

And today's first round in the playoffs was sufficient to grab the

attention of many. This was because the first contestant on the candidate name list was the princess of Battle Arena Corporation, Princess Xiao Xiao, who studied in Peihua University!



## Chapter 246: You And I Know Shi Xiaobai

---

Xiao Xiao was not a super rookie, but her fame exceeded most super rookies. This was because of that, despite her coming third in this year's graduation examinations, it was a rank she received in Beijing. The value of that ranking alone was much greater than any province's super rookie could get!

Furthermore, she was the only heir to the Battle Arena Corporation. Her family's fortune was worth in the tens of billions and her beauty could topple countries. Despite her background putting head and shoulders above others, and that she could use her face alone to receive the attention of others, she had used her strength to prove herself.

She formed a stark contrast to the prodigal or useless scions in the upper circles in Beijing.

For Xiao Xiao to be addressed by the general public as 'Princess', she was obviously popular.

And in today's first playoffs it was Xiao Xiao's turn. Her opponent was not famous. His strength was ranked below average among the two hundred and fifty-six contestants. As such, there was no suspense to the outcome. However, in order to witness the Princess' glory, the audience had come early, filling the audience stands.

...

Outside the stadium in the candidate's resting area, there were three people who had arrived at the door. They had met with quite a problem.

“Sorry, you have to show your identification. The candidate list does have a freshman named ‘Chen Lingcun’, but for some reason, there’s no picture. If you do not have an identity card, we can’t believe you.”

A few security guards blocked the entrance as a suited middle-aged man said in a warm manner.

The silver-haired teenager frowned slightly.

The red-haired girl beside the silver-haired teenager glared at the guard, and just as she wanted to say something, the silver-haired teenager stared at her. The red-haired girl harrumphed before shutting her mouth.

A handsome youth standing behind the silver-haired teenager and the red-haired girl said softly, “Brother, shall I just give up?”

The silver-haired teenager shook his head and said, “No, you have to find a way to elevate your existential presence and try your best to eliminate the white...aura. The two factions’ mass training has extremely high visibility. Furthermore, you have been abandoning your cultivation all these years without rising to the Psionic Soul Realm. This is a heaven-given opportunity. It would be a pity if you miss it.”

The silver-haired youth shrugged his shoulders indifferently, “If I want to raise the visibility of myself, there are many ways. I just need to...”

The silver-haired teenager shook his head with a smile. “You sure have many crazy ideas, but most of them can’t be used. The factional collective training is the right way.”

The suited man could not help but roll his eyes when he heard the siblings speak. He wanted to deride them saying that the factional collective training was not something they could enter as they wish. Visibility was not something one could rise as they wished. One needed to have the ability first!

The silver-haired youth said reluctantly, “Alright, you are my elder brother. You’re the boss.”

The silver-haired teenager smiled and looked at the suited man as he pondered with a frown.

The reason why there was no photo on the registration form was most likely because the staff who kept the photos had forgotten about it.

This was one of the disadvantages of having too low an existential presence. However, how could they show an identity card they did not even have?

Did they need to use that relationship?

The silver-haired teenager glanced at the red-haired girl. He never liked to use the help of others, much less the red-haired girl beside him.

At this moment, the suited man's eyes suddenly lit up. He walked forward and said loudly, "Princess Xiao Xiao, this way, please."

The three turned around and saw a beautiful girl with pink wavy hair walking towards the entrance. She was dressed in a white long-sleeved blouse and a white laced skirt. There was a large pink butterfly knot at her chest.

The security guards made way, giving her ample space.

Xiao Xiao gave a courteous nod and gave the trio a glance. Quickly, she looked away and was about to step into the resting area.

A brilliant idea flashed in the silver-haired youth's mind as he cocked his head at the silver-haired teenager, "It's time to act."

The silver-haired teenager was slightly taken aback as he shook his head with a laugh, "You have a plan?"

The silver-haired youth did not reply as he quietly took a step forward and said, "Princess Xiao Xiao, please hold on!"

Xiao Xiao came to a halt and turned around as her eyes slowly fixated on the silver-haired youth's body. She asked curiously, "Yes?"

The silver-haired youth walked towards her. The security guards deftly reached out his hand to block him. The silver-haired youth came to a halt and at a distance about three meters away from Xiao Xiao, he whispered, "Hello, my name is Chen Lingcun, Shi Xiaobai's friend!"

When Xiao Xiao heard the words 'Shi Xiaobai', her breathing faltered. This name was obviously no stranger to her. The events that had happened back in the virtual world were still vivid in her mind. He had told her his name at the final moment before stabbing her in the heart. She could not forget it even if she wanted.

After encountering Shi Xiaobai, she understood what it meant that there was always someone better in this world. She had been desperately cultivating over the past few days, in the hopes of entering the factional collective training. If she could chance upon the little pervert who once carried her while running, she did not want to be flung behind him again.

At this moment, she immediately felt like she was living in an illusion, hearing this name from a stranger she suddenly met.

"How do you know...I know Shi Xiaobai?"

Xiao Xiao exhaled. During the virtual reality competition, the

identity of 'IChooseDogLeading' was always a mystery. Other than her, it appeared as though no one knew Shi Xiaobai was 'IChooseDogLeading'. And the only time she had interacted with Shi Xiaobai was at that virtual competition. Then, how did the person in front of her know that she knew Shi Xiaobai, and could say things like "I'm Shi Xiaobai's friend"?

Chen Lingcun smiled and said, "Xiaobai previously mentioned you."

This was obviously a lie. Chen Lingcun had only accidentally stumbled on the news that was neglected by the masses. From the description from the news, the intelligent him managed to guess that Shi Xiaobai was 'IChooseDogLeading'. However, he did not know what Xiao Xiao and Shi Xiaobai's relationship was. Neither did he know if Xiao Xiao knew that IChooseDogLeading's name was Shi Xiaobai.

Hence, he directly said that he knew Shi Xiaobai instead of saying a bunch of bullshit before Xiao Xiao said 'who is Shi Xiaobai'. That would be awkward.

Now, from the looks of it, his luck was pretty good. Xiao Xiao did know Shi Xiaobai, and from the looks of it, their relationship was pretty good?

After Xiao Xiao heard Chen Lingcun's words, her eyes lit up slightly. She opened her mouth, but did not say a word. After a few moments, she coyly said, "What...did he say?"

From her actions, Chen Lingcun was slightly surprised.

This relationship appeared far from pretty good?

Chen Lingcun immediately imitated Shi Xiaobai's tone by saying, "This King will eventually save the world, let alone a mortal princess?"

Xiao Xiao burst out laughing. This sentence made her recall the words Shi Xiaobai had said in the virtual world. The way he spoke was still vivid in her mind.

This sentence was truly Shi Xiaobai's style. For the silver-haired youth to know this, he clearly had a great relationship with Shi Xiaobai.

At this moment, Chen Lingcun suddenly said, "Alright, sorry for bothering you. I'm actually one of the freshmen that should be participating in the selection. We will chat when we have the opportunity in the future."

Upon hearing this, Xiao Xiao hesitated for a moment before nodding and said, "Alright!"

Although she wanted to understand more about Shi Xiaobai from Chen Lingcun, it was impolite to ask so many questions on their first meeting. It would appear too imprudent.

Xiao Xiao turned around to walk into the resting area.

Chen Lingcun watched her in a deadpan manner, as though he was prepared to leave.

The suited man hurriedly came forward and said, “Since you know Princess Xiao Xiao, you definitely can’t be an impostor. Please, go on in.”

Chen Lingcun’s back faced the suited man as he winked at the silver-haired teenager.

The silver-haired teenager shook his head with a laugh, “How much do you need to owe Shi Xiaobai? Now, you are adding one more to the tab?”

Chen Lingcun shrugged his shoulders and said, “After owing ten million, does it matter if I owe another thousand?”

The silver-haired teenager laughed. What he said made a lot of sense, so he had nothing to offer in response.

...



# Chapter 247: Wow, This Constipation

---

Third level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower

On a great expanse of crystalline ground was a row of stone doors. There were nearly no gaps in between the doors. From afar, it looked like a long wall that stretched out for miles.

Every stone door had a glyph carved into them and each door had a different glyph. Every glyph looked exquisite and vivid. It was quite an amazement for anyone who saw it.

At this moment, there were a few dozen doors among the thousand stone doors that had been opened. The rest were closed.

And other than the thousand stone doors on the expansive crystalline ground, there were eight people.

The eight people were split into two groups. On one side were four youths dressed in different attires. The other four had three beauties and a rather handsome blond youth.

Amongst the three beauties, one was like a refined and otherworldly fairy. One of them had orange hair who looked adorable and cute, while another had brown short hair with a unique neutral charm. They were none other than Sunless, Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng.

At this moment, Mozzie was chatting incessantly with Sunless,

but Sunless only listened to her quietly. Occasionally, she would respond with a few short words.

Mu Yuesheng stood beside the two as she closed her eyes in Cogitation. Occasionally, she would cut in with a word or two.

The blond youth beside the three was obviously Kevin. Kevin did not attempt to interrupt the three beauties as he knew he would be asking for a rebuff. He knew very well of the tragedy that the three would ignore him, so he was standing not far away and stared at four nearby youths who were dressed differently.

After an unknown period of time, the armored youth among the four youths suddenly said loudly to Kevin, “Are you all really going to wait all the way to the end? Maybe the person you are waiting for has already been eliminated at the second level?”

Kevin shrugged his shoulders and answered, “The fellow we are waiting for is never a reliable person, but the second level won’t be able to eliminate him.”

The armored youth said with a frown, “The rules require five people to form a team. But the leading team only has the eight of us remaining. If this goes on, the disadvantage of falling behind might be irremediable. One of you can come over, or one of us can go over. But you refuse, what’s the meaning of this?”

Kevin said helplessly, “This Genius can’t do a thing about this either.”

The armored youth sighed and said, “Brother, why don’t you come over? I think you look rather impatient from waiting. Although the three chicks beside you are nice, they aren’t yours. You don’t even have a chance to speak to them, so stop just standing there watching!”

Kevin smacked his lips and said, “That’s different. Standing here, even the air smells sweet! It’s best you wait for rookies from the second level to come. You are only missing one, there’s nothing to worry about!”

The armored youth also said with a wry smile, “That’s what we thought at the beginning too. But how long has it been, but it’s like the rookies on the second level are undergoing constipation. Not a single one has passed up to now. Although the third level’s trial is done with a five-person team, it’s still a competition between teams!”

Kevin said, “I understand the rationale, but we can only wait. As for why the rookies on the second level are coming here so slowly. There is a reason. You will know later.”

Kevin sighed silently. For the rookies in the second level to meet the City Destroyer Villain, Shi Xiaobai’s ganking, it was truly depressing for them.

At this moment, five people walked out of the stone door that had opened. Leading the group was Heartless.

When Heartless walked out and turned his head, he saw Kevin as

well as the three cute girls behind him.

Heartless frowned. “Tu Dahei still hasn’t come?”

Kevin nodded with a deadpan expression. Looking at the burly teenager behind Heartless, he sighed in his heart.

Heartless’ brows furrowed even deeper as he said, “With Tu Dahei’s strength, there is no reason for him to not reach the third level. An incident probably happened. Waiting like this isn’t wise. If he has already been eliminated, wouldn’t that doom all of you as well?”

Kevin fell silent.

Heartless sighed and glanced at Sunless. In his mind, he reflected on how a person who did not easily fall in love was the one who became the most foolish once they were moved.

The burly teenager behind Heartless reminded him, “Boss, it’s time to choose a door!”

Heartless nodded and turned around to leave.

At this moment, beams of golden light descended from the sky. It was not one or two, but a few hundred golden beams of light pouring down from the sky in an instant. It was as though a golden rainstorm had poured.

Hundreds of rookies instantly appeared on the crystalline ground. Bathing in the golden rainstorm, that scene was extremely shocking.

The existing people were dumbfounded.

What was going on?

Why did a few hundred people simultaneously be transported from the second level here?

The armored youth said with a stutter, “Wow, this constipation...”

After the hundreds of people rained down, the next few seconds were filled with the cacophony of cheers.

“Tu Dahei! Tu Dahei! Tu Dahei...”

The cheers boomed tumultuously as it resounded through the world.

Mozzie and company turned around when they heard the three words. Yet, they saw a person being suddenly thrown up and down by hundreds of people. Who else was he but Shi Xiaobai?

Kevin said stunned, “Wasn’t this jerk cursed as the City

Destroyer Villain? Why is he suddenly so popular?”

Heartless fell silent for a moment before saying, “For so many people to be simultaneously arriving at the third level, it probably has to do with Tu Dahei, but what did he do?”

...

The cheers lasted till the authoritative voice boomed in the rookies’ minds. Shi Xiaobai, who could not stop the crowd’s passionate throwing into the sky, finally landed on the ground to take a breather.

At the same time, the sacred but authoritative voice boomed in Shi Xiaobai’s mind.

“Welcome to the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower’s third level—Thousand Stone Doors.”

“In the ‘Thousand Stone Doors’, there are a thousand stone doors. Every stone door leads to a small world. Every small world has its regiment of guards and a guardian BOSS. Killing the guardian BOSS would be deemed as earning the points for the corresponding door. When you have a thousand points, you would clear the third level.”

“Once the guardian BOSS in the stone door is killed, the corresponding door will become empty, preventing anyone from entering.”

“The thousand stone doors are divided into four levels of difficulty—easy, medium, hard, hell. Only after entering the stone door would you be informed what level the stone door world you have entered. At that moment, you are able to choose to leave the world, but you would be barred from entering another stone door for ten minutes.”

“This trial requires five people to form a group. Please form a five-person team with any other four people. Once the group is formed, there cannot be any changes. After the team works together to kill the guardian BOSS, everyone will receive the originally defined points.”

“A stone door permits only one team to enter.”

“This level’s Level Lord, [Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign], has been awakened an hour ago. It will descend in eleven hours. Please make haste.”

“Please carefully choose your teammates. Wishing you best of luck!”

## Chapter 248: It Must Be An Illusion

---

The moment the sacred but authoritative voice was finished, hundreds of rookies caused a hubbub.

“Boss Tu Dahei, bring me along!”

“Boss Tu Dahei, form a team with me. I’ll definitely not hold you back!”

“Let go of Tu Dahei, bring me along!”

“...”

Hundreds of rookies jostled to form a team with Tu Dahei, turning the scene into chaos.

The armored youth said, “Holy shit, is Tu Dahei that awesome? Should we try to get him too?”

There were a number of rookies who knew that they did not have the chance to form a team with Tu Dahei. Looking at the three adorable girls, they immediately prepared to request of them to form a team. As a ‘flower guardian’, Kevin immediately rejected them and said the last spot in the team was specially left for Tu Dahei.

The rookies could only walk towards the armored youth.



Although they did not have chicks, they looked rather extraordinary. At least, their outfits did not look simple.

Previously, they had been helplessly waiting, hoping for rookies to arrive. Now, with a few hundred rookies suddenly appearing, the armored youth immediately had a change of heart.

With so many resources, was there a need for them to fill the vacancy without any thought? They had to be picky!

The armored youth pretended to be aloof and criticized the rookies that came seeking for a team. They were flatly rejected on the belief that the next one would be better.

Heartless was also curious over what had happened as he pulled a person aside to inquire. Upon receiving the answer, he was dumbfounded.

At this moment, Kevin had also pulled a random rookie and asked him politely over the reason of Tu Dahei's sudden popularity. Obviously, the rookie did not pass the opportunity to brag, even if he was not the one being awesome.

Very soon, the great deed of how Tu Dahei went from a City Destroyer Villain to a City Destroyer Hero was described by the rookies that were soon to turn into brainless fans. At times they would embellish the story. Some even deliberately concealed the matter of using aphrodisiacs. They described how Tu Dahei darted through demonic beasts that filled the lands and eight guardian towers with laser beams, and how he destroyed the Demonic Tree

with a single strike, finally accomplishing the deed of destroying the Demon City alone.

Everyone stared confounded as they looked at Shi Xiaobai, who was still being surrounded by others and felt a tremor in their hearts.

Mozzie: “Heavens, Lord Tu Dahei is so cool!”

Mu Yuesheng: “It’s so his style. Always rendering people so speechless.”

Kevin: “Sigh, This Genius should never have compared with him. How can a human compete with a monster?”

Heartless: “Um, barely worthy of Little Sun.”

Sunless: “...”

After a while, Shi Xiaobai suddenly squeezed out of the crowd. The rookies were like abandoned women as they looked plaintively at Shi Xiaobai’s departure. Clearly, they had been rejected.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai did not care who he formed a team with. Although the saying goes ‘you should never fear having a god-like opponent but fear having a pig-like teammate’, Shi Xiaobai was confident that even with a pig-like teammate, he could still bring him posturing and flying in awesomeness.

However, since Shi Xiaobai had seen Mozzie and company, he easily guessed that they were waiting for him.

After Shi Xiaobai squeezed out of the crowd, he headed for the four. Mozzie immediately welcomed him with a giggle, “Lord Tu Dahei, you have finally come. We have waited till the flowers have wilted!”

“Sorry for keeping you so long.”

Shi Xiaobai said to the quartet before blinking his eyes and said, “Let’s quickly begin. Let’s find which door has ‘hell’ difficulty!”

Mozzie: “...”

The hundreds of rookies finally understood. No wonder Tu Dahei had rejected forming a team with them. If they were in his shoes, they would definitely choose the three adorable chicks.

However, what’s up with that blond youth?

Not only was he with the three adorable chicks, he could also be together with Tu Dahei in a team.

What sort of fucking dog-shit luck did he have?

The hundreds of rookies immediately stared jealously at Kevin. If

gazes could kill, Kevin would have been riddled with a thousand holes.

Kevin felt the stress from being stared at, so he hurriedly said, “Let’s quickly begin!”

...

The thousand stone doors each had a different glyph on their doors. However, most of the glyphs were in a shape of a creature. Occasionally, it would be a weapon or a mysterious design.

Although the assessment program said that they would be informed of the difficulty only after entering the stone door, it did not mean that they could not attempt to figure out what the difficulty of the stone door was.

The glyphs were all different, but they were very likely to have information that hinted at the difficulty.

Shi Xiaobai observed the glyphs on each stone door at an appropriate speed.

Kevin, who was being stared at intently, was rendered speechless as he said, “Are you really looking for the ‘hell’ difficulty stone door?”

What a joke. The others would shun “hell”-difficulty stone doors out of fear, because the moment they encountered it, it meant that

they had to choose to exit it. As such, they would waste ten minutes.

Shi Xiaobai silently nodded as he meticulously observed the glyphs on every stone door.

The higher the difficulty, the more likely the points gained were higher. The quartet had waited for him, resulting in them falling behind on their points. As such, finding the ‘hell’ difficulty stone door was pertinent. Right, it had nothing to do with how ‘hell’ difficulty was more challenging.

Kevin sighed in exasperation. Once Shi Xiaobai made his decision, it was impossible to pull him away from it even with ten buffaloes.

Mozzie followed Lord Shi Xiaobai like a blind sheep, while Sunless and Mu Yuesheng were in no hurry. The others followed behind Shi Xiaobai and began observing the glyphs on the stone doors.

The hundreds of rookies had also formed their own teams during this period of time. Nearly four hundred people formed nearly eighty teams. All of them randomly chose a stone door.

Moments later, the number of people was dwindling. Shi Xiaobai finally sighed and said, “This King has noticed how there are four different kinds of designs amongst these glyphs. However, it’s hard to tell which design represents which difficulty. We should try all four designs!”

Mozzie and company were astonished. The three of them were still observing the doors, but regardless of how they looked, every door's glyphs were different. There was no pattern to them. Yet, Shi Xiaobai had already figured out the four designs?

Kevin anxiously said, "Then let's quickly try. Let's do this!"

Shi Xiaobai frowned. "This King has a feeling that has 'easy' difficulty."

Kevin waved his hand and said, "An illusion! It must be an illusion. Look at the ferocious tiger engraved in the glyph. Look at how vivid it is. It must be 'medium' difficulty or higher!"

Saying that, Kevin thrust open the stone door. The door led to darkness as a mysterious aura emanated out. They could not help but hold their breaths.

With the door opened, what was done was done.

Shi Xiaobai did not say another word and took the lead to step into the stone door. The others followed him.

The moment they stepped through the stone door, the authoritative voice boomed in their minds.

"Welcome to Stone Door #173 [Ogre Forest]. This stone door's

difficulty is ‘easy’. Please kill the guardian BOSS [Gargantuan Ogre].”

...

# Chapter 249: What Posture Is Teaching And Learning

---

From outside the stone door, all they saw was darkness. However, the moment they stepped into the stone door, they immediately entered a world where the sun shone gaily.

They were surrounded by emerald trees, an idyllic scene.

Shi Xiaobai glanced at Kevin with a deadpan expression.

Kevin dryly laughed and said, “Your intuition is truly accurate. This door is actually the ‘easy’ difficulty. It was my fault, alright!?”

Shi Xiaobai gave Kevin a look of disdain before turning to the three girls and said, “Since it’s the ‘easy’ difficulty, let’s hurry. We should finish it as fast as we can.”

Upon hearing this, Mozzie blinked her eyes in an adorable fashion. Sunless and Mu Yuesheng gave a serious nod.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly raised his right hand as a creamy white light shone from his palm. Slowly, a pure white sword appeared, emanating an intense aura of light.

The quartet was immediately startled.

Sunless’ eyes stared unblinkingly at the pure white sword in Shi



Xiaobai's hand as she muttered, "This sword..."

Mozzie's eyes lit up and said, "Is this the Holy Radiance the other rookies were talking about that you used ten thousand points to exchange for?"

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head. This sword was Holy Radiance. After exchanging for it, he was able to bring it away from the second level and apparently be able to bring it to the mortal world. From the looks of it, Holy Radiance was one of the treasures of the training ground.

Holy Radiance was in fact constructed out of the purest powers of light. Shi Xiaobai discovered that his King's right hand was able to transform Holy Radiance into the power of light and store the power of the light into his right hand.

In this way, it was convenient for him to bring it around. Furthermore, his right hand was filled with the power of light. It made him feel extremely comfortable.

After Shi Xiaobai drew out Holy Radiance, he surveyed his surroundings. He noticed that dense forests lined both sides of the path, while there was a mountain cliff behind him. There was only a wide forest trail in front of him.

There was only one path. In that case, the Gargantuan Ogre was just in front.

“Let’s go and quickly settle it!”

Shi Xiaobai waved his hand and led the people forward. The other four immediately followed closely behind.

The forest trail was extremely quiet, but the air was very fresh. Occasionally, there would be beautiful chirping that sounded like the pearly chimes from heaven. It felt like they were in paradise.

However, less than a minute’s walk brought them to an end of the forest trail which ended at a sharp cliff.

They quickly came to the edge of the path and looked down. Immediately, their pupils constricted.

Beneath them was a large valley. The brown land stretched out for miles, and in this large valley, there were numerous blue ogres walking around. Their dense numbers made them look like crawling ants.

In the innermost corner of the valley, there was a large ogre standing there proudly. It held a gigantic mace, and its two heads were ferocious-looking. It appeared very frightening.

This was the guardian regiment and guardian BOSS of Ogre Forest?

There was only one forest trail and a gigantic valley. This appeared to be everything Ogre Forest had, so in a certain sense,

this map was truly at the ‘easy’ level.

But...

Kevin said with a wry smile, “There are so many ogres and they are no doubt an army. This is ‘easy’ mode?”

Mozzie clicked her tongue and said, “How terrifying. If we accidentally fall into the valley, we will be overwhelmed in an instant!”

Before Mozzie was done with her words, a figure suddenly leaped down into the valley. The group of ogres immediately growled angrily as they surrounded the figure.

“Lord Shi Xiaobai!”

Mozzie screamed.

Shi Xiaobai had jumped down to the valley without a word.

But very quickly, Sunless and Mu Yuesheng followed closely behind by jumping down.

However a stunning scene unfolded. With Holy Radiance in hand, Shi Xiaobai charged towards the ogres. A pure white fiery crossbeam slashed out. The herded ogres immediately cried out and following that, Shi Xiaobai sent slash after slash as though he

was slashing through straw. A single strike caused one or several ogres to fall to the ground. Occasionally, a wok-shaped sword beam would fall to the ground, or a fiery crossbeam would shoot out. From time to time, the ogres would crash to the ground with a cry.

Sunless brandished her silver sword at amazingly fast speeds. Every sword beam contained terrifying destructive power. Accompanying her strikes was the howling of winds. Her sword beams killed the frenzied ogres while the sword winds dispersed the herded ogres. Dressed in an azure dress, she was like a fairy that darted through all the ogres that filled the valley like a sharp azure sword beam.

The icy-blue electric bolts around Mu Yuesheng buzzed chaotically as the icy-blue bolts snaked to the ogres. As the buzzing sound of electric currents constantly sounded, the ogres turned black from the electrocution and fell to the ground. With a swipe of her right hand, an electro-cannon would shoot out, resulting in the sounds of explosions to appear one after another. As she strolled through, swaths of ogres fell to the ground.

Mozzie and Kevin gasped. They were extremely shocked. The trio were just too powerful. They were not on the same level.

The duo's eyes suddenly turned somewhat bleak. They just needed to watch this battle by the side. Although being able to cling on to such powerhouses was great, they still felt somewhat upset for some reason.

Mozzie suddenly jumped down into the valley. After staggering a few steps, she struggled to run forward. Seeing an isolated ogre,

she punched it. The ogre retreated a few steps but did not collapse. Regaining its footing, it charged at Mozzie.

After engaging in a dogfight for a few moments, the ogre fell to the ground. Mozzie's eyes suddenly turned red.

Not far away, Kevin had used Black Bear Dominating Palm to send an ogre flying. However, he was nearly hit by an ogre's mace. After miserably rolling on the ground a few times, he dodged with great difficulty. His expression was extremely bitter.

And at this moment, Shi Xiaobai and company had already reached the innermost part of the valley. Behind them were piles of fallen ogres. The three of them had managed to clear the entire valley of ogres!

The Gargantuan Ogre roared angrily and waved its gigantic mace and smashed it down at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai easily dodged it and charged at the Gargantuan Ogre!

Sunless followed closely behind Shi Xiaobai, and both of them raised their swords simultaneously.

An icy-blue bolt of lightning suddenly shot from afar and struck the Gargantuan Ogre's body. Like an icy-blue chain, it bound the Gargantuan Ogre's body. Immediately, beams of icy-blue bolts shot at it incessantly. They began forming chains that bound the Gargantuan Ogre's entire body.

With the Gargantuan Ogre completely bound, its lifted right arm could not fall. It furiously roared but there was a trace of fear in it.

Shi Xiaobai and Sunless had already arrived in front of the Gargantuan Ogre. The two suddenly diverged in their trajectories, and in a left and right pincer attack, they slashed out!

A white and a blue sword beam struck the Gargantuan Ogre from both sides. Like two diagonal lines, a cross formed on the Gargantuan Ogre's body as the white and blue colors merged into one, producing a combination as beautiful as amber.

“Roar!”

The Gargantuan Ogre let out a deafening cry before slamming into the ground!

The Holy Radiance transformed into a creamy white light and sunk into Shi Xiaobai's palm. Sunless also sheathed her silver sword back into the scabbard at her waist. The two looked each other in the eye and simultaneously said,

“Kun Peng Sword Technique?”

Shi Xiaobai had used the Kun Peng mantra to grasp the Kun Peng Sword Technique. Sunless had learned from the ‘Kun Peng Sword Manual’ and from the Kun Peng Sword Technique the elderly God of Swords had demonstrated to her. Both parties could sense the

sword intent in the Kun Peng Sword Technique from each other's swordplay, but they realized that their Kun Peng Sword Techniques were completely different.

The opening passage of the 'Kun Peng Sword Manual' wrote: "Cultivating the Kun Peng Sword Technique is divided into three forms—the lower form observes sword moves, the middle form gains self-enlightenment from sword manuals, the upper form gains insight from the mantra."

The three forms were thought to be three different levels of the same sword move, but it was actually three different Kun Peng Sword Techniques?

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai finally understood what it meant by 'the upper form gains insight from the mantra'.

What Sunless had understood was the 'lower form observes sword moves' and the 'middle form gains self-enlightenment from sword manuals'.

If the two of them combined the Kun Peng Sword Techniques that they had comprehended together, what sort of scene would it be? If the three forms did not refer to different levels, but three different Kun Peng Sword Techniques, only by merging the three Kun Peng Sword Techniques together would restore the Kun Peng Sword Technique to its true form.

The two of them guessed at the possibility. Without the need for words, just an exchange of looks allowed them to read each other's

minds.

The phrase—teach and learn!

Don't ask me what posture teach and learn<sup>1</sup> is. I don't know either!

At this moment, a door suddenly appeared in the stone cliff in front of them. The authoritative voice boomed,

“Congratulations on killing the guardian BOSS. Everyone obtains 50 points for conquering Stone Gate #173 [Ogre Forest]!”

They had cleared the ‘easy’ stone door just like that!

As Shi Xiaobai said, he quickly settled it!

As Mozzie and company walked over, Shi Xiaobai turned to glance at them. Just as he wanted to say something to them, time suddenly came to a halt.

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice resounded in his mind. A few lines of black text gradually materialized in front of him. It had only been a short while, but the Absolute Choice had once again appeared!?





[ Choice 1: In twelve hours, raise the Kun Peng Sword Technique's proficiency level from Familiarized Proficiency to the Exemplary Mastery realm (D-level reward) ]

[ Choice 2: In twelve hours, raise the Massage Technique of God's proficiency level from Familiarized Proficiency to the Exemplary Mastery realm (D-level reward) ]

(Gentle Reminder: This choice is considered a “daily-style choice” where there is only one opportunity after choosing. Successfully completing the choice's mission will yield a reward, and failure will lead to punishment of the same level.)

“Make your choice, youth!”

# Chapter 250: I Feel We Will Be Doomed Sooner Or Later!

---

The ‘easy’ difficulty stone door was not as easy as they had imagined. Although the ogres were not too strong, they were great in number. If it were any other rookies, trying to clear it would still take them a very long time.

However, Shi Xiaobai, Sunless and Mu Yuesheng were no ordinary rookies. As they traversed forward, it was as though they were harvesting straws. They managed to finish all the ogres in a few minutes. The Gargantuan Ogre was also easily insta-killed.

The scene was enough to shock most rookies. Furthermore, Mozzie and Kevin were among the rookies that were below average.

Even though they knew of the gap that existed, when they had a visual comparison, they still felt a bitterness. This bitterness was much better than feeling numb. However, whether this bitterness would transform into motivation or slowly transform into numbness would depend on each individual’s will, whether a heart that thirsted to become stronger existed.

“Do the three of you...want to become stronger?”

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai said to them in all solemnness.

The direction in which he looked at was Mozzie, Kevin and Mu

Yuesheng who were walking towards him.

The three were slightly taken aback. This sentence immediately gave them complicated thoughts. They were unsure how to answer immediately.

Shi Xiaobai continued, “This King once said that our goal is for all four to enter the top ten. However, This King now feels a bit of pressure. This is because the assessment program is basically competitive. And your present strength is not strong enough to enter the top ten in such a competition. All of you...are not strong enough!”

The trio was stunned. This was the first time they saw Shi Xiaobai reveal such a serious expression.

What Shi Xiaobai said at the airport was something he treated seriously?

Furthermore, to get into the top ten, describing them as not strong enough was too great of a compliment for them! Maybe Mu Yuesheng might still have a chance, but for Mozzie and Kevin, top ten was a rift they could not bridge. The two of them had never thought of entering the top ten, not even in their dreams.

“But now, an opportunity is placed in front of you. An opportunity that will allow you to become strong in a short period of time, an opportunity that will allow you to approach those top ten spots. Are you willing to seize it?”

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai said this.

The three looked up in surprise.

An opportunity to become strong?

Shi Xiaobai said solemnly, “This King has a way to make you stronger in a short period of time, but it would be very arduous and tiring. It would even be very dangerous. How strong you want to be depends on your will and resoluteness. If your will is firm enough, it is not impossible to become strong enough to squeeze into the top ten. Now, This King shall place this opportunity before you. It is your choice to seize it.”

Mozzie stared at Shi Xiaobai blankly and muttered, “There’s truly a way to become that strong?”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, “Of course it’s true. When has This King boasted?”

Kevin immediately rolled his eyes.

Do you think your boasting isn’t enough?

Kevin took a deep breath. He knew very well that Shi Xiaobai would not make a joke at such a moment in time. Shi Xiaobai had clearly noticed the problem with his and Mozzie’s state of mind. He truly thirsted the chance given by Shi Xiaobai to become stronger.

Kevin hesitated for a moment before his gaze turned firm. He asked, “When can we begin?”

Shi Xiaobai answered, “Immediately.”

Mozzie also said resolutely, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, I believe in you. I want to become stronger as well!”

Mu Yuesheng did not say a word, but the resolute faith in her brown pupils was the best answer.

“Alright, we shall head to the next stone door and begin This King’s plan of becoming stronger!”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head in satisfaction. Becoming strong was not something that was just all talk. Pulling saplings to make them grow more quickly was an unorthodox manner. To become strong, one needed to suffer and stay firm. There was a need to have a thirst for becoming strong and the will to persist on resolutely.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai had placed that opportunity in front of them. He did not say any words of incitement or encouragement. Regardless of the choice, everyone had to choose it for themselves and be responsible for it. This was something Shi Xiaobai had no choice but to learn from the Absolute Choice.

Especially with such an important choice, they could only make their own choices so that they would never regret.

...

...

The five left Ogre Forest and returned to the crystalline ground. At this moment, there were few people that had yet to enter the stone doors. Occasionally, there may be teams exiting the doors, but they would make the best use of the time to head for the next door.

The moment the quintet came out, they saw four people. They were the four youths dressed in strange outfits.

The armored youth said in astonishment, “So fast? All of you entered for less than ten minutes and you have already cleared a stone door?”

Kevin was equally astonished as he asked, “Why are all of you still four?”

The armored youth immediately gave an awkward smile. The youth beside him immediately grumbled, “This fucker was trying his best to be picky and rejected one after another. He kept insisting that there will be a better one after the next to the point of no one coming in the end. Those rookies that came up also happened to form their teams. So what do you think?”

Kevin immediately felt a dark cloud over his head as he was

rendered speechless. “Well, all the best.”

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had already chosen a stone door. On the stone door, a ferocious dragon was carved on it.

Kevin said in alarm, “This door isn’t ‘hell’-difficulty, right?”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, “It’s ‘medium’ difficulty.”

Kevin immediately said, “Impossible. The door has a dragon carved on it, so it can’t be simple. It’s at least the ‘hard’ difficulty. This Genius even feels that this door is ‘hell’ difficulty!”

Kevin obviously did not believe Shi Xiaobai’s words. After all, Shi Xiaobai was a crazy demon that courted death. The door he chose was definitely one of ‘hell’ difficulty. Kevin looked away and was about to push a door beside him open.

However, at this moment, Shi Xiaobai had already pushed open the door with the dragon glyph. Without any hesitation, he stepped in.

“Fuck, I feel like by following Shi Xiaobai, we will be doomed sooner or later!”

Kevin could not help but curse.

...

“Welcome to Stone Door 225 [Goblin Cave]. This stone door’s difficulty is ‘medium’. Please kill the guardian BOSS [Golden Goblin].”

Deep in a cave, there were two rows of flames lined along the cave’s side walls. Although the cave was rather dark, it was still bright enough due to the flames. When the quintet walked through the stone door, they arrived in this cave. Immediately, the authoritative voice boomed in their minds.

Just as Shi Xiaobai said, this was a stone door of ‘medium’ difficulty.

Kevin immediately gave an embarrassed laugh. “Shi Xiaobai, your intuition is really accurate. Ha...ha.”

Mozzie unhappily grunted. “Who just said that following Lord Shi Xiaobai would result in them being doomed sooner or later? Hmph, Lord Shi Xiaobai is so reliable!”

Kevin said with a placating smile, “Wasn’t I just suspecting that Shi Xiaobai would lead us to hell? Didn’t he keep mentioning that he wanted to find the stone door with ‘hell’-difficulty?”

Upon hearing this, Mozzie immediately gave a surprised expression and turned to look at Shi Xiaobai. She asked, “Lord Shi Xiaobai?”



Why did he suddenly change his mind and choose a ‘medium’ difficulty stone door?

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, “Because for this level, the three of us will not do a thing. Everything will be left to you two. Isn’t ‘medium’ difficulty just perfect? Or do you think ‘hard’ or ‘hell’ difficulty is more challenging?”

# Chapter 251: But It's Too Comfortable!

---

When Shi Xiaobai said this, everyone was alarmed.

Mozzie pointed at herself and Kevin in disbelief and said, “Just the two of us?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, “Yes, just the two of you!”

Kevin was also dumbfounded as he loudly said, “Are you telling me, Mozzie and I will be clearing this level ourselves and the three of you will not do a thing?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded once again and said, “Yea!”

“Are you joking?”

Kevin frowned and said, “Let's not talk about whether the two of us are able to clear this level first. Even if we can...it would take us a very long time. We were already falling behind. Wouldn't this be making the situation worse?”

“This King is not joking.”

Shi Xiaobai's expression turned serious once again as he said, “As This King said, it's an opportunity to become stronger! It won't only be this stone door. There will be two, three, or even ten or more stone doors that will be left to the two of you to clear. This

will go on until the both of you become strong enough! True combat is the best way to become stronger. This King will be by your side and figure out your shortcomings in true combat. Furthermore, This King is absolutely confident to assure you...that your psionic power and stamina will not run out!”

Kevin and Mozzie’s eyes immediately widened. This was the so-called opportunity to become stronger? It was so fucking simple and brutal...but it had to be said that such actual combat was indeed the most pragmatic way of cultivation. The final results depended on their individual will. If Shi Xiaobai could use a certain way to ensure that their psionic power and stamina did not run out, this was truly a very, very valuable opportunity.

But...

Mozzie softly said, “This is too unfair for all of you. The two of us will definitely be very slow at clearing the level. We have already fallen behind by so much. We can’t hold you back...”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said confidently, “There is no need to worry about falling back. Later on, we can just challenge a few ‘hell’ difficulty stone doors to chase up. Furthermore, so what if we cannot chase up? When the Level Lord descends, This King will take the initiative to finish it! These are problems you do not need to consider. Now, you need to ask yourselves if you thirst to become stronger and how intense this thirst is. You need to know if it is enough to allow you to persist on.”

The process of becoming stronger was painful. Whether they could enjoy adversity depended on the thirst in their hearts giving

them joy while becoming strong.

Shi Xiaobai possessed an intense longing to become strong. As a result, every time his strength increased, he would obtain a joy that was enough to make him forget and overcome the painful process of the experience. As for how intense the thirst Mozzie and Kevin had, Shi Xiaobai did not know. He did not want to force the duo, but instead gave them a chance to choose.

Mozzie's eyes slowly gathered a strange glimmer. She obviously wanted to become stronger. This thirst might not be considered intense to start with, but ever since she was defeated by the female whopper and having seen the distance between Lord Shi Xiaobai, Sunless and Mu Yuesheng from her, this thirst suddenly became extremely intense. The unbearable feeling she had was because she greatly desired it to the point of being lost and confused.

And at this moment, Shi Xiaobai was pointing at a clear path in front of her. Although the path was filled with adversities, it was filled with light!

However, wasn't doing so a bit too selfish?

At this moment, a hand gently grasped her hand. Mozzie turned around and saw Sunless standing beside her with an expressionless face.

“All the best.”

Sunless, who was ineloquent, only said the three words softly.

Her voice may be very soft, but it struck heavily on Mozzie's heart. They had only gotten to know each other for a few hours, but she had already treated her as a friend that she was willing to selflessly help.

She was a person with few words and expressions. Even her emotions seemed few, but in fact, she was more serious with every friendship she had, right?

At this moment, Mu Yuesheng also chimed in, "Mozzie, don't worry. I'm not afraid of falling behind!"

The trio did not have any complaints about them holding everyone back. Mozzie suddenly choked up as she nodded heavily, "Alright!"

After a few moments of silence, Kevin said, "Thank you!"

Shi Xiaobai immediately said with a smile, "Very good. The both of you begin preparing. The process might be very arduous, but you just need to persist on and there will be great improvements."

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai suddenly turned to look at Mu Yuesheng. He said, "This King believes it's time for you to break through to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm."

Since Shi Xiaobai said that he would make all four of them enter

the top ten, he naturally could not be discriminatory. However, for Mu Yuesheng, raising her psionic cultivation realm was of top priority.

Mu Yuesheng was surprised but her eyes suddenly burst out with an intense glow. She said, “You have a method?”

Following that, she remembered something as Mu Yuesheng’s face slightly blushed.

Shi Xiaobai seriously said, “This King’s Massage Technique of God can not only temporarily improve your Mind Expanse, it can even have a certain chance of sending you into a deep meditative state!”

With him saying this, the other four were taken aback. Raising one’s Mind Expanse was already incredibly amazing, but wasn’t having a certain chance of entering a deep meditative state too exaggerated?

However, they all knew that Shi Xiaobai would not joke on such matters. Although the words he said made them find him very ‘arrogant’, but he had always proven himself with his actions in reality. This made them feel like they had to seriously listen to what Shi Xiaobai had to say.

Mu Yuesheng’s eyes were filled with a struggle. She truly did not wish to miss this golden opportunity, but Shi Xiaobai’s Massage Technique of God was toxic. Even if she was not a shy girl with a skin as thin as paper, she had a basic sense of shame!

Mozzie understood Mu Yuesheng's conundrum. Looking at Sunless beside her, her eyes suddenly lit up. She said, "Sound cannot be transmitted in vacuum! As long as a vacuum wall is produced, sound will be isolated!"

When Mu Yuesheng heard this, her eyes lit up. Sunless' vacuum superpower was still fresh in her mind. If they could isolate her voice, and only Shi Xiaobai could hear it, it did not seem such an unacceptable matter.

Mu Yuesheng's face blushed slightly as she glanced sideways at Shi Xiaobai. He had a deadpan expression and looked his usual self. She thought to herself if this guy was really that innocent and pure or if he was truly a little pervert deep down. Judging by his behavior, he was the former, but looking at his actions, it was very likely the latter.

If it was the former, it was alright. But if it was the latter, wouldn't she be sending herself to the wolves?

However, how could she truly miss the opportunity of increasing her Mind Expanse and the chance of entering a deep meditative state?

Mu Yuesheng looked at Sunless and whispered, "Then, I'm counting on you?"

Sunless nodded her head. Although she was not sure what was happening, conjuring a vacuum wall was extremely simple for her.

After a moment, after Mozzie's urging, the trio quickly came to the corner at a bend of the cave. Sunless set up a vacuum barrier to isolate sound.

In the dark cave, only Shi Xiaobai and Mu Yuesheng could be seen under the dim light.

Shi Xiaobai walked towards Mu Yuesheng and said, "Don't worry. This King's Massage Technique of God not only has excellent effects, it's also rather comfortable."

Mu Yuesheng's face turned bitter.

Your massage technique is good in every way.

But it's just too comfortable!

...



# Chapter 252: Fear Of Everyone Not Being Able To Replace The Lost Nutrients Faster Than They Can Be Gained

---

Although the Massage Technique of God was very powerful, it had to follow basic principles. For example, for the improvement of one's Mind Expanse, it could only improve it temporarily. Letting Mu Yuesheng enter a deep meditative state was also not a simple matter. Not only was the success rate low, but it needed the massage to last for a considerable period of time.

Furthermore, the temples were the places where nerves were fairly concentrated. Words could not describe the feelings when the Massage Technique of God was applied to these spots.

Hence, what followed and the intricacies will not be described in detail for fear of everyone not being able to replace the lost nutrients faster than they can be gained. A simple sentence shall summarize it—Mu Yuesheng's throat turned hoarse.

Finally, after fifteen minutes of massage, Mu Yuesheng very fortunately entered a deep meditative state!

Shi Xiaobai's Massage Technique of God also obtained quite a sizable improvement. With the sudden appearance of the Absolute Choice, Shi Xiaobai should have reasonably chosen [ Choice 1: In twelve hours, raise the Kun Peng Sword Technique's proficiency level from Familiarized Proficiency to the Exemplary Mastery realm (D-level reward) ]. This was because he was prepared to teach and learn the Kun Peng Sword Technique with Sunless.

Furthermore, he could use the opportunities provided by the stone doors to improve his Kun Peng Sword Technique.

However, Shi Xiaobai had noticed Mozzie and Kevin's dejected expressions. After thinking carefully for a few moments, he guessed at the reason. Finally he chose [ Choice 2: In twelve hours, raise the Massage Technique of God's proficiency level from Familiarized Proficiency to the Exemplary Mastery realm (D-level reward) ]. He wanted to use the Massage Technique of God's ability to enhance Mozzie and Kevin's endurance, so that they could engage in actual combat without any worries. This was Shi Xiaobai's choice.

This choice was in fact very risky. This was because even with the Massage Technique of God, the hardships and sufferings during the process of actual combat would not greatly decrease. Mozzie and Kevin's thirst for becoming strong and their will determined how long they could persist on. It also determined if Shi Xiaobai's Massage Technique of God would have a chance of being improved to the Exemplary Mastery realm.

In contrast, cultivating the Kun Peng Sword Technique was much simpler. It was also much more favorable for Shi Xiaobai. However, Shi Xiaobai had chosen choice 2 without much deliberation. This was because this was a choice that he would not regret in the future.

Shi Xiaobai contentedly turned around the corner and Mozzie and company immediately came up to him. Mozzie's eyes were filled with anticipation, while Sunless remained expressionless. Kevin felt envy and jealousy when it came to Shi Xiaobai, but he

could not help but secretly worship him. Shi Xiaobai was the only person who managed to enjoy such nice welfare while still making chicks think he was very pure.

Mozzie walked in front of Shi Xiaobai and hurriedly asked, “How is it? Was it a success?”

Shi Xiaobai said in high spirits, “Of course. How can This King’s Massage Technique of God fail? A deep meditative state is definitely a success!”

“Wow! Lord Shi Xiaobai, you are truly amazing!”

Mozzie immediately cheered and threw her arms around Shi Xiaobai to hug him. Tiptoeing, she kissed Shi Xiaobai on the cheek. She was so happy as though she was the one who had entered a deep meditative state.

Shi Xiaobai calmly rubbed his cheeks of the saliva and said with a sigh, “It took fifteen minutes. It was quite long.”

Kevin’s mouth twitched as he told himself in his heart, normal state of mind, normal state of mind...

Shi Xiaobai turned to look at Sunless and said, “Sorry, This King will not be able to have a sword exchange with you for the time being. However, we would have plenty of time, wouldn’t we?”

Sunless immediately nodded. There was a subtle luster in her

dull eyes.

Shi Xiaobai whispered, “A person in a deep meditative state needs protection. Can you...”

Sunless nodded her head once again without hesitation as she turned around to head to the area of the cave where Mu Yuesheng was.

Mozzie looked at Sunless’ back and said softly, “Sister Sunless is so nice. She’s so beautiful and also a super rookie. She’s also so kind...”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head gently. He had a very good impression of this girl that spoke very little. Yes, he had great interest especially in her sword techniques and her way of the sword.

...

Shi Xiaobai and the other two proceeded forward in the dark cave. The Goblin Cave’s layout was clearly more complicated than Ogre Forest. Along the way, there were several forks in the path. By leaving a tiny mark, Shi Xiaobai used his intuition to proceed forward.

After a few more bends, they suddenly heard delicate footsteps ahead. The trio slowed down and saw four goblins patrolling around the corner.

The four goblins had dark green skin. They had sharp ears and wide concave noses and red eyes. They looked extremely ugly. They were as short as dwarves and were extremely skinny. In their hands were frightening hammers.

Shi Xiaobai whispered, “Mozzie, these four shall be yours.”

Mozzie immediately nodded. She was still confident of beating four goblins.

Kevin gaped. He was feeling somewhat worried but he eventually did not say a word.

Mozzie took a deep breath and used her psionic power to construct a psionic warhammer. This warhammer had a long handle and a huge hammerhead. Brandishing it around probably used quite a lot of strength.

Before slimming down, Mozzie had gone down the build route of a Strength-Defense hybrid warrior. The most proficient weapon of hers was the warhammer. However, after she slimmed down, she felt that the warhammer did not suit her adorable image. Hence, she had constantly refused to use it.

She had fantasized of changing her build route. She felt that with her present body, wouldn't it be most suitable for her to become an agile assassin?

However, such transitions were difficult in practice. It was impossible to do so in a short period of time. Furthermore, Mozzie discovered that her strength did not decrease after she slimmed down. Instead, it was as though her strength had increased a tiny bit from before.

Mozzie helplessly thought of the problem of her bloodline. Due to her possession of a special bloodline, she had to eat more than others from a young age. Her strength was also greater than the average person. And now, her special bloodline did not weaken because of her petite body. Instead, it had a greater impact on her.

This Mosquito is destined to go down the path of a Strength build!

Mozzie sighed in her heart and finally resigned herself to fate. She decided to cast aside the burden of being an adorable chick and restore her domineering nature as a fat chick!

“There’s no need to conserve psionic power,” Shi Xiaobai reminded her.

Mozzie nodded her head heavily. She obviously would follow Lord Shi Xiaobai’s instructions!

Mozzie raised her warhammer and turned around the corner. The four dark-green goblins immediately noticed her and let out high-pitched cries. With hammers in hand, they charged at Mozzie.

“Eat my hammer!”

Mozzie thundered charmingly as she swung her warhammer. A surging power burst forward as a white layer of light suffused from her warhammer. She charged straight at the goblin right in front and slammed downwards!

The howling winds tore through the narrow space. The strike was extremely fast as it struck the goblin. The goblin was instantly sent flying and slammed heavily into the stone walls. With a loud ‘boom’, the entire cave shook gently!

Half of the goblin’s body was smashed into pulp by that single hammer strike!

# Chapter 253: Lord Shi Xiaobai Can Massage Wherever He Wants

---

Kevin stared dumbfounded. He shouted ‘holy shit’ in astonishment. The power of the strike was more than terrifying. It was all from the strength of her physique. She could be described as a humanoid monster!

This strike was produced by the beauty that looked as cute as a kitten in front of him!?

When the other three goblins saw their companion die, they immediately let out furious and terrified screams and charged at Mozzie.

Mozzie appeared rather skilled with the warhammer. She had not overused her strength in her first strike, so she could quickly recover and send out her second strike at an extremely fast speed. Immediately, another goblin was smashed into pulp.

However, the remaining two goblins took advantage of this moment to charge at Mozzie without any heed for their lives. They slammed their hammers angrily at her!

“Magical Silver Shield!”

Mozzie conjured a dark silver shield in a timely fashion. This shield was a B-class defensive skill, Magical Silver Shield. Mozzie had already mastered it to the Exemplary Mastery realm, and it



was the skill that gave her claim to fame from her division!

The goblins' hammers slammed into the Magical Silver Shield like rocks striking steel. Not the slightest tremor was produced, so it was evident how strong the defense was!

Mozzie jumped at the opportunity to swing her warhammer and struck both goblins. It caused the cave to tremble and instantly she obtained a double kill!

Kevin was shocked seeing all of this from the side. He believed that Mozzie was the weakest among the four, but now, after seeing Mozzie's alarming strength when she used her warhammer and her extremely hard Magical Silver Shield, Kevin suddenly felt unsure of it!

Mozzie was smiling as she walked back. Coming in front of Shi Xiaobai, her expression suddenly stiffened, as though she was a good student waiting for constructive criticism. She asked softly, "How was it? Lord Shi Xiaobai."

Shi Xiaobai hesitated slightly and said, "Your strength is not enough."

Kevin was immediately unhappy hearing this. He questioned, "Are you joking? This strength is still not enough?"

Mozzie gave Kevin a stare and she said obediently to Shi Xiaobai, "Lord Shi Xiaobai must have a reason behind his words!"

Kevin curled his mouth and looked at Shi Xiaobai and said, “This Genius wants to hear what reason you have!”

“This King always convinces people with reason!”

Shi Xiaobai looked at Mozzie and said, “When you wave your warhammer, according to This King’s observations, you have power in your body that far exceeds the power during the waving of your warhammer. This shouldn’t be because you did not use your full strength, but because this power is restricted. You can only use a tiny portion of it. This King believes that the amount of power you extract is far from enough!”

After Shi Xiaobai said this, Mozzie fell into a momentary daze before raising her thumb and said, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, you are really godly!”

Kevin was stunned silent. Power in her body? He could see this with the naked eye? This was really like Shi Xiaobai.

Mozzie hesitated for a moment and said, “This has likely got to do with my bloodline. My family clan has inherited a tiny amount of Titan bloodline. My bloodline’s purity is higher than others, so I’ve had incredible strength since I was young. I also had a great appetite. However, my father once said that our clan’s bloodline is too thin, so we can only use a tiny portion of the Titan bloodline’s strength. Lord Shi Xiaobai, the power in my body you mentioned should be the bloodline’s strength.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised when he heard this. Speaking of bloodline, he recalled of Chen Lingcun's golden white holy dragon race bloodline. Apparently, Chen Lingcun's bloodline purity was extremely high, so high that he could transform into a dragon. As for Mozzie, she had the bloodline of a Titan. However, from the sound of it, their clan only inherited a wisp of the Titan bloodline?

Kevin said, "If it's a bloodline problem, then there's no other way. The purity of one's bloodline is innate. How much that can be used is limited. No one has a way around that..."

Shi Xiaobai firmly said, "No, This King has a way!"

Kevin stared at him and immediately wanted to rebuke, but with a thought, he swallowed his words back. He had already been smacked in the face by Shi Xiaobai so many times that he had learned his lesson.

Mozzie also exclaimed, "Lord Shi Xiaobai, are you telling me you have the means of improving my bloodline purity?"

"There is nothing This King can't do!"

Shi Xiaobai said matter-of-factly, "To just raise your bloodline purity, there's only a need to let your Titan blood cells to actively divide."

Kevin immediately burst out, "Let blood cells actively divide?"

How do you do this?”

Mozzie was much calmer. She looked at Shi Xiaobai with anticipative looks.

Shi Xiaobai said, “There is no problem in this world that the Massage Technique of God cannot solve.”

Kevin was surprised.

It was that Massage Technique of God again?

Mozzie’s eyes lit up. She believed in Shi Xiaobai’s Massage Technique of God more than anyone else.

If he could make her slim down overnight, increase one’s Mind Expanse, and allow them to enter a deep meditative state, what else was impossible?

Mozzie was decisive. Looking at Kevin, she said, “Go away. It’s best you go as far away as possible!”

Mozzie remembered of the terrifying aspect of the Massage Technique of God. She did not want to embarrass herself in front of others, so she hurriedly chased Kevin away.

Kevin opened his mouth and stared at Shi Xiaobai with a warning look. There was no other way about it. Although he liked Mozzie,

she did not have any relationship with him. They were not even considered friends at the moment. He did not have any standing to prevent this matter, so he could only shake his head and sigh. He walked to a corner and pretended to walk far away.

But in fact, Kevin was secretly standing at the corner. If Shi Xiaobai dared to do anything that would infuriate the masses and gods, he would definitely... Alright, he had no way of beating Shi Xiaobai. He would probably weep in front of him and plead with him to spare his lascivious claws.

Shi Xiaobai reached out his hands as he gripped Mozzie's shoulders. He said, "How pure your bloodline can be increased depends on how well your physique can handle it. From today onwards, pay attention to your body-tempering cultivation. This King shall first raise your bloodline purity to the limits of what you can handle."

Mozzie nodded and took a deep breath and said, "Begin then!"

Her resistance towards Shi Xiaobai's massage technique was not as intense as Mu Yuesheng. Firstly, she did not even have such stray thoughts, and secondly, after experiencing a full-body massage, she did not feel so reserved. However, she was still somewhat shy about her involuntary moans.

Mozzie was determined to use her willpower to hold back her moans.

Oh?

Why did it feel like...she could tolerate it!

As Mozzie felt the hands massaging her shoulders, she felt a comfort sweep through her body, but she could miraculously maintain her clarity of mind.

What was going on?

Was she already immune to it?

Mozzie was immediately overjoyed. This feeling was like not needing to worry about brain freeze while gorging on ice-cream!

Shi Xiaobai's hand quickly moved to a different spot. Mozzie was slightly startled but she did not say a word.

Who cares? Lord Shi Xiaobai can massage wherever he wants!

# Chapter 254: The Best Teacher, Shi Xiaobai

---

Three minutes later, the massage came to an end. Mozzie smiled happily for a while. She suddenly felt the power in her body increase by leaps and bounds. This was a very clear feeling. Did this mean that her bloodline purity had increased?

Mozzie felt her body surging with strength. All the psionic power that had been depleted was restored, so she was feeling slightly excited.

“It’s a success!”

Mozzie jumped in excitement.

Kevin heard the voice and immediately came out around the corner. While waiting, he felt truly devastated, but thankfully he did not hear a sound. It was as though nothing bad had happened.

Shi Xiaobai said, “It’s only a partial success. However, it hasn’t been increased to your limits. You need to first digest the increase in your strength for the time being before you can undergo the next massage. We will take it slow. It should be completed today.”

Kevin was stunned.

There would be a few more times?

Mozzie was extremely astonished. She felt that her strength had increased greatly, and this was still not the limit?

Mozzie hurriedly nodded and said, “Alright!”

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment before asking, “Have you grasped any hammer-based offensive skills?”

Mozzie answered, “Yes!”

Shi Xiaobai said, “Demonstrate it.”

Mozzie immediately nodded and conjured a psionic warhammer. The speed at which she constructed it was average, but the quality of the psionic warhammer looked pretty good. Her psionic construction proficiency was rather good.

“Quaking Mountain Strike!”

With a charming cry, Mozzie swung her warhammer in the air with all her strength. She was afraid that she would cause too great a disturbance that would stir the goblins in the cavern’s depths, as such, she did not slam the warhammer onto the walls or ground.

As the hammer struck the air, it was as though the air fractured with a sonic boom. Accompanying it were sparks. Its power was not to be underestimated.



This strike was a C-class offensive skill, ‘Quaking Mountain Strike’, and it had reached the Familiarized Proficiency realm. As she had abandoned cultivating any movement techniques, Mozzie had only focused on cultivating ‘Magical Silver Shield’ and ‘Quaking Mountain Strike’. Her proficiency in it was rather good.

Kevin was secretly horrified. He was now unsure if he could beat Mozzie.

After seeing this strike, Shi Xiaobai had a look of rumination. Moments later, he stretched out his right hand. As psionic power spewed out, a psionic warhammer was instantly constructed.

“So fast!” Mozzie exclaimed.

Shi Xiaobai swung the warhammer a few times. His eyes flashed as he raised the warhammer and swung it!

This swing did not seem to have used a lot of strength. It looked like any ordinary swing, but sparks bloomed wherever the warhammer swung. A red inferno burst out and landed on the path ahead. Instantly, a miniature sea of flames covered the ground!

Shi Xiaobai swung the warhammer again and slammed down. Again, the amount of strength used in this strike was not astonishing. It did not even cause the ground to tremble, but when this strike hit the ground, a circular flame burst out a few meters in front of where the warhammer landed. It struck a wall in front of him, and immediately sizzling sounds were heard. A wisp of white smoke poured out as though the wall had been corroded by

extremely high temperatures.

Mozzie and Kevin stared in astonishment. Out of these two strikes, one had produced a miniature sea of flames, while the other produced an intense high temperature that surged to the skies. It was extremely astounding.

Mozzie said with a stutter, “What is this strike?”

Shi Xiaobai said, “Kun Peng Hammer Technique!”

Kevin frowned slightly. “Such a powerful hammer technique should be rather famous, why has This Genius never heard of it?”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, “It’s a hammer technique self-created by This King.”

Kevin was appalled. “Self-created!?”

Mozzie widened her eyes and said, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, when did you create it?”

Did Lord Shi Xiaobai specially create two hammer-based offensive skills for her because he knew that she used a warhammer?

Shi Xiaobai answered, “This King did some rudimentary rehearsing in the head. It was the first time using it just now. It

still needs some modifications to perfect it.”

Shi Xiaobai had discovered that Mozzie’s hammer offensive skill was not up to standard when he saw her use her warhammer. As such, he came up with the thought of creating a hammer offensive skill or two for her.

After that, using the principles behind the Kun Peng Sword Technique, he altered the hammer technique. He rehearsed the Kun-Stewing Wok and Two Peng Grills in his mind. The speed at which Shi Xiaobai rehearsed was extremely fast. In a few minutes, he was able to do it dozens or even a few hundred times. Finally, he was able to create the Kun Peng Hammer Technique.

The Kun Peng Hammer Technique actually only used a fraction of the Kun Peng Sword Technique’s principles. Most of the other ideas were purely imagined by Shi Xiaobai. Hence, it was not too much of a problem calling it a self-creation.

Mozzie and Kevin were stunned. Even if these two offensive skills were not A-class, they were at least at the B-class. He had managed to create one in a few minutes, and even managed to succeed in practice?

This had never been seen or even heard of before!

Even though they had categorized Shi Xiaobai as a ‘monster’, they could not help but suspect if they were in a dream.

Following that, Shi Xiaobai practiced his Kun Peng Hammer Technique a few times before ending with a satisfied cry of perfection. The duo were already numb to it. Just a few actual practices was enough to allow him to successfully alter it. It may be fantasy to others, but for Shi Xiaobai, it was a trivial matter.

The reason why Shi Xiaobai had specially created and modified Kun Peng Hammer Technique was obvious, without any need for explanation.

Mozzie was extremely moved and felt somewhat disturbed. This was because the hammer technique looked rather complicated. She was somewhat afraid she would not be able to master it and not live up to Lord Shi Xiaobai's good intentions.

But very soon, Mozzie realized she had been overthinking things. This was because although the Kun Peng Hammer Technique was indeed complicated, it was easy to understand from Shi Xiaobai's explanation. Shi Xiaobai deconstructed it in easy steps with great detail, and taught her in a layman's way. He even guided her step by step. Even an idiot with learning disabilities would understand from his teachings.

Shi Xiaobai was extremely patient. He carefully explained every single step. He did not know the professional terms in this world, but he could come up with fanciful metaphors to allow Mozzie to comprehend his meaning. After half an hour, Mozzie had a general understanding of the concepts behind the Kun Peng Hammer Technique. All she lacked was actual practice.

Mozzie said with tears brimming, "Lord Shi Xiaobai, it's so nice

to know you!”

Kevin sighed as well. With mixed emotions, he said, “This is the best lesson I’ve ever heard. Who knew that the teacher would be you.”

From their point of view, Shi Xiaobai was a monster-level genius that left everyone in the dust. However, they never expected Shi Xiaobai to be such a good teacher at lecturing. He did not use any professional terms, but was able to allow others to understand without any difficulty.

You would feel astonishment from his statements. You would feel enlightened because of a few explanations from him. It felt like attending a single lecture of Shi Xiaobai was better than reading for a decade!

A look of admiration and equanimity flashed in his eyes, while Mozzie’s worship of him reached an extreme point.

Shi Xiaobai laughed in his heart. Back then he had taught Yang Wei’s younger sister, a five-year-old-loli, how to play competitive games. After a year of actual practice, he managed to teach her DotA and LoL!

If not for having to carry the loli in LoL, he would have long reached the Challenger-tier, and not be stuck in the Bronze, Silver-tiers.

For a Challenger-tier player to carry a Bronze-tier player, Shi Xiaobai was extremely proficient at doing it!

For example, Mozzie and Kevin were two Bronze-tier players!

# Chapter 255: It's You Yourself That Is Depriving Yourself Of Your Flexibility!

---

Only until Mozzie produced Stewing Wok Hammer and Grilling Hammer did Shi Xiaobai end his lessons. Although Mozzie had yet to even reach the Grasped Basics realm of the Kun Peng Hammer Technique, Shi Xiaobai's teaching ability was incredibly impressive to allow her to basically use such a complicated and powerful offensive skill such as Kun Peng Hammer Technique.

Mozzie reflected, "I wish Lord Shi Xiaobai would be a teacher or instructor!"

Shi Xiaobai smiled without saying a word. On Earth, teachers had previously taken turns...giving Shi Xiaobai homework. In this world, he had encountered a deranged instructor like Hisith. As such, Shi Xiaobai did not have a good impression of teachers or instructors.

The trio proceeded forward in the complex caves and constantly left marks. Thankfully, they did not find themselves walking back to their original spots. In less than half a minute, they heard delicate footsteps in front of them once again.

Around the corner, there were six dark green goblins, also holding hammers. There was also a dark red goblin that was larger in size. It held a sharp knife in hand.

This time, there were seven goblins!

Shi Xiaobai turned towards Kevin and asked, “Can you settle them alone?”

Shi Xiaobai obviously wanted to see Kevin’s ability at fighting alone.

Kevin’s expression turned somewhat stiff. His combat style was more suitable for one-on-one battles. There was quite a bit of pressure for him to face seven goblins in one sitting. However, humbling himself was not his character. Furthermore, Mozzie was beside him.

“Of course there will be no problems for This Genius!”

Kevin slightly raised his head as he strode out of the corner.

The dark red goblin immediately let out a deafening cry. The six dark green goblins with hammers in hands immediately charged at Kevin!

“Black Bear Dominating Palm!”

Kevin immediately struck out with his palm. The palm’s momentum was boundless as the air around him seemed to boil over. The goblin leading the way was hit by the palm and sent flying. Its body exploded, spraying out dark green blood all over the ground.



After Kevin struck, his body appeared stiff for a moment. The other five goblins pounced at him.

“Bronze Shield!”

Kevin hurriedly conjured a bronze-colored shield to block the five hammers that came slamming down at him.

“Bang!”

The moment the Bronze Shield was struck by the five hammers, a fine crack immediately appeared as though it was going to shatter!

“Cloud Traversal Steps!”

Kevin did not dare to block again. Immediately, he retreated and looked somewhat pathetic.

After Kevin retreated a certain distance, he seized the opportunity to strike out with his palm. Once again, another goblin was sent flying by his tremendous force.

Kevin’s destructive power was pretty impressive. It was much stronger than Mozzie’s ‘Quaking Mountain Strike’, but his strength came from his superpower, ‘Price of Might’.

The ‘Price of Might’ gave him a short burst of power in exchange

for his body and movement entering stagnation.

As such, every time Kevin struck, his moving feet would have to stop. His body would also appear stiff for a moment.

This stiffness caused Kevin to have no choice but to use 'Bronze Shield' to defend the four goblins' hammer strikes.

The Bronze Shield cracked once again from the strikes. Just as Kevin wanted to retreat, he was appalled to discover that he had already retreated to the cave wall. He could only retreat towards the corner where Shi Xiaobai and Mozzie were.

Kevin gritted his teeth and used Psionic Hardening on his right arm to withstand the blow of the goblins' strikes!

Four hammers shattered as the four dark green goblins screamed in retreat.

Kevin endure the pain. His right arm had two bloody holes as though they had been pierced by a nail. Boiling blood began gushing out of his wounds.

Suddenly, Kevin's pupils violently constricted. A sharp knife was already in front of his chest. The larger dark red goblin had rushed in front of him without him realizing.

The sharp knife was just inches away from his chest, and there was no chance for him to react in time, much less conjure a shield

to block. He did not even have the time to use Psionic Hardening.

Kevin closed his eyes in fear.

“Bang!”

The pain he feared did not come. Instead, there was a large bang. When Kevin opened his eyes, he saw the dark red goblin's head no longer sitting on its neck as it fell backwards.

Shi Xiaobai was standing beside him with a psionic sword.

Mozzie raised her psionic warhammer and charged at the four dark green goblins. A wok that was rudimentary in form smashed down, causing the four goblins to collapse with a cry. It was in stark contrast to the process of her slow killing of monsters from before.

“I...”

Kevin's eyes turned disheartened. The pain on his arm could not match the pain he felt in his heart.

Shi Xiaobai reached out his right hand to cover Kevin's wound. A magnolia beam of light bloomed as Holy Radiance's power of light enveloped Kevin's arm. The bloody hole that was gushing out fresh blood began to slowly heal.

Kevin felt a warmth from his wound as the pain alleviated. Instead, he felt a slight itch that came from the healing of a wound.

Shi Xiaobai said softly, “You are not good at fighting against a group.”

Kevin nodded subconsciously. The pain in his heart lessened.

Yes, he was not good at fighting against a group.

Shi Xiaobai had picked this up at a glance.

Could this be considered comforting him?

Shi Xiaobai said with a deadpan expression, “But you have quite a few other problems.”

Kevin gaped but did not refute. Instead he said with a wry smile, “Is there any way of redeeming myself?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, “Of course, wouldn’t solving the problems do?”

Kevin could only smile wryly. Some of the problems was a result of him lacking in actual combat experience. This sort of problems could be slowly solved, but some problems were fated never to be solved. For example, the condition and limitation of his superpower, ‘Price of Might’, could not be avoided.

Kevin hesitated for a moment and was prepared to explain to Shi Xiaobai what his greatest problems were. He was now fully convinced of Shi Xiaobai's prowess.

However, Shi Xiaobai said at that moment, "Your situation is completely opposite from Mozzie. You do not have much power in your body, but the actual amount of power you output is many times stronger. You should be using some method to increase your strength. However, when you use this power, you will come to a halt. After using your power, your body will stiffen for a short period of time. This must be the price you pay for increasing your strength."

Kevin stared with widened eyes at him and said in disbelief, "How did you tell!?"

Shi Xiaobai looked at Kevin lightly. His expression seemed to say 'just like that'.

Kevin said with a wry smile, "You are truly a monster.... What you said isn't wrong at all. The method of increasing my strength is the effect of my superpower. And the superpower's condition is to stop moving, and the limitation is the more augmented the strength, the longer the body will stiffen. Although this superpower has given me outstanding strength, it has deprived me of my flexibility... There is no solution to this problem!"

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said in a speechless manner, "It's you yourself that is depriving yourself of your flexibility!"

# Chapter 256: Deceptive Assassin!

---

“It’s you yourself that is depriving yourself of your flexibility!”

Shi Xiaobai speaking unequivocally confounded Kevin. However, he did not subconsciously retort like he used to. Instead, his eyes lit up and said, “Why do you say so?”

At this moment, Mozzie had also walked over. Her eyes had a glint of curiosity, and even more of anticipation. Lord Shi Xiaobai’s lectures were not to be missed!

Shi Xiaobai looked at Kevin and did not answer directly. Instead, he returned with a question, “Why do you use your superpower every time you attack?”

Kevin was slightly taken aback.

Why? The answer was not anything. Ever since he awakened his superpower, he had always used the powerful strength given to him by his superpower in front of his friends to make them gasp in awe. Slowly, he went down the route of a pure Strength-based warrior, with each strike in pursuit of the most terrifying destructive power. Of course, he had to use his superpower.

However, with Shi Xiaobai asking him now, Kevin was somewhat confused.

Yes, why did he had to use ‘Price of Might’ every time he

attacked?

Shi Xiaobai noticed Kevin's silence and did not wait. Instead, he continued asking, "Why do you use your superpower every time you use Black Bear Dominating Palm?"

Kevin's brows knitted slightly. Black Bear Dominating Palm was extremely destructive.

Coupled with 'Price of Might', wouldn't its power be immeasurable?

Furthermore, he had only grasped Black Bear Dominating Palm as his only single offensive skill. This was probably normal for a rookie or freshman, learning one skill from the three categories—offensive skills, defensive skills, and movement techniques. They would then work hard to raise it from the Familiarized Proficiency to the Exemplary Mastery. After all, they should not bite more than they could chew.

Not everyone was like Shi Xiaobai!

Kevin had such a thought, but he did not answer.

Shi Xiaobai sighed lightly and asked another time, "Why do you choose to bias yourself to a warrior-based fighting style?"

Kevin frowned even more. His superpower raised his strength and weakened his movement. Wasn't it obvious to bias himself

towards a warrior's fighting style?

Shi Xiaobai's three questions confused Kevin. However, he knew Shi Xiaobai would not randomly question him. Hence, he began to contemplate in deep thought with his brows furrowed.

Shi Xiaobai did not seem to be in a hurry and waited for Kevin to think.

Moments later, Kevin sighed. His eyes were still somewhat glazed over as he said, "I have never considered those three questions. This is because my superpower destined me to walk this path. I can't think of an answer. I always thought that doing it this way was for granted."

Shi Xiaobai said earnestly, "It is these preconceived notions that limited your advantage. You always think that geniuses are born, but you have ignored the need to unearth them. From This King's point of view, the best route for you should be...an assassin!"

"Assassin?"

Kevin was dumbfounded from shock. He never expected to hear such an answer.

His superpower was suitable to go down the path of an assassin?

Mozzie was also slightly surprised. However, due to her complete trust in Lord Shi Xiaobai, she was mostly feeling curious. She could



not help but charmingly say, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, don’t keep us guessing...”

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said seriously, “Let’s first talk about the three issues. Firstly, your frequent use of your superpower is extremely foolish. Although the cost is fixed, you can reduce the impact of it by seizing the correct moment to use it. From This King’s point of view, your superpower should be used as a trump card. At least, it should not be frequently overused.”

“Secondly, the usage of Black Bear Dominating Palm has certain preparatory movements that make it easy to be dodged. Furthermore, Black Bear Dominating Palm itself does not lack destructive power. However, by making superfluous use of your superpower coupled with an easily-dodged offensive skill, you are just enlarging your weaknesses and burying your own advantage.”

“Thirdly, a warrior has a fighting style that has extremely high comprehensive requirements. Offense, defense, speed cannot be lacking in any way. However, you only have an advantage at offense. Your physical and psionic defense are lacking, while your movement technique is not even worth mentioning. You do not possess the qualities of a warrior.”

Shi Xiaobai answered the three questions he asked. Kevin felt a jolt as his face turned pale. After hearing what Shi Xiaobai said, Kevin immediately realized the problems he had. This was something that he could easily have thought of if he had looked at it from another point of view. However, his preconceived notions had become his blind spot.

Kevin's lips went pale. He realized that he had been ridiculously wrong. With his superpower being his pride, a manifestation of the difference between a genius and a mortal, him choosing to frequently use his superpower during battle was only for a laughable sense of superiority.

He knew that Black Bear Dominating Palm was an offensive skill that had a delay before damage could be dealt, but because his surrounding friends marveled at the power of his Black Bear Dominating Palm, he had been complacent and forgot himself.

He had blindly thought of promulgating his advantage so as to gain a greater sense of superiority. As such, all his efforts and focus were placed on his attacks. He had ignored the cultivation of his defense and movement techniques. Yet, he sadly thought of himself as a Strength-based warrior. But in fact, which kind of Strength-based warrior had such weak defenses like him?

The more Kevin thought, the paler he became. He muttered, "What should I do?"

He could only rest his hopes on Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai, who he had once resented but slowly made him speechless and then convinced, was at this moment likely to be a crucial lighthouse in his life.

God DogLeading, help me!

Kevin recalled of this name he had deliberately forgotten.

Shi Xiaobai smiled and said, “Very simple. Switch builds and become an assassin!”

Assassin!

Kevin’s eyes lit up as though he had clung onto a life-saving straw. He hurriedly asked, “How?”

Shi Xiaobai said, “This King said before. Your superpower is best used as a trump card. The best choice is in pursuit for a one-shot kill! However, the one-shot kill This King talks about is different from how you use Black Bear Dominating Palm augmented with your superpower. It’s different from overpowering your opponent, but what you should aim for is a surprise instant kill!”

“What’s the greatest advantage of a sudden burst of power? It’s sudden as well as...deceitful! For example, by using three normal Black Bear Dominating Palm strikes consecutively, and when you suddenly augment it with your superpower on your fourth time. What would the effect be? A very ordinary kick with a sudden augmentation of superpower, what would the effect be? Deceiving your opponent into a habitual mindset is your greatest advantage.”

“If you can catch your opponent unprepared, the cost of your body stiffening will be reduced. Furthermore, your body’s stiffening can also be used as a deceitful trick. When your opponent has realized that your sudden burst of power will result in your body stiffening, and you suddenly pretend to stiffen your body despite not using your superpower, so as to deliberately show a flaw, that can lead to your opponent’s carelessness. And what follows would be an opportunity for you.”

“Hence, This King believes that by transiting to an assassin, but not the charging or sneak attack assassin, instead a—deceptive assassin!”

# Chapter 257: Super Healer And Godlike Mentor

---

Deceptive Assassin!

Kevin's dull eyes were gradually restored of their light. His perplexity slowly disappeared. Shi Xiaobai's words seemed to have opened up a whole new world for him, as though the fog in front of his eyes had been lifted...

Kevin asked, "What should I do next?"

Although Kevin had some ideas, he did not dare to push the boundaries. He had already come to a realization how worthless his so-called sense of superiority was.

Shi Xiaobai obviously had some ideas. He said, "An assassin's basic nature is being able to create an instantaneous burst and being agile. You already have that instantaneous burst, but your movement technique is your weakest aspect. Hence, what's next is for you to seriously cultivate your movement technique. You will have to regain the 'flexibility' you deprived yourself of."

"After that, you will need an extremely fast offensive skill, or even refrain from using any offensive skills. Your trump card should not have any preparatory movements. It's best if it has some deceptive component to it."

"And most important is the learning of how to deceive! Deceit

requires intelligence and courage. There is a higher requirement of knowing how to seize opportunities. Things like how to deceive your opponent and even yourself are things you are in dire need of learning.”

Following that, Shi Xiaobai shared with him his comprehension of deceitful techniques from the time when he used Crab Steps. This comprehension was slowly grasped when he was being constantly one-shot in the head by Thomas, time after time. Some of it was Thomas’s theory and knowledge after researching Yaris’s divine Crab Steps.

Deception was not a simple matter. In order to deceive the opponents’ eyes, senses, psychological state of mind and even their subconsciousness, every progressive state contained great wisdom. Shi Xiaobai’s deceit techniques were only limited to such research. He could only try his best to use elementary words to teach and guide Kevin. It was ultimately on Kevin to do his own in-depth study.

After more than ten minutes of lecturing, Kevin had gained a lot of useful insights despite being still somewhat confounded. Every time he felt a new path open, he was more determined about his next path.

A fraudster essentially had no fate with glory, much less superiority. However, Kevin had already realized the mistakes of his past. He had suddenly matured a lot.

Kevin’s eyes were filled with gratitude as he said, “Let’s go. We’ve already wasted a lot of time.”

In order to help Mozzie and him, Shi Xiaobai had truly done his best. He did not care about the passage of time, as though the trial was not on his mind.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and suddenly reached out his hand to pinch Kevin's shoulder.

Kevin's eyes stared widely as he said aghast, "This..."

He felt that the psionic power that he had just expended was rapidly being restored!

Shi Xiaobai said, "Do not worry about damage or the consumption of psionic power. This King can restore them in a timely manner. However, do not force yourself to do something overly dangerous. The actual combat that follows next is very important. How much you can improve yourself will depend on your willpower and effort."

Mozzie and Kevin nodded their heads heavily. At this moment, they felt their blood boiling. With an opportunity for them to become better so close at hand, if they failed to grasp it, they would definitely regret it for the rest of their lives.

...

As they walked through the cave, they encountered the third batch of goblins. There were a total of thirteen, ten dark green

ones and three dark red ones.

Mozzie easily used Kun Peng Hammer Technique to finish the ten dark green goblins.

Kevin was in a somewhat sorry situation, but he was much better than before. As he dodged for a prolonged period of time while receiving the three dark red goblins' attacks, he had been inflicted with light injuries. However, his Cloud Traversal Steps had enjoyed a small boost. He chose to use Psionic Wavelet out of the five basic psionic offensive skills as his trump card. Psionic Wavelet Palm was the simplest and most direct palm technique.

He slowly learned how to seek the opportunity to use Wavelet Palm. Although he was in a sorry state during the process, he was still able to grab the chance to use Price of Might to augment his Wavelet Palm to instantly kill a dark red goblin. And due to the proper grasping of the timing, the disadvantageous state of his body stiffening up no longer put him in a predicament.

After the battle, Shi Xiaobai used Massage Technique of God to restore the duo to their full psionic power and used the power of light to heal Kevin of his wounds. Suddenly, he became like a super-healer.

Shi Xiaobai evaluated the duo based on their performance, "Mozzie, some of your actions are redundant. Also your strength is too dispersed and not focused onto a point. When you use Kun Peng Hammer Technique, try to keep it simple and concise. Focus your strength, while taking into account your speed and control."



“Kevin, the accelerating and decelerating of your movement technique is done too hastily. Making a judgment only at the final moment won’t do. You need to learn how to observe the minute motions of your opponent, and judge the opponent’s next attack. During this battle, you had seven opportunities you did not grasp. Your acuity of opportunities still needs improvement. The root of the problem is that your judgment is lacking. So, you need to first improve that!”

“Pay attention to the points This King said and continue working hard!”

Mozzie nodded seriously and said, “Alright, Teacher Shi Xiaobai!”

Kevin nodded his head while he pondered, “Alright, I’ll take note of it.”

...

As they ventured deeper into the caves, every batch of goblins they encountered increased in number. Slowly, dark blue, dark yellow, dark purple, and various other types of goblins appeared. It became harder and harder for Kevin and Mozzie to obtain victory, and the injuries that were inflicted on them and the consumption of psionic power increased with each batch.

However, Shi Xiaobai was like a bottomless healer. Regardless of how injured they were, the power of light could rapidly rejuvenate

them. Regardless of how much psionic power they expended, a simple pinch from the Massage Technique of God restored them.

And Shi Xiaobai's roles as an observer and mentor were extremely impressive. He could keenly pinpoint every flaw during their battles and come up with a corresponding solution, giving them the most pragmatic guidance, leading them onto the right path.

From Mozzie and Kevin's point of view, Shi Xiaobai alone was comparable to a medical team and an education team, or even better!

How exaggerated was this matter?

It turned out that Shi Xiaobai being so powerful was not only because of his unique talents, but that his thought processes of battles were more in depth than anyone else's. Maybe he was somewhat naive and childish in certain aspects, but he had wisdom and comprehension that far exceeded others when it came to combat.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai's comprehension of combat being so in-depth was a result of him experiencing numerous defeats. Thomas, Hisith, and Sunless had all made him suffer defeat. He had never steered clear of defeat, but faced it with a smile. He learned his lessons through failure and obtained progress.

And throughout his suffering, be it the virtual world, the Underworld or the Demon City just recently, Shi Xiaobai had

experienced numerous actual fights. He commonly fought one against many, or challenged people levels above him. He had always been using his life to engage in combat in life and death situations!

Shi Xiaobai had groped around learning through combat, so he had his own, unique understanding of it!

Of course, the reason why Shi Xiaobai could so wisely impart his comprehension to Mozzie and Kevin, becoming their godlike mentor, was all thanks to Yang Wei's younger sister. An adorable little young girl had ignited the soul of a 'mentor' in Shi Xiaobai. She made Shi Xiaobai struggle day and night how to let a Bronze-ranked player understand the thought process of a King!

All in all, the two Bronze-ranked players, Mozzie and Kevin, had received a significant improvement in strength. They could engage in combat with complete impunity. Furthermore, they received the godlike guidance from Shi Xiaobai, so even if they were idiots, they would also have improved!

After proceeding and stopping along the way, they finally saw a gigantic cavern.

This was a cavern in a cave. The cavern's space was huge and the light was dim. More than a hundred goblins were walking around and in the deepest depths of the cavern was a gigantic, golden goblin. It held a golden axe in each hand, as though it was a golden statue.

Clearly, this was the Goblin Cave's guardian boss, Golden Goblin!

“Go ahead and verify how much you have progressed!”

Shi Xiaobai waved his hand gently as he said.

“Alright!”

This time, despite seeing such a terrifying scene, Mozzie and Kevin no longer expressed any apprehension like back in Ogre Forest. Instead, they had an eager looks for trying and immense impatience!

...

# Chapter 258: The Improvement In Three Hours

---

Against more than a hundred goblins, Mozzie and Kevin were apparently still unable to enter a head on clash. Especially with Kevin now as an assassin, he had improved a lot in a one-on-one situation, but he was still as crappy as ever against many. Hence, the duo was not able to charge in such a domineering manner like Shi Xiaobai and company back in the Ogre Forest.

After some careful consideration, they decided to use the terrain to their advantage.

Kevin was first to charge forward. Instantly, he attracted the batch of goblins closest to the cavern entrance. His proficiency in Cloud Traversal Steps had increased quite substantially, and using the way to attract aggro as taught by Shi Xiaobai as well as kiting methods, Kevin did his best to finish a few circles and narrowly escape any harm to gather the goblins into a bunch.

After attracting a number of goblins, Kevin rushed to the cavern's entrance. The goblins that gathered into a bunch began shoving towards the entrance.

Mozzie had already gathered her strength before this. With a delightful cry, she slammed a Stewing Wok Hammer out. Intense heat spewed out like a blowhole as the bunched up goblins collapsed to the ground with a scream.

Mozzie immediately produced a Grilling Hammer as she swung

her warhammer sideways. Immediately a sea of flames sealed the cavern's entrance. The goblins that were rushing ahead immediately came to a halt, as the goblins behind them slammed into them. The first row of goblins were unfortunately pushed into the fire as they collapsed to the ground with a cry.

The bunch of goblins did not dare to risk advancing through the fire, but as they were stuck in a crowd, there was no way for them to retreat. Instantly, they were extremely vulnerable.

Mozzie slammed her hammer again and again. Using the distance, she used Grilling Hammer and Stewing Wok Hammer to clear the bunch of goblins.

When the goblins who were in the distance saw this scene, they screamed in indignation for a moment before retreating to a safer location.

Kevin used Black Bear Dominating Palm, which was augmented by the Price of Might to strike the flames at the cavern's entrance. The violent winds that accompanied the powerful strike blew out the flames.

After the flames were extinguished, Kevin charged forward once again. Repeating the same trick, he gathered a bunch of goblins to the cavern entrance, and Mozzie used the same method to destroy the bunch of goblins.

After repeating this for five or six times, more than a hundred goblins were cleared. Only four dark purple and the gigantic

Golden Goblin were left.

Although the approach they used was a waste of time and consumed a substantial amount of psionic power, it was already the perfect solution for the duo. Furthermore, Kevin could practice his Cloud Traversal Steps during this process, while Mozzie was able to cultivate her Kun Peng Hammer Technique. It was the best of two worlds.

The duo certainly could not use the same method for the other goblins; hence, they charged into the cavern together.

Kevin first attracted the four dark purple goblins' aggro and kited them away before circling around them to charge straight towards the Golden Goblin.

Mozzie smashed at the four dark purple goblins once with her warhammer.

The division of labor was extremely clear between them. Mozzie was to deal with the four dark purple goblins while Kevin had to deal with the Golden Goblin himself.

The four dark purple goblins were apparently stronger than ordinary goblins. Mozzie did not succeed with a single strike, however, she had already begun paying a great deal of attention to the control of her power. Hence, the speed at which she retracted her warhammer was extremely fast. Before the goblins reached her, she had attacked again, killing one of the four goblins.

But even if she retracted her hammer quickly, there was still a sizable lag in her motions. The other three goblins had seized that opportunity to charge at her.

Mozzie conjured her Magical Silver Shield calmly as the strong Magical Silver Shield was clearly enough to defend her against the goblins' attacks.

During this process, Mozzie used Grilling Hammer on the three goblins who dispersed like birds when they saw the inferno roaring at them. Making use of the advantageous momentum she had, Mozzie began killing them one after another.

And on the other side, Kevin had begun fighting with the Golden Goblin, but he was in no hurry. He remembered the teachings of Shi Xiaobai, so he carefully observed the Golden Goblin's minute motions and he began predicting its attacks.

The Golden Goblin was bigger than an ordinary goblin by about five times. Its golden body looked impenetrable, and its swinging of the dual axes seemed to possess great destructive power. However, its movements were slow.

Kevin slowly gained a sense of the Golden Goblin's attacking rhythm. He constantly dodged and would occasionally hit the Golden Goblin with a Wavelet Palm. The Golden Goblin's skin would shimmer with a layer of golden light every time it was struck. The ordinary Wavelet Palm dealt no damage to it.

However, Kevin realized that the Golden Goblin's eyes slowly



had a hint of disdain in them. It began to slowly relax on its defenses as it began obsessing with its offenses.

“Now is the time!”

Kevin’s eyes lit up. He grabbed the opportunity when the Golden Goblin cleaved with its right axe and gave a palm blow!

The Golden Goblin’s skin did not suffuse the golden glow this time. Instead it swung its left axe at Kevin. It had already judged that the attacks of the human in front of it could not deal it any damage. Hence, it abandoned its defenses and forcibly attacked!

However, this strike from Kevin was no ordinary Wavelet Palm. Instead, it was Wavelet Palm augmented by Price of Might!

Wavelet Palm was simple and direct, so it was extremely fast. Coupled with the augmentation in strength from the Price of Might, it could be said to be fast and ruthless. By the time the Golden Goblin realized the danger, it could no longer react in time!

“Boom!”

The strike hit straight at the Golden Goblin’s body as it was sent flying backward with a terrible cry. It slammed into the wall with a thud, causing the entire cavern to tremble.

After Kevin struck, his body stiffened for a moment, but immediately after he charged at the Golden Goblin that was half

kneeling on the ground.

“Black Bear Dominating Palm!”

Kevin hit the goblin while it was down. By using Black Bear Dominating Palm that was augmented by the Price of Might, he struck at the head of the Golden Goblin, who was still in a giddy state due to the severe injuries.

“Boom!”

A crack echoed as the Golden Goblin’s head split before embedding deeply into the wall.

At the same time, Mozzie had hammered to death the last dark purple goblin!

The authoritative voice echoed!

“Congratulations on killing the guardian BOSS. Everyone obtains 100 points for conquering Stone Gate #225 [Goblin Cave]!”

Mozzie and Kevin were stunned for a moment as they felt a sense of accomplishment. They turned their heads at Shi Xiaobai as their eyes were filled with gratitude.

They had managed to clear Goblin Cave, which was at ‘middle’ difficulty, themselves! Although they had taken three hours, it was

still something unimaginable if this was three hours ago!

And all of this was thanks to Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai's guidance had enlightened them, allowing them to find the fighting style that suited them best. Furthermore, they had learned the gist of combat.

Application of the Massage Technique of God and the power of light had given them the endurance, allowing them to fight with all their might for three hours.

It could be said that these three hours of actual combat was far better than three months of normal cultivation!

The duo looked gratefully at Shi Xiaobai. They were momentarily at a loss as to how to express their gratitude.

...

# Chapter 259: Intercourse For A Moment

---

Mozzie and Kevin cast grateful looks at Shi Xiaobai.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not believe he should claim credit for that. Mozzie and Kevin's talents were pretty good to begin with. One of them had a Titan bloodline, while the other had a C-class superpower. Their talents would be the cream of the crop if they were in a first-tier organization. The only problem was that they had gone astray and did not put in as much effort.

Now, all Shi Xiaobai had done was guide them onto the correct path and give them an opportunity to become stronger.

It was their desire to become strong that allowed them to resolutely cling onto that opportunity. It was their hard work that allowed them to obtain such significant progress.

However, all of this was far from enough. Although Mozzie and Kevin had made considerable improvements, they were still a great distance away from becoming the top ten rookies. They had just gone from plankton to a tiny fish that could swim better.

Shi Xiaobai said, "Let's go. On to the next stone door!"

Mozzie and Kevin nodded heavily. They quickly recovered from being carried away by excitement. They knew that the opportunity that followed was one that would change their entire lives. Furthermore, it was the selfless sacrifice of Shi Xiaobai, Sunless and Mu Yuesheng that gave them this opportunity. If they did not

grasp it well, they would regret it for the rest of their lives.

Therefore, regardless of how tiring and arduous the combat training that followed would be, they had to grit their teeth and endure through it!

The look in Mozzie and Kevin's eyes turned hot and firm.

...

After clearing the stone door level, a door would be opened for every trial-taker so that they could easily depart the level. Hence, the five of them gathered at the crystalline ground as they had previously agreed upon.

Mu Yuesheng had already awoken, but she did not seem to be in a very good mood. This was because her deep meditative state had been interrupted by the authoritative voice.

According to Shi Xiaobai's judgment, the Massage Technique of God had only a ten percent chance of sending her into a deep meditative state. Furthermore, the temples could not be continuously stimulated. There was a need for an interval, so even though Mu Yuesheng was willing to accept the embarrassing massage again, it was impossible for her to enter a deep meditative state again.

Mu Yuesheng found it somewhat regretful. However, the scenes she cogitated were much clearer than before. This was the

astonishing result of the Massage Technique of God.

In fact, the Massage Technique of God did not truly increase her Mind Expanse. It was making her thoughts and mind achieve better clarity through massage. As such, it also improved the fidelity of her imaginations.

This lifting effect obviously was temporary, so Mu Yuesheng was unwilling to waste it. She hurriedly took the time to close her eyes and enter Cogitation.

As such, Shi Xiaobai and company suggested for Mu Yuesheng to wait in the crystalline ground and concentrate on her Cogitation.

Mu Yuesheng hesitated for a moment before agreeing with a nod. She was no longer in a deep meditative state, so she was safe alone in the crystalline ground. However, she felt somewhat guilty gaining points while standing outside in Cogitation.

Mu Yuesheng thought to herself that she had to find an opportunity to repay the favor to them.

...

Shi Xiaobai had indeed seen through the glyphs on the stone door. The next stone door he chose was of 'medium' difficulty.

'Medium' difficulty was currently most suitable for Mozzie and Kevin's actual combat training. Occasionally, the duo would

receive some injuries, but they were all minor ones. It was sufficient to use the power of light of Holy Radiance to heal them. If the injuries they suffered were too severe, the power of light was insufficient.

This time, Shi Xiaobai did not observe Mozzie and Kevin's every battle to give them advice like previously, because he had things he needed to do!

He wanted to have intercourse with Sunless!

Of course, it could be called an interactive exchange course, intercourse for short.

Shi Xiaobai had first thrown a brick in order to get a gem. He had previously explained Kun Peng Hammer Technique to Mozzie, so by discussing the Kun Peng Sword Technique with Sunless, he was immediately inspired. It was as though he was chewing on Stride gum as he talked incessantly without coming to a halt.

Sunless' understanding of the sword was still higher than Shi Xiaobai's. She was able to understand the profound meaning behind everything Shi Xiaobai said. Furthermore, she could infer an understanding most suitable for her. She was not like Mozzie who needed a layman's explanation.

Sunless' eyes brightened up as she listened to him. The way she looked at Shi Xiaobai was filled with a brilliance. Just like Mozzie and Kevin, she was also extremely impressed by Shi Xiaobai's teaching ability.

Shi Xiaobai was good at teaching, while Sunless was a sword prodigy not seen in a hundred years. As such, Sunless spent only about ten minutes before grasping the Kun Peng Sword Technique Shi Xiaobai had understood. She did so at a startling pace.

However, the essence of the sword technique needed actual practice to fully grasp it.

Following that was Sunless teaching Shi Xiaobai the sword techniques she had grasped.

The situation took on a strange turn.

Sunless: “I...”

Shi Xiaobai: “Yea.”

Sunless: “You...”

Shi Xiaobai: “Yea?”

Sunless: “This...”

Shi Xiaobai: “?”

Sunless: “.....”



Shi Xiaobai: “...”

The duo stared at each other. They exchanged looks as though they were having an exchange through their eyes like deaf mutes.

Shi Xiaobai did not know how to read her mind, so he could not understand what Sunless wanted to express. He could only softly say, “Why don’t you demonstrate it.”

It was extremely demanding on Sunless for her to lecture.

Sunless nodded and heaved a sigh of relief in her heart. She immediately raised her silver sword. She unreservedly demonstrated the Kun Peng Sword Techniques she had learned. It was completely different from what Shi Xiaobai knew. Shi Xiaobai’s Kun Peng Sword Technique generated high temperatures and flames, but Sunless’ two sword techniques were accompanied by low temperatures and strong winds.

Shi Xiaobai attempted multi-tasking. As he observed Sunless’ swordplay and grasped the sword intent within it, he also paid attention to Mozzie and Kevin’s situation so as to help them if need be.

Mozzie and Kevin worked very hard as though they were workaholics. The ‘medium’ difficulty stone doors happened to be at their limits, so every level was cleared with great difficulty, or by suffering injuries, or having their psionic power drained. However, they gained a lot each time, causing them to

continuously grow.

Although the power of light's healing effects were constantly significant, the effects of the Massage Technique of God were gradually weakening. Each massage needed more time, and the amount of psionic power restored with each massage also decreased. Mozzie and Kevin seemed to slowly develop resistance against it.

It was particularly notable on Mozzie. Back when Shi Xiaobai helped improve her bloodline's purity, she clearly felt that the stimuli were not as strong as back when she had a full body massage, or at least she did not moan involuntarily. She had believed that she had gotten accustomed to the comfort, but the fact was that she had generated 'antibodies' against the Massage Technique of God!

The Massage Technique of God was like a virus. Although it was very powerful, it would be instinctively rejected by the body and the body would generally develop a resistance to the point of being completely numb to it.

This sounded an important alarm for Shi Xiaobai.

## Chapter 260: Just As Inaccurate As Always

---

In fact, the Massage Technique of God was not as powerful as he had imagined as it had its limitations and flaws. For example, the Divine Massage of Giving Spring to Withered Wood. While it could restore a person's psionic power through a massage, it was not producing psionic power from nothing. The reason behind the restoration was mostly due to an increase in the speed of the massaged person's psionic power recovery rate, which resulted in the effect of restoring a person's psionic power in a short period of time.

However, the increase in speed was set at a fixed value. With Shi Xiaobai's Familiarized Proficiency level, he was perfectly able to speed up Mozzie and Kevin's recovery of their psionic power. However, if he were to massage a mighty warrior like One-Pun, the effects would be minute, unnoticeable.

This was because at the rate that One-Pun consumed his psionic power, Shi Xiaobai's limited acceleration for One-Pun's rate of restoration was insufficient. It was unable to keep up with One-Pun's usage. It was like pouring a bottle of mineral water into a vast lake.

There were actually numerous limitations to the Massage Technique of God. For example, the nominal increase of Mind Expanse was in fact a massage that, because it had a stimulating effect on the nerves in the temples, gave one's thoughts greater clarity. However, a long period of time needed to pass before it could be done again. For example, the improving of the purity of the bloodline through massage first required the body to be able to endure it. Furthermore, it needed a period of time to pass before

the proper endurance could be reached as well.

As for using Massage Technique of God as an offensive skill, it was in fact not very useful in battle. Shi Xiaobai had almost never used it in battle. This was because the move required him to stick close to his opponent. Its speed was too slow, and only back when he was being ganked by the Zeus rookies did he manage to silently succeed in their moments of carelessness.

However, despite there being many limitations to the Massage Technique of God, Shi Xiaobai still found the Massage Technique of God to live up to its name as a B-level reward. This was because the Massage Technique of God was very versatile. It could be considered a godly support skill.

But now, the Massage Technique of God had finally revealed a rather significant flaw.

Repeated use could result in immunity!

This left Shi Xiaobai no choice but to consider how he could allocate the usage of the Massage Technique of God. For example, Mozzie had already near immunity to the Massage Technique of God. If he continued to use Divine Massage of Giving Spring to Withered Wood on her, once she was completely immune to it, there was no way to increase her bloodline's purity!

After Shi Xiaobai explained this possibility to Mozzie, she resolutely chose to leave the Massage Technique of God chances to increasing her bloodline purity. When Kevin heard this, he also

indicated that he did not want to waste the opportunities of the Massage Technique of God because of psionic power.

As a result, in the later stages of the combat training, Mozzie and Kevin began to pay attention to their psionic power expenditure. The speed at which they cleared 'medium' difficulty stone doors also slowed down. The amount of time they took to rest also increased. There were a few times during battle when they revealed a critical flaw due to the draining of psionic power. If not for Shi Xiaobai and Sunless helping them, they might have been severely injured or even died.

However, Mozzie and Kevin did not request for the training to stop. They gritted their teeth and persisted on. They did not complain or say any disheartening words, because they knew that every minute they had now improved them immensely in the future.

Shi Xiaobai did not let them stop either. Although he was unable to use the Massage Technique of God on the two of them, which resulted in his Massage Technique of God still having a long way away from the Exemplary Mastery realm, Shi Xiaobai did not try any other attempts to complete the Absolute Choice. Instead, he silently accompanied Mozzie and Kevin in their combat training.

In fact, despite Mozzie and Kevin's hard work, there was still an untraversable distance from the super rookies like Sunless, Pulp Farmer, or Heartless. The chances of them becoming one of the top ten chosen for the collective training were still very slim.

However, Shi Xiaobai always believed in miracles. Furthermore,

he was not bothered by failure. Even if Mozzie and Kevin eventually failed to become one of the top ten selected for the collective training, it would not affect the price he had paid. As such, compared to seeing Mozzie and Kevin fall behind, that would be a choice he would never regret.

An unknown period of time passed by.

Mozzie and Kevin exceeded their limits again and again, but they ultimately reached their limits. They did not want to stop until they could not move out of exhaustion.

However, a voice resounded that made them have no choice but to stop.

“This level’s Level Lord [Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign] will descend in three minutes. The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign will traverse the crystalline grounds and each stone door. Please make haste!”

...

The Level Lord, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, was descending in three minutes!

These news caught many people off guard. Eleven hours had passed!

Mozzie and Kevin instantly went pale. They were still reveling in

the joy of becoming strong and had forgotten the passage of time. They had forgotten about this matter!

As for Shi Xiaobai and Sunless, they apparently did not put this matter to heart.

Mozzie's lips trembled as she said, "We only have 650 points. Clearing this stone door gives only 750 points. We won't make it in time..."

Kevin looked at Shi Xiaobai and Sunless and said apologetically, "The Level Lord's strength far exceeds the Psionic Mortal Realm. Even if all the trial-takers combine forces, they would be no match for the Level Lord. We have to avoid it as much as we can. Sorry, I caused all of you harm."

Shi Xiaobai said softly, "There's no need to apologize. There's also no need to be pessimistic. Aren't we just short of 250 points?"

Mozzie suddenly thought of something as her face turned increasingly pale. She said, "Lord Shi Xiaobai, the Level Lord will first descend onto the crystalline grounds. We need to meet up with Sister Yuesheng as soon as possible, or she will be in danger!"

Since the Level Lord would alternate between the crystalline grounds and stone doors, the crystalline grounds was inevitably an extremely dangerous place. As for the trial-takers that hid in the stone doors, they had to rely on luck. After all, there were so many stone doors, so the Level Lord might not immediately find them.

However, every second meant greater danger. It was now a race against time!

Although Shi Xiaobai was not afraid of the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, he was worried that the other four would be eliminated. He made a calm decision and exchanged looks with Sunless, immediately seeing and understanding the thoughts in each other's minds.

The two nodded and immediately rushed forward after turning around. Thankfully, they had already arrived at the guardian BOSS' entrance for this 'medium' difficulty stone door. As long as they defeated the guardian BOSS, they would clear the level and meet up with Mu Yuesheng.

Shi Xiaobai and Sunless utilized all their strength!

The two rookies were already very strong to begin with, so by using all of their strength, killing the patrolling enemies and the guardian BOSS was as easy as cutting vegetables.

In less than a minute, both the patrolling army with more than a hundred members and the guardian Boss were defeated!

Mozzie and Kevin were astounded. They believed that, after becoming a lot stronger, they had at least managed to close the gap between them and the two before them by a small margin; however, they never expected to see that the gap between them and the duo was still as immeasurable as before!



Were super rookie-grade rookies so strong?

No, even a super rookie would not be this strong. It should be said that the duo far exceeded the range of a super rookie!

...

As the quartet returned to the crystalline grounds, there was only Mu Yuesheng waiting alone in the boundless crystalline plain. The other rookies panicked and had hidden in the stone doors. The crystalline grounds that was meant for them to rest and regroup had now become the most dangerous area.

There was less than a minute before the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign descended.

Shi Xiaobai did not waste any time, and immediately found a stone door that he had yet to open. There were two other types of stone doors that he had yet to attempt. It was now a race against time, so it was best if he settled it with a single door. They were still short of 250 points, so it was likely that the rewarded points from the 'hard' difficulty stone door were insufficient.

As such, they had to choose a 'hell' difficulty stone door!

Shi Xiaobai carefully examined the two stone doors. His intuition didn't work constantly, and at that moment in time, it happened to be not working!

Without a way to use his intuition to judge which door was of the ‘hell’ difficulty, Shi Xiaobai had to guess using his logic!

The stone door in front of him had a mountain glyph. There was a tiny tree sapling growing on the mountain. On the other stone door, there was a vivid pair of dragons playing with pearls.

Seeing Shi Xiaobai seeming to be in a dilemma, Kevin hurriedly said, “I believe the door with the pair of dragons playing with pearls is more likely to be of the ‘hell’ difficulty. Dragons in China are considered one of the most noble creatures, and so there is profound meaning behind a pair of dragons playing with pearls. Furthermore...”

Kevin began to eloquently analyze.

“Alright, This King knows!”

Shi Xiaobai nodded with appreciation. Then, he pushed open the stone door carved with a mountain and he took a step into the door.

Kevin: “...”

Did he say something wrong?

...

“Welcome to Stone Door 233 [Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain]. This stone door’s difficulty is ‘hell’. Please kill the guardian BOSS [Titan Ape].”

Kevin stared with widened eyes.

This stone door was really at ‘hell’ difficulty?

Shi Xiaobai patted Kevin on the shoulder and said with a grin, “Well done. Your judgment is just as...inaccurate as always!”

Kevin was immediately rendered speechless when he heard this.

Shi Xiaobai had used his incorrect judgment to make a correct one! Was Shi Xiaobai so confident that his judgment was wrong? Was he that inaccurate?

At such a critical moment, how could such a trifling fact be used to decide on such important matters!?

Ah pui! Shi Xiaobai is still that Shi Xiaobai after all. To think that he believed that he had changed into someone else after becoming a mentor!

With this thought in mind, Kevin gradually revealed a smile. He previously found Shi Xiaobai very annoying, but from another angle, he realized that although Shi Xiaobai rendered people speechless, he was someone who calmed one’s heart.

Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng gave knowing smiles. In Sunless' eyes, there was a hint of a smile as well.

At this moment, the resounding voice boomed once again.

“The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign has entered Stone Door #666. All trial-takers in Stone Door #666...”

The authoritative voice suddenly turned sharp and husky. Using a terrifying tone, it said the word—”run!”

All trial-takers in Stone Door #666, run!

With this said, the rookies still on the third level felt the terrifying pressure that came from the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. At the same time, they also prayed for the rookies in Stone Door #666 to last longer so that they could buy them more time!

Shi Xiaobai and company did not stay for long. They began proceeding towards the core of Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain. They were still in the outskirts of the mountain and the number of magical beasts they encountered were few in number and were relatively weak. Shi Xiaobai, Sunless, and Mu Yuesheng were able to clear the beasts, while Mozzie and Kevin quietly restored their psionic power.

The few of them advanced very quickly, and soon enough, they

were in the middle of the outskirts.

However, after just three minutes, the resounding voice echoed again!

“The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign has entered Stone Door #233. All trial-takers in Stone Door #233...run!”

All the rookies in Stone Door #666 had been eliminated after three minutes?

Wait, Stone Door #233!?

Wasn't this the stone door Shi Xiaobai and company were?

“Our luck is surely unbeatable.”

...

# Chapter 261: Feels Like I've Fallen For A Scam

---

“The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign has entered Stone Door #233. All trial-takers in Stone Door #233...run!”

The voice resounded across the world. Similarly, the last word was said in an extremely strange way that could not help but give people chills.

The rookies in the other stone doors immediately gave bitter looks. Although the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign had ‘luckily’ yet to come to their stone door, the cruel fact that the rookies in Stone Door #666 were unable to last three minutes made them have an intense sense of imminent crisis.

Shi Xiaobai had just entered Stone Door #233, and were in the outskirts of the magical beast mountain. The Level Lord’s assault on them caught them somewhat off-guard.

Furthermore, when the voice dissipated, the bright sky suddenly darkened, as though a shroud had been pulled over it. A sinister and terrifying aura began emanating throughout the world. The quiet mountain was suddenly filled with calls, roars and shrieks of terror.

The flying beasts hurriedly flew towards the sky. The dark sky was filled with hordes of flying beasts that obscured the sky, as though they were dark clouds that were frantically escaping. It looked as though Armageddon was here.

Mozzie and Kevin's faces were already pale. Mu Yuesheng also frowned deeply. Even Sunless could not help but place her hand on her sword hilt.

Shi Xiaobai looked far into the distance as his eyes shimmered.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign had come to the Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain and although it had just arrived, it still appeared to be a distance away from them. However, the changes to the sky and forest as well as the magical beasts frantic escaping were enough to indicate how terrifying the Level Lord was. It had yet to appear, but just its primal aura was enough to fill the area with fear.

“We...shall fight it out with it!”

Mozzie's voice trembled slightly as she turned to Shi Xiaobai, her eyes suddenly filled with courage.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign had finished the trial-takers at Stone Door #666 in three minutes. It was obvious that it was a very 'experienced' hunter. There was not much time for them. Furthermore, the quintet was still in the outskirts of the mountain. They were still a distance away from the guardian BOSS, so they were already out of time.

The only choice they had at that moment was to gather the strength of all five of them to fight it out with the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign!

Kevin's lips turned pale as he took a deep breath and said, "Compared to being chased like prey by the Level Lord, we might as well face it. At most, we will just use the exit command."

It was pointless running. As a hunter, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign definitely had a powerful tracking ability. Compared to scattering and being eliminated one by one, it was better to gather the forces of them five. Although the chance of success was nearly zero, it was better than feeling cowardly.

Mu Yuesheng's eyes were as firm as ever. She said with a deep voice, "I would rather be eliminated now than run!"

Sunless slowly pulled out her sword, using her action to express her attitude.

At that moment, they had given up the thought of running. They mustered their courage to engage in a final battle!

Suddenly, the four noticed something strange. They spontaneously looked at Shi Xiaobai.

Eh? At this moment, why did Shi Xiaobai, the first person who would usually step forward and say in high spirits "Let us destroy the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign", suddenly become so silent?

Shi Xiaobai slowly stopped looking into the distance. He looked at the other four and suddenly said, "All of you go first. Finish the



Titan Ape. This King will deal with the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign.”

The quartet were stunned when they heard this, but they quickly recovered. This...was very Shi Xiaobai.

They similarly felt the pressure of the immense terror, but the four of them thought of mustering their courage to put up a final resistance.

As for Shi Xiaobai, he was thinking of how to lead the few of them to pass the level and take on the greatest pressure himself. Even if the world were to collapse, he wanted to be the one standing on the highest spot to hold it up with his shoulders. He had no fear and did it at no expense.

However, how could the quartet agree to Shi Xiaobai's ‘willfulness’.

Mozzie shook her head and said, “No, Lord Shi Xiaobai, I want to fight alongside you!”

Kevin said firmly, “Although I’m very weak, I have to stay behind even if I can only buy you a second.”

Mu Yuesheng said with a deep voice, “I’m not leaving.”

Sunless looked silently at Shi Xiaobai. It had a feeling of ‘Here’s my look, you’ll understand’. Her attitude was very clear.

Shi Xiaobai could only nod his head helplessly. The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign emanated an aura that was rather terrifying. It could be said to be the most frightening demonic being Shi Xiaobai had ever encountered. Shi Xiaobai truly did not wish for his companions to risk their lives with him.

However, Shi Xiaobai also knew that the quartet would not agree for him to line the back for them. This was because there were certain things more important than clearing the level or the selection!

However, his nagging intuition told him that the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was coming for him, or something on his body. It was not as simple as 'hunting' trial-takers.

What would follow would be an intense battle!

Shi Xiaobai gave the others a glance and prepared to say some encouraging words. Suddenly a thought came to him as his eyes lit up slightly.

Shi Xiaobai looked at Mu Yuesheng and hesitated for a moment, "Can you, lend your strength to This King?"

Mu Yuesheng was stunned as she asked in wonderment, "What do you mean?"

Shi Xiaobai quickly explained the gist of his superpower. As there

was not much time, he simply said that his superpower allowed him to obtain strength from others, or even borrow the superpowers of others. Of course, to prevent a misunderstanding, he also mentioned that the position of the strength came from the chest.

The quartet was stunned when they heard this. A superpower that could borrow the superpowers of others was something unheard of.

At this critical juncture, Mu Yuesheng obviously did not refuse despite the energy borrowing process being somewhat embarrassing. She nodded and said, "Alright!"

Shi Xiaobai's eyes immediately flared. He actually had ideas regarding Mu Yuesheng's lightning superpowers. Now, he finally had a chance to try to realize those fantastic ideas!

Shi Xiaobai could not help but reach his hand towards Mu Yuesheng's chest. Then, he skillfully stopped his hand in front of her chest. Shi Xiaobai was already very skilled at this. Furthermore, Mu Yuesheng's chest was as flat as an airport runway just like Kali's, so Shi Xiaobai could immediately reach out his right hand without any mistakes.

When everyone saw this scene, they felt a dark cloud above their heads. They gave Shi Xiaobai strange looks as though they were saying, why are you so skilled...

A few seconds later, a bluish-purple circle of light suddenly

bloomed on Mu Yuesheng's chest. Shi Xiaobai reached his right hand in.

With a groan, Mu Yuesheng's face blushed slightly.

Moments later, Shi Xiaobai pulled out an icy-blue sword made of lightning!

Turning the sword into energy, Shi Xiaobai with satisfaction stabbed the icy-blue sword into his chest to store it.

Mu Yuesheng's petite body trembled. Looking at Shi Xiaobai's innocent gaze, she felt like she had been fallen for a scam.

## Chapter 262: It's Coming To This King For Dog Food

---

If Riko were here, she would have told Mu Yuesheng earnestly that this was only just the beginning of the scam. You would know when the time comes.

But soon, Mu Yuesheng was appalled to realize that others were clamoring to fall for the same scam.

Kevin took a deep breath and suddenly said, “Shi Xiaobai, you can take my superpower away as well.”

Kevin did not know what sort of feeling he would feel when his superpower was borrowed, if not he would rather die than make such a stupid decision.

Mozzie also immediately said, “Lord Shi Xiaobai, although I do not have any superpowers, please take away my strength if you need it.”

Even Sunless’ eyes lit up. She pointed to herself and whispered, “I...”

Mu Yuesheng immediately turned her head away and could not bear to look. She thought to herself that the three of you would definitely regret it.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He felt that the appearance of bliss was too sudden.

Shi Xiaobai turned to glance at Kevin. Although Kevin's superpower was pretty good, Shi Xiaobai's intuition told him that it would be a terrible choice. Shi Xiaobai, who always believed in his intuition, immediately turned to look at Mozzie.

Mozzie's tiny mosquito bites were not much different from Mu Yuesheng's. The chances of failure were extremely low and was not a bad choice. Unfortunately, she did not have any superpower.

Shi Xiaobai turned to glance at Sunless. This girl who always had a silent and cold temperament was actually somewhat adorable. Her figure was surprisingly good. The curvature around her chest could chase up to Riko in a few more years. This would be a great test of his 'skill'!

“This King's skill can definitely withstand a test.”

Shi Xiaobai had this thought in mind, and 'indiscriminately' reached out his hand towards Sunless' chest.

Kevin gave Shi Xiaobai a contemptuous look. He thought, this rascal was indeed a perverted wolf in sheep's clothing.

Shi Xiaobai came to a steady halt a few centimeters in front of Sunless' chest. Although Sunless remained expressionless, her body still trembled slightly.

However, moments later, there was no bluish-purple circle that lit up like around Mu Yuesheng's chest. Instead, nothing happened at all.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and said wistfully, "It seems that This King can temporarily only use a single person's power."

Shi Xiaobai had the nagging feeling that he could simultaneously borrow the powers of several people, but with his current strength, it appeared like he could only borrow from a single person.

However, the other four revealed looks as though it was obvious. Being able to borrow the superpowers of others was already insane. If he could borrow several, he would probably be viewed as a research specimen by insane scientific organizations.

However, Shi Xiaobai was still rather pleased to be able to borrow Mu Yuesheng's superpower. Just as he wanted to say something, his expression changed slightly. He turned to face the direction of the mountain's outskirts and whispered, "It's here!"

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was here!

At this moment, the sun that had been shrouded by fog but still emitting faint sun rays was rapidly devoured by a black figure, as though a solar eclipse was happening. The dimly lit world suddenly seemed overwhelmed by darkness. There was no light left to be seen.

This terrifying scene made them draw a cold gasp.

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly pulled out Holy Radiance from his right hand. The pure white blade emitted a warm glow, illuminating the path ahead, banishing the darkness.

Mu Yuesheng had dancing icy-blue bolts flashing around her. Although Shi Xiaobai had borrowed a portion of her superpower, he did not take away all of it. She could still use her superpower.

The mountain had fallen dead silent. The magical beasts that had been frightened were so afraid that they did not make the slightest sound.

The white glow and the icy-blue bolts of lightning seemed to be the only light in the mountain.

And at the end of the light's range, a figure suddenly appeared mid-air in the darkness. A figure darker than the darkness allowed its contours to be seen!

“Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign?”

Kevin exclaimed and upon a closer look, he said in shock, “No, it’s a dog?”

The figure that appeared had the outline of a dog. It was a tiny



poodle.

If it were any other time, everyone would believe this was a rare black poodle species. But at this moment, the poodle was floating in the air. Its fur was blacker than darkness. Its shimmering red eyes seemed to exude very anthropomorphic emotions, as though it exuded a certain desire.

This was clearly no ordinary magical beast, much less an ordinary dog.

But what was it?

What was with this black poodle for it to suddenly appear in a burst of light in this dark world?

“Woof! Woof!”

The black poodle let out two barks no different from an ordinary poodle’s. If dog lovers were here, they would probably melt from the two barks.

However, the few of them were aghast because these two extremely ordinary barks made them have a strong innate desire to run away in fear. It was a pressure that came right to the soul!

“What sort of dog is this!?”

Mozzie was nearly about to cry.

“This isn’t a dog.”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly took a step forward and stood in front of everyone. He said, “It is the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. You might not believe it, but it’s coming to This King for dog food!”

...

...

Stone Door #666

Four strangely dressed youths and a boy in an ordinary jacket were prostrated to the ground. They were drawing in deep breaths with a lingering fear.

A freckled youth turned to look at an armored youth beside him and grumbled, “Hey, Feng Yuanlin, you were after all one of the top ten people on the official forecast. Why are you in such a terrible state. I thought I would die together with you.”

The armored youth named Feng Yuanlin guffawed and said, “Don’t mind the details. Aren’t we fine now? Who knew that the whatever Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign is such a cute poodle. I bellowed once and it ran away in fear!”

The freckled youth rolled his eyes and chuckled. He said, “It’s unknown who was the one who bellowed in fear while running. I am seriously beginning to suspect that it was nepotism for you to be in the top ten in the official forecast. The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign clearly discovered something and rushed elsewhere, hence sparing us. We were truly lucky.”

Feng Yuanlin smacked his lips and said, “It must have not been able to hold its pee. I’ve reared dogs. It’s a bad habit of theirs.”

The freckled youth was rendered speechless as he said, “I feel like you are insulting my intelligence. The Level Lord is on a completely different level from the other creatures of the trials. That Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign can kill you with a fart.”

Feng Yuanlin said with lingering fear, “It’s that powerful? Even a fart can stink me to death?”

At this moment, a boy wearing a white jacket could no longer bear listening to the conversation. He said, “Feng Yuanlin, did you not check the information regarding the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower before you came?”

Feng Yuanlin scratched his head and said in embarrassment, “Me is a village boy. Me doesn’t know how to use the Internet.”

The other four were immediately rendered absolutely speechless.

The freckled youth drew a deep breath and said, “I’ll help you fill

in the details regarding the Level Lord. Listen carefully. I'll say it only once."

# Chapter 263: Negotiations Broke Down, Kill It!

---

The freckled youth drew a deep breath and said, “I’ll help you fill in the details regarding the Level Lord. Listen carefully. I’ll say it only once.”

Feng Yuanlin nodded and said, “Go ahead. Your accent isn’t very strong, so I can understand it. However, it’s lacking a charm and it’s also lacking in emotion. You don’t have an irresistible voice. Let me tell you, my secondary school’s teacher, her voice was what you would call soothing. Even the words ‘get lost’ from her sounded great.”

The jacketed youth chuckled and said, “This is the reason why you get your teacher to scold you ‘get lost’ ten times a day?”

The freckled youth hurriedly leaned over and whispered, “Let us fill him in. If this goes on, my IQ will dry up.”

The jacketed youth sighed and suddenly shouted at Feng Yuanlin, “Shut up, sit down, listen well!”

Feng Yuanlin immediately sat up straight, as though he was an attentive student. A second later, he said in surprise, “Fuck, you sure imitated my teacher’s tone. I nearly fell for it.”

The jacketed youth sneered and said, “The actions that follow these three words our teacher said have become instinct for you.”

At this moment, a wealthy-looking youth dressed in gold and silver suddenly said angrily with his back facing the rest, “Do you even want any more tips? If you keep spouting non-essential filler, I’m going to drop this!”

The wealthy boy turned his head and waved the cellphone in his hand and said, “Sorry, I wasn’t talking to you. I’ve been following a web novel recently. This author actually uses a few jokes to fill the story with filler. I fucking couldn’t tolerate it any longer. Anyway, there’s no way he’s gonna get a lot of tips from me, but he might get some if I’m feeling good.”

The others gulped and the freckled youth hurriedly turned around to look at Feng Yuanlin. With a hurried tone, he said, “Listen well, the other beings in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower are controlled by a program. They would be restored every month. For example, that python we just killed, it will be reborn a month later. However, the Level Lord would not be restored. Once it’s dead, it will never appear again. However, despite the thousands of years of existence, only one of the nine Level Lords of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower has died. The other eight have lived for thousands of years. Think carefully, what the hell does this mean?”

The youth in white jacket added on, “Even the descendants of the species that created the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower failed to kill the eight Level Lords. The only Level Lord that died was killed under the hands of the person named ‘Hero King’. Do you understand?”

Feng Yuanlin was astounded as he said, “Holy shit, he’s that impressive?”

The youth in the white jacket nodded his head in a deadpan manner.

Feng Yuanlin hurriedly stood up and patted himself on the buttocks. He urged the four, “Since the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign is so impressive, if it were to return for us, wouldn’t we be doomed? Why are we fucking resting? Quick, let’s hurry to the fourth level. This world is too dangerous!”

As Feng Yuanlin said, he immediately took the lead and went ahead.

The freckled teenager muttered, “I wonder who was the one who grumbled that his legs needed a rest. Why do I feel that accompanying Feng Yuanlin will be truly dangerous!”

The other three immediately nodded their heads.

...

Stone Door #17

Four people proceeded through a dusty, wind-filled desert. The female whopper was walking in front and was like a wall, blocking the raging dust storms for the three youths behind her.

The three youths were—the extremely handsome Heartless, the burly youth that defeated Kevin in the battle exchange, and a pigtailed youth who was a Zeus rookie but did not have many stage lines.

The four of them were members of Zeus. Heartless and company had already begun challenging the stone doors before Shi Xiaobai and company formed a group, but at this moment, they had yet to clear the third level for unknown reasons.

The four proceeded through the desert with ugly expressions. The pigtailed youth suddenly whispered, “Sorry, it’s my fault. If not for my suggestion of randomly pulling in a person as our fifth partner or if I had listened to Boss Heartless and waited for Zhengzhi and Xiangwen, we wouldn’t be trapped for so long in a ‘hell’ difficulty stone door because of that darn asshole.”

Zhenzhi was the short-haired teenager that changed his opinion of Shi Xiaobai during the counterattack on the Demon City. As for Xiangwen, he was the adonis who lost his arm because of his own selfishness and hatred during the tower defense.

Heartless said softly, “No one could have guessed when Zhengzhi and Xiangwen would arrive in the third level. They might have been eliminated early on. Your suggestion back then was correct. Furthermore, we had unanimously agreed to it. As for that asshole, he was chosen out of a number of people. For a heritage treasure, that asshole betrayed us. It was our fault for failing to read him. It’s not your own fault, so don’t blame yourself any further.”



The pigtailed youth sighed. His eyes were full of remorse as he said, “Zhengzhi...he arrived in the third level along with Tu Dahei. Those people from Gaia managed to wait for him, and we should have also waited, but because of me...”

The burly youth said with a deep voice, “Enough, cut it out. We are all at fault. We have already paid the price for not waiting for Zhengzhi and Xiangwen. The present problem isn’t this, but the descent of the Level Lord. We are in a very dangerous situation. Senior God of Swords had told us before the selection that we have to avoid the third level’s Level Lord regardless of anything. But we ended up getting stuck on this level.”

Heartless sighed slightly and said, “We are only short of a hundred points. Clearing this ‘medium’ difficulty stone door will allow us to clear the level. Let’s speed up!”

The others nodded as they gritted their teeth to speed up.

...

### Stone Door #233

The world was covered in darkness. Even the sun looked like it had been swallowed by darkness. Only a pure white sword and icy-blue lightning bolts were emitting the final bit of light.

Under the light’s illumination, a poodle with a pair of dark red eyes was hovering in mid-air. It barked twice, but its bark imposed

a pressure on the souls of the five people on the ground.

As the rest were surprised about the poodle's identity, Shi Xiaobai suddenly took a step forward. He said firmly, "This is not a dog. It is the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. You might not believe it, but it's coming to This King for dog food!"

With this being said, the four were immediately extremely surprised. Looking at Shi Xiaobai's back, their heads were filled with questions.

This dog is the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign? Hey, shouldn't the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign be a demonic sovereign with a thousand eyes? Why is it a dog? Also, what's up with the coming to you for dog food?

When the poodle heard this, it immediately barked twice. There was a clear hint of angry emotions in the two barks. The pressure on their souls also became more apparent. The weakest Mozzie and Kevin immediately turned pale.

However, Shi Xiaobai chuckled and said to the poodle, "When you requested the holy sword from This King, you were salivating. Don't tell me you are treating the Holy Radiance in This King's hand as dog food? Let This King tell you. It's not the first time This King has seen someone who likes to eat swords like you!"

The four faltered when they heard this.

Shi Xiaobai was talking to a dog? He knew dog-speak? Wasn't this dialogue somewhat wondrous?

“Woof!”

The poodle lowered its head to look at Holy Radiance in Shi Xiaobai's hand. A look of disdain appeared in its eyes, as it barked softly once.

Shi Xiaobai frowned and looked up at the poodle. He said in wonderment, “You say it's not this trashy holy sword in my hand? But another one?”

Another one?

Shi Xiaobai could not help but think.

Other than Holy Radiance, did he still have a second holy sword?

Wait, he did have a second holy sword!

That golden sword with the fair loli as a sword spirit!

“You are after her!” Shi Xiaobai stared with widened eyes.

The darn dog was after the loli!

He wanted to eat the golden sword?

No, or was he planning on eating the loli!?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes were immediately filled with anger. If it wanted to harm the loli, it was not to be forgiven despite it being a dog!

Shi Xiaobai turned to the four people behind him and said in indignation, "Everyone, This King's negotiations with this shameless dog have broken down. Looks like we need to engage in battle!"

Shi Xiaobai raised Holy Radiance, as though there was an irreconcilable enmity with the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign.

The poodle's look of disdain turned even more intense.

The other four were at a loss.

Why did the negotiations break down so suddenly?

Holy shit, who can translate the dog-speak for us!?

# Chapter 264: The Abrupt Sure Death Scenario

---

Upon hearing of the breakdown of negotiations with Shi Xiaobai, and how they were preparing to do battle, the black poodle's eyes revealed a look of contempt. It looked up slightly and seemed to have an anthropomorphized appearance, as though it was a humorous emoji.

If this were any other time, it would be considered an extremely cute puppy. But at this very moment, facing the incessantly flooding pressure from it, this poodle that was very likely the Level Lord could only be described as terrifying by the others.

The four people behind Shi Xiaobai would not treat the poodle as a cute pet, nor did any one of them have any hopes of being lucky. They knew that if they refused to use the exit command immediately, what would follow was an intense battle.

And the moment Shi Xiaobai raised Holy Radiance was the kick off to the battle!

Kevin had always been waiting for this opportunity because he could not endure it any further. The pressure on his soul gave him terror that he could not resist. His legs were constantly trembling as though they innately wanted to retreat and escape. He had been suppressing his innate terror, but if this carried on, it was very unlikely he could control it.

Kevin knew that he could not escape. Be it Mozzie that he liked or

Shi Xiaobai that he was grateful towards, he was not to disappoint them. It was not easy from him to wake up from the wallowing in glory he had always suffered. He had now seen the light, the future ahead of him. He did not want to run back into the darkness.

“Go to hell!”

Kevin was the first to break ranks. With an angry roar, he threw a gigantic boulder at the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign!

This was an ordinary boulder, but Kevin had thrown it out using the Price of Might, turning it into a missile!

“Boom!”

The missile-like boulder flew in mid-air, but about ten meters away from the poodle, it seemed to strike something. With an explosion, it turned to fragments that rained down.

The black poodle turned its head to glance at Kevin. Suddenly, a gigantic eyeball grew out of the darkness in front of Kevin!

“Be careful!”

Shi Xiaobai sensed a danger and shouted. He immediately turned to slash at the gigantic eyeball, but regardless how fast the strike was, it was too late. The eyeball had blinked at Kevin the moment it appeared.

Once it blinked, the gigantic eyeball was concealed by its black eyelids. It merged into the darkness before vanishing. As for Kevin, he was petrified into a cold-looking stone sculpture!

The rate of petrification was too fast. It went from the toes to his head. It was as though he had been brushed by a grayish-brown paint brush instantaneously.

Shi Xiaobai stared with widened eyes as anger overwhelmed his heart. He turned around and raised Holy Radiance to slash at the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. A gigantic eyeball suddenly appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai. As the eyeball stared at Shi Xiaobai, both his arms that had raised the sword immediately petrified! His feet, which were about to take a step forward, had petrified up to his waist!

At the same time, three gigantic eyeballs appeared in front of Sunless, Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng. The three failed to react in time and were unable to resist it. They were instantaneously transformed into stone sculptures.

From the moment Kevin threw the boulder, only three seconds had passed. Other than Shi Xiaobai having his limbs petrified, the other four were now cold stone sculptures!

The poodle gave a disdainful look as it raised its head to howl. One gigantic eye after another began to appear like stars in the darkness in the forest and the mountain.

Instantly, gigantic eyes that filled the world had opened. The dense and numerous eyes turned as they looked at Shi Xiaobai.

The poodle slowly flew over and barked lightly. Its red eyes were filled with greed and desire.

Shi Xiaobai could not understand the dog-speak from the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, but he could sense what the barks were conveying. And at this moment, it was saying, “Human, hand over the holy sword, and This Sovereign will spare your life.”

...

...

Shanghai City, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Main Auditorium

More than ten hours had passed since the rookies entered the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. In the real world, the sky had already darkened as it was late at night.

Quite a number of people had left the packed auditorium. This was because more than half the rookies had been eliminated in the past ten or so hours. There was not much meaning left for many to continue waiting.

However, there were a few people who were staring at the large



stone monument, waiting for the numbers to change.

Riko and Yama Minamiya were already sitting in the front rows of the auditorium instead of the back. They stared intently at the stone monument with serious looks.

At this moment, a white-haired elder whose complexion was like a child's walked into the auditorium. He walked straight to the front rows of the auditorium with a wooden sword slung behind his back. Seeing Yama Minamiya and Riko, he hesitated for a moment before sitting at the only empty seat beside Yama Minamiya.

Yama Minamiya obviously noticed someone sitting beside him. Turning his head over, he was slightly surprised before saying politely, "Senior God of Swords!"

The elderly God of Swords nodded and said, "I left a while ago because I had something on. How's the situation?"

The elderly God of Swords saw the gigantic stone monument with densely-packed text and immediately gave up on the thought to carefully look at it. Since there was a junior he barely knew at least, the elderly God of Swords did not want to waste his efforts to analyze the data.

Yama Minamiya was a person who valued propriety, so he did not dare to think lightly of the elderly God of Swords who enjoyed a very high status. He hurriedly said, "Now, 552 people have been eliminated, leaving 448 people behind. There are 2 people at the

sixth level, 150 people on the fifth level, 1 person on the fourth level, 260 people on the third level, and 35 people on the second level. There's already no one left on the first level."

When the elderly God of Swords heard the numbers Yama Minamiya gave, he frowned slightly and said, "The fourth level is a middle level, but there's only one person... It appears that the fourth level has been randomly selected to be a competitive battle mode?"

Yama Minamiya nodded and said, "It's likely such a mode. The fourth level will eliminate quite a number of people."

The God of Swords fell silent when he heard this and asked again, "Who are the two at the sixth level?"

Yama Minamiya answered, "Speechless and Mu Lengxi."

"Oh? It seems like the two of them are really worthy for being forecast to be the top two by the officials."

The God of Swords sighed and asked again, "At this moment, most people are left in the third level. I believe the third level's Level Lord is about to descend?"

Yama Minamiya said with a sigh, "Sigh, the third level's Level Lord has already descended!"

The God of Swords was slightly taken aback. Seeing Yama

Minamiya's heavy expression, he curiously asked, "The few rascals from your side are still at the third level?"

Yama Minamiya gave a wry smile and said, "Senior, you might not know, but all four of our children are on the third level!"

The God of Swords could not help but look pitifully at Yama Minamiya. He said, "Then be mentally prepared. The third level's Level Lord is rather greedy! If any of your rascals have a treasure on them, their lives might be in danger."

# Chapter 265: Those Foolish Lives Are Worth Anything?

---

Yama Minamiya frowned as well. There was obviously a lot of rumors regarding the third level's Level Lord amongst the common populace. According to the data over many years, the third level's death rate was the highest. This was because the other levels' Level Lords would abide to the assessment program's rules to pursue trial-takers. They seldom truly killed.

As for this dog, it was extremely greedy. For the treasures on the trial-takers, it could do nearly anything. In order to obtain better results, the trial-takers would usually bring rather precious treasures or weapons that could raise their strength.

But in fact, this was just a tiny tidbit regarding the entire Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. Nearly every level's Level Lord had the same description—If you were unlucky to encounter one, there is a high chance of being eliminated.

Yama Minamiya had only received news of the selection mode and that it was held in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower this morning. Usually, he did not engage in much research regarding the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, so the short amount of time given to him was clearly not enough for him to research on the Level Lord, which did not matter much. He had only heard about it from the surrounding people's chatter.

Yama Minamiya said in an intropunitive manner, "Sigh, I should not have been this careless. If I were more meticulous, and knew about the information regarding the third level's Level Lord,

maybe...”

At this moment, Riko turned her head over and consoled him, “Actually, even if we knew, it wouldn’t be of much use. The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is competitive in nature. Whether one encounters the third level’s Level Lord is an outcome after the competition. Furthermore, the Level Lord’s information is something everyone doesn’t pay much attention to because it’s not very useful paying attention to it. Its strength far exceeds the Psionic Mortal Realm. If they encounter a Level Lord, there is almost no way for the trial-takers to escape from its hunt. They would eventually have to use the exit command.”

The informative notices regarding the Level Lord were always condensed into a passage: Try to clear the level before the Level Lord descends. If it’s impossible, try your luck because the Level Lord released by the assessment program is to push the survival of the fittest another step further. Hence, when the Level Lord hunts, it would ‘hold back’. There would be a number of people who would escape the calamity, but those who are unfortunate enough to encounter the Level Lord, make sure to use the exit command in a timely manner.

The elderly God of Swords did not agree with Riko’s words. He said with a heavy heart, “The details determine the outcome. Back in my youth, I was given the glorious name of Sword Prodigy. At the fourth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, I ignored the advice of others and entered the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower arrogantly. As I was not alert enough, I wasted a lot of time in the second level. At the third level, I encountered the Level Lord. Although I managed to survive, my sect’s important treasure was snatched. Hence, before the selection, I had exhorted the children

several times. If those children take it to heart, it would probably be very useful for them.”

The elderly God of Swords was using his experience as an example. It was rather educative in nature but he was very bad at choosing the right time to say this. After he finished speaking, the intropunitive mood in Yama Minamiya's eyes intensified. However, with the elderly God of Swords identity, he obviously did not care about the feelings of a junior he had just met a few times.

Riko was somewhat irritated. Her father's pain was also hers. She bore a tiny grudge against the elderly God of Swords in her heart when she suddenly thought of something. With a sly smile, she said, “Eh? Why do I seem to see the Ye siblings' names among the list of names on the third level?”

“Impossible!”

Upon hearing this, the elderly God of Swords subconsciously retorted. However, he immediately turned his head to the stone monument. The stone monument was separated into six areas by five red lines. The third level had the most number of people, so the elderly God of Swords squinted his eyes to carefully examine each line.

The reason why he did not enquire the situation of the Zeus rookies was because he partly did not think Yama Minamiya would pay any attention to them and because he had absolute confidence in them. However, when Riko said that she saw the Ye siblings listed on the third level, he immediately found it unbelievable and

somewhat worried.

Soon, the elderly God of Swords' pupils constricted. He saw the name Heartless.

Following that was the names of the female whopper, the burly teenager and the pigtailed youth. The elderly God of Swords gaped slightly.

At a location slightly lower, he saw Sunless' name. The high-spirited elderly God of Swords immediately felt like a deflated balloon.

The elderly God of Swords murmured, "Impossible. I told you about the matter in all seriousness and even mentioned the embarrassing mishap I encountered years ago. All of you should have taken it to heart. Little Sun might have been deducing sword arts and did not pay attention, but Heartless and the other rascals had sworn not to fall at the third level. Could that darn dog be my nemesis?"

The elderly God of Swords' eyes glazed over as though he was immersed in an unpleasant memory.

Upon seeing this, Yama Minamiya stared at Riko. He knew the elderly God of Swords cared greatly about his reputation, so he had deliberately not mentioned this matter. However, Riko had exposed the matter. Although the elderly God of Swords was somewhat a 'bitch', he was still a senior we have to respect!

Riko stuck out her tongue as she thought in her mind.

You can't blame me. I must have learned all this from Shi Xiaobai.

...

...

Stone Door #233

In just the first encounter, Shi Xiaobai had his limbs petrified. The other four were completely petrified. This small team was clearly collapsing, revealing how powerful the Level Lord was.

Shi Xiaobai had watched with his own eyes his partners 'insta-killed'. A negative potpourri of emotions—rage, guilt, and hatred—arose in his heart. However, he did not lose his rationality.

This was because Shi Xiaobai could still sense the lifeforce from the partners around him. Hence, he could judge that although their bodies had turned into stone sculptures, they were equivalent to being sealed in ice. They were restricted by a layer of grayish-brown stone.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign did not immediately kill him.



“Human, hand the holy sword over and This Sovereign will spare your life.”

The black poodle floated not far from Shi Xiaobai. Its red eyes were filled with greed and eagerness. It could understand human language, but it could not produce human speech. Hence, its barks could be conveyed into human speech as it transmitted it to Shi Xiaobai.

As it wanted Shi Xiaobai to hand over the holy sword, it needed to communicate with Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai locked eyes with the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign for a few moments. Suddenly he took a few deep breaths, gradually calming himself down.

Every time he found himself in danger, Shi Xiaobai was always very calm. However, when his partners were also on the brink of death, Shi Xiaobai would feel intensely perturbed.

However, Shi Xiaobai knew very well that such a time called for calmness. If he lost his mind, he would have not be able to protect anything!

Shi Xiaobai took one last deep breath. His emotions gradually calmed down as his thoughts cleared.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign gave Shi Xiaobai a derisive look. With a bark, it meant, “Your partners have yet to die, but

after ten minutes, no one else can save them. Hand over the holy sword and This Sovereign might spare their lives.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai gave a dismissive sneer and said coldly, “Do you think that compared to the holy sword, those foolish lives are worth anything?”

...

## Chapter 266: This Is A True King

---

“Do you think that compared to the holy sword, those foolish lives are worth anything?”

The cold voice that came out of the black-haired youth’s mouth, the dismissive sneer, the cold disregard towards life in his eyes coupled with the heartless and cruel words gave Shi Xiaobai an aura as cold as a bitter winter through and through.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign’s eyes glazed over briefly before it gave a few probing stares at Shi Xiaobai. Moments later, it barked, “What you said is right. The lives of these few humans are not even worth a ray of golden light of the holy sword. This Sovereign was muddleheaded. Then, what if it was your life? Which do you think is more important, life or an external object?”

“This King’s life is obviously much more valuable than the holy sword.”

Shi Xiaobai coldly said, “However, This King’s life is decided by himself. You cannot use it as a chip.”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign sneered and said, “Fool, do you still not see the situation you are facing? If This Sovereign wants you dead, it would not even need a second.”

The dense swarm of gigantic eyeballs immediately stared at Shi Xiaobai with intense murderous intent. The bloodthirsty atmosphere pervaded the world. If it were anyone else, they would

probably pee their pants and faint from fright.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not even winch his eyebrows. Instead, he coldly said, “If you dared to kill This King, would you have waited to this point in time? You want This King to hand over the holy sword, which is why you took the initiative to interact with This King. This proves one thing. Unless This King willingly hands over the holy sword, there will be no way for you to take the holy sword from This King. If not, why is there a need to ask This King for the holy sword?”

“The eagerness in your eyes have revealed something. You do not dare to kill This King because once This King dies, you will similarly fail to obtain the holy sword. With the eagerness you are currently feeling, you would have already killed the goose for the golden egg. Hence, This King’s life cannot be used as a chip!”

When Shi Xiaobai said this, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was momentarily confounded. Quite a while later, it said in a deep voice, “It looks like you are rather smart. However, you should know that in front of absolute strength, whatever intelligence is useless. This Sovereign does thirst for the holy sword, but that does not mean This Sovereign needs to obtain the holy sword. If This Sovereign turns impatient, so what if the holy sword is given up and you killed?”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and laughed when he heard this. It was as though he had heard the greatest joke in the world. He said, “That sentence of yours reminds This King of a humorous phrase—a dog will leap over a wall in desperation. Unfortunately, you have probably overlooked something. Sorry, but you can’t hold

back This King!”

When Shi Xiaobai finished saying this, he suddenly closed his eyes.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was just about to laugh derisively when it noticed Shi Xiaobai closing his eyes. Immediately, it said in surprise, “How did you discover it?”

Shi Xiaobai chuckled with his eyes closed, “This King noticed from the beginning that those petrifying eyes appeared in front of us, so This King guessed that your petrifying eyes can only be effective when it locks eyes with others. And the outcome is that a simple attempt by This King made you give it away. Now, the situation is clear. There is no way for you instantly petrify This King, and he can leave this world just by speaking the exit command. Unless you attack and kill This King now, there is no way for you to hold back This King!”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign’s eyes had a bloodthirsty look in them. What the human in front of it said was indeed true. Its thoughts had been seen through, and it felt like it was being twisted around the human’s little finger. This infuriated the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, but its greed for the holy sword made it unable to kill the darn human.

With the instantaneous petrification seen through by Shi Xiaobai, other than instantly killing Shi Xiaobai, there was indeed no other way to prevent Shi Xiaobai from saying the exit command. However, this would lead to it losing the holy sword. This made the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign fall into an

extremely passive situation.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign calmed down moments later as it suddenly thought of something. It said with a sneer, “Do you think you can fool This Sovereign? Since you did not immediately use the exit command, it proves that there are reasons in this world that prevent you from leaving!”

“Bullshit!”

Shi Xiaobai gave an expression that said ‘talking to you is tiring’. He said, “This King obviously has a reason to stay behind, if not, why would This King engage in all this nonsense with you? The reason why This King came to this trial grounds is to become the first person in the trials and clear all nine levels. How can This King quit here? And most importantly, This King’s dignity of a King forbids This King to run away at this moment in time. The dignity of a King is more important than life!”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was momentarily stunned. It actually suddenly sensed a ‘regal’ aura from the human in front of it. Although the words he said sounded arrogant, his tone and attitude were as though it was only natural. It could not discern its authenticity.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign fell silent for a few moments before saying, “This Sovereign agrees to the reason of you staying behind. Although your strength is insufficient to clear the Nine Revolutions Transcendental World, but This Sovereign thinks highly of your courage and spirit. Hand the holy sword over and This Sovereign will let you leave.”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head as he said with a sigh, “You still haven’t understood the intentions of This King. This King does not care about a puny holy sword. What This King cares about is dignity and glory. Your tricks have been seen through by This King. If This King were to surrender over the holy sword without doing anything else, even This King will look down on himself. Do you understand? You are unable to make This King hand over the holy sword in a convincing manner!”

When the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign heard this, its eyes shimmered. Immediately, it said, “How will you be able to hand over the holy sword in a convinced manner?”

The corner of Shi Xiaobai’s lips revealed a smile. With an expression that stated, ‘you finally got it’, he said, “This King’s strength was sealed by the Evil Gods of various worlds and now is at the Psionic Mortal Realm. In terms of combat power, This King is indeed inferior to you. However, This King is extremely confident in his speed. Speed is what This King is most confident in, so if you were able to convince This King with your speed, This King will hand over the holy sword to you with both hands!”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign’s eyes immediately gave off a hint of excitement. Although it could not judge if the ‘Evil God seals’ were true, it knew that a human at the Psionic Mortal Realm would never be able to be faster than it regardless of anything. The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign immediately barked, “How will you be convinced when it comes to speed?”

Shi Xiaobai said softly, “Very simple. You give This King a

minute head start. No, let This King have a thirty second head start. Just thirty seconds! You can chase after thirty seconds. If you can chase up to This King in an hour, This King will be convinced and hand over the holy sword to you. If you are unable to chase up to This King, you are to let This King go.”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign found it unbelievable when it heard this. “Are you kidding?”

With a head start of thirty seconds, it was given an hour to chase. It was impossible for a Psionic Mortal Realm weakling to ever be able to escape!

It could use its sense of smell to lock onto Shi Xiaobai’s location. With its speed that was near-sonic speeds, not even the strongest humans in the world, much less someone at the Psionic Mortal Realm, could escape from it!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign looked suspiciously at Shi Xiaobai and said, “Are you sure thirty seconds is enough? Why does This Sovereign think you are trying to fool This Sovereign? If This Sovereign were to catch you, you will not go back on your word and refuse to hand over the holy sword, right?”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he immediately gave an incensed look. He angrily said, “Are you insulting This King? Having a thirty second head start is already very shameful for This King. With This King’s speed, ten seconds, or even three seconds is enough. However, in order to show respect for your dignity, This King said thirty seconds that even This King feels like he’s bullying you. But now, you actually insult This King?”



“Since you address yourself as This Sovereign, you must be a sovereign king of a particular country. Then let This King ask you. How can a puny holy sword be compared to a King’s honor? If This King were to lose and go back on his word, what would happen to This King’s honor? If it were you, would you embarrass yourself for an external object?”

When the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign heard Shi Xiaobai’s angry words, it fell into silence for a long time.

Shi Xiaobai said resentfully, “This King would rather die than escape, but would rather die than hand the holy sword to someone who insults This King. If you doubt This King’s character as King, then there is no need to continue this discussion. Yes or no, make it clear. As a sovereign king, how can you be so wishy-washy?”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign stared at Shi Xiaobai for a very long time. With a wave of its dog paws, the petrification on Shi Xiaobai’s limbs immediately dispersed.

Shi Xiaobai stretched his limbs and said in satisfaction, “Very well. You have won the respect of This King. If you are able to chase up to This King, so what if I were to give you a puny holy sword? It’s just a tip of the iceberg when it comes to This King’s treasures.”

Shi Xiaobai turned around and was about to begin running.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign looked at Shi Xiaobai with

slight shock. This was the first time it encountered such a human. From his tone, it could not sense the slightest hint of deceit.

Are you really a sovereign that was sealed of his strength? He did not even care about the holy sword? His treasures were so exaggerated?

At this moment, although the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign refused to believe what was said, it could not deny its possibility.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai, who was about to run, knitted his brows slightly. Pointing at the four petrified people, he softly said, "Let them go. Although This King does not care about the lives of these fools, they come from the same place as This King. If in the future other people were to know that This King turned a blind eye to helping them, it would be a blotch on This King's reputation."

When the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign heard this, it hesitated slightly.

Shi Xiaobai immediately said with a sneer, "It seems you still look down on This King. This King believes he has shown sufficient sincerity, yet you hesitate over a few trivial lives. This King can't sense your sincerity. Whatever, these people may affect This King's reputation slightly, but it is nothing much. Kill them if you wish. Pretend as though This King did not say a word."

Shi Xiaobai gave the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign a glance that had a faint look of disappointment. He silently turned around and did not look at the four petrified people again.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign had obviously noticed the look of disappointment. It gaped and began ruminating.

For it killing these four humans was like stepping on the grass on the road. There was not a single effect. And from beginning to end, Shi Xiaobai had not mentioned these people, and he had a nonchalant attitude towards them. He had only briefly mentioned that because of his 'reputation'.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign saw the look of disappointment in Shi Xiaobai's eyes. Immediately, it also felt that it had not been sincere.

Would it hurt if it released the four trivial humans to make a gesture of sincerity?

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign waved its dog paws and immediately Sunless and company were released from their petrified states!

...

## Chapter 267: Ah, That Spot Won't Do

---

Sunless and company were released from their petrified states. Immediately, they cast complicated gazes at Shi Xiaobai's back. Although they had been petrified, they could still hear. Although they could not understand what the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign's barking meant, they could hear everything Shi Xiaobai had said.

The four of them were not fools. They understood Shi Xiaobai very well, and were certain what Shi Xiaobai was trying to do.

Shi Xiaobai had pretended to act cold and ruthless, with complete disregard for their lives. He labeled them as 'fools', not because it was a contrived plot of him revealing his true evil nature. He did it to deceive the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign so that it would ignore them, the people Shi Xiaobai cared the most.

Shi Xiaobai's acting was truly outstanding. Anyone who did not understand Shi Xiaobai would believe he was a person with a heart of stone after hearing the cold tone in his words and seeing the expression he gave. The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign clearly did not understand Shi Xiaobai, so it had been deceived.

However, the quartet who understood Shi Xiaobai's character knew Shi Xiaobai was acting. Immediately, they felt their hearts ache for him. It was imaginable how tormenting it was for his heart to force himself, a passionate youth with a rich sense of righteousness to say such cold and ruthless words, and for him to force himself to appear disdainful so as to not reveal the slightest flaw.

Tears began to well up in Mozzie's eyes. Even a rare look of sorrow appeared on Sunless' face. Mu Yuesheng bit her lower lips lightly, while Kevin clenched his fists. They silently watched Shi Xiaobai's cold back, and felt sorry for him and also admiration.

Despite the impasse, he had managed to calmly analyze the situation and by stacking lies on top of lies, he managed to wisely deceive the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. He had managed to create hope in such a despairing situation.

How could such a youth not stir the feelings of admiration and for them to gasp at his awesomeness?

However, what was Shi Xiaobai to do after pushing the situation to this stage? How was he to escape the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign after this?

The quartet were extremely worried but they could not speak at this moment. They could only have their backs face the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign and try their best to hide their sorrow. This was because if they were to make any unusual moves, it was very likely to expose Shi Xiaobai. It would result in all his hard work from before to fail.

Not only would it hurt the painstaking efforts Shi Xiaobai had gone through, it might also place Shi Xiaobai into a very dangerous situation.

At this moment, they were looking at Shi Xiaobai's back with

pained looks. They were praying for him and cheering for him in their hearts.

“This King will go ahead first. You can wait for thirty seconds or chase after three seconds. As long as you chase up to This King, This King will hand the holy sword to you with both hands.”

Shi Xiaobai turned to look at the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. He did not even glance at the quartet at all, as though he truly did not care about them.

After Shi Xiaobai finished speaking, he immediately used Crab Steps to dash forward at a blazing speed. Soon, he disappeared in the woods of the mountain.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign watched Shi Xiaobai's disappearing back and used its sense of smell to lock onto Shi Xiaobai's position. When it sensed his speed, it was quickly surprised. He dared to make such a boast with such a speed?

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign sneered in its heart. It was apparent that the arrogant human had belittled its speed.

Shi Xiaobai's speed was indeed considered the apex of the Psionic Mortal Realm, but compared to transonic speeds, it was as slow as a turtle's crawl.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign patiently waited for the thirty seconds to end. It was extremely keen to convince Shi

Xiaobai completely so that he would hand it the holy sword!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign turned its head to glance at the quartet. After hesitating for a moment, it finally chose to ignore them. Its innate nature was not bloodlust, and if it were to backtrack on its words now, the human might also backtrack on his words. That would be a terrible mistake.

The thirty seconds quickly passed. The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign did not wait for even a second. Its floating body dashed forward with a 'boom'. Its speed was too fast for the naked eye to distinguish.

The quartet was given a fright when they saw the speed of the poodle because they were still hoping that the poodle that was floating in the air was not fast.

This speed was on a completely different level than Shi Xiaobai's. It was just a matter of seconds before it could catch up to Shi Xiaobai.

Mozzie said in a panic, "What do we do?"

Sunless, who was always silent, said resolutely at that moment, "Believe him."

After saying the two words, Sunless suddenly turned to head in the opposite direction from which Shi Xiaobai had headed to. It was in the direction towards the core of the mountain!

The other three immediately understood Sunless' thoughts. They believed that Shi Xiaobai would be able to buy them time while he held the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign back. They had to take advantage of this time to kill the Titan Ape and clear this 'hell' difficulty stone door. As such, they would have enough points to head to the fourth level!

The eyes of the three people immediately turned resolute. They chased after Sunless' departing figure with all their might!

After the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign revealed such a terrifying speed, Sunless was still able to believe that Shi Xiaobai was able to hold it back. As people who knew Shi Xiaobai longer, how could they have a reason to not believe in him?

Even if they could not think of any means Shi Xiaobai had to not get caught up by the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, they still chose to believe!

This was because Shi Xiaobai was a person who was extremely reliable during critical moments!

...

...

In the outskirts of the mountains, Shi Xiaobai had suddenly come to a stop after dashing forward for a distance. He reached his right



hand into his chest and pulled out an icy-blue sword!

Following that, Shi Xiaobai kneaded the icy-blue sword into a blob of icy-blue light. Then, he stretched both his hands into the light blob!

“Hurry up! Faster!”

Shi Xiaobai’s hands moved extremely quickly inside the icy-blue blob!

In the woods, Mu Yuesheng, who was running midway suddenly stared with widened eyes as she quickly covered her mouth. Her entire being began to tremble violently.

Mozzie, who had caught up from behind, exclaimed, “Sister Yuesheng, what’s wrong? Why is your face so red?”

Mu Yuesheng’s face was as red as an apple. She shook her head at Mozzie and blurted the words out of her trembling lips, “Nothing.”

There was no way for Mu Yuesheng to explain the sensation she was experiencing. That sudden feeling of being groped by Shi Xiaobai all over made her so embarrassed that she wanted to find a hole to burrow herself in.

However, Mu Yuesheng knew that she had to endure. Regardless of anything, she had to endure. She would never allow herself to

disturb whatever Shi Xiaobai wanted to do at such a critical juncture due to her embarrassment. Even if she did not know what Shi Xiaobai wanted to do, she had to support him unconditionally!

“Ah...that spot won’t do. How can you...?”

Mu Yuesheng wailed in her heart. She covered her mouth to prevent herself from making a sound while closing her eyes. There was no way for her to move any further. She felt as though time was going extremely slowly.

## Chapter 268: Rub, Rub!

---

Shi Xiaobai was actually feeling extremely nervous. Although he was trying to calm himself down as much as he could and he had successfully deceived the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, Sunless and company were still in constant danger. He could not guarantee that the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign did not have a bloodthirsty nature. Even a 1% chance was a risk Shi Xiaobai found too much!

That was risking his partners' lives!

If the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign demanded for Holy Radiance, he would have exchanged it for his partners' safety without another word.

However, what the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign wanted was the golden holy sword in which the sword spirit loli resided.

Shi Xiaobai could easily part with the golden holy sword just like Holy Radiance, but the loli was a life that Shi Xiaobai could not selfishly give away.

Hence, Shi Xiaobai finally chose to use a risky method that needed both wisdom and courage!

And this moment was the most critical juncture!

Shi Xiaobai's hands kneaded the icy-blue light blob at a very fast

speed. Slowly, the light blob began to take the shape Shi Xiaobai wanted!

“It’s done!”

Shi Xiaobai had completed the design he had in his mind very quickly. A pair of icy-blue shoes had appeared in his hands!

Shi Xiaobai quickly took off his shoes and wore the pair of icy-blue shoes!

At this moment, a figure was charging towards him from a distance away. It stopped not far away from Shi Xiaobai.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign had caught up!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign had a derisive look in its eyes when it saw Shi Xiaobai motionless. It barked, “Have you given up?”

Shi Xiaobai gave the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign a look of despise and said softly, “Naive. This King felt that having a thirty second head start is being too browbeat against a dog. So This King stopped to wait for you.”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign scorned, “In terms of boasting ability, you are the best human This Sovereign has ever seen. With that speed that is no different from a turtle’s crawl, This Sovereign...”

Before the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign finished its words, it suddenly saw Shi Xiaobai turn around. His right foot gently rubbed against the ground!

Just a slight rub, caused electric bolts to spark beneath Shi Xiaobai's feet. His entire being bolted forward like lightning. In a blink of an eye, he had traversed a distance of more than a kilometer. The speed was almost as fast as lightning!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign stared with widened eyes. An anthropomorphic expression of disbelief appeared on its dog face.

How could he be so fast?

How could he be this quick!?

Shi Xiaobai turned his head and shouted at the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, "What do you think of This King's speed that is like a turtle's crawl?"

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign suddenly felt its dog face burn. It immediately shot at Shi Xiaobai like a cannon.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign's speed was also very fast and it nearly traversed the kilometer in a few seconds. However, just as it was about to catch up to Shi Xiaobai, Shi Xiaobai's left foot rubbed against the ground gently!

The rubbing generated electric currents. The electric bolts that appeared beneath his feet were like icy-blue pixies. Shi Xiaobai bolted forward once again. Again, with an incredible speed, it left the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign in the dust.

Motherfucking electricity-generating friction!

This wasn't scientific!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign roared and chased once again with sonic speeds.

Shi Xiaobai rubbed his feet once again, and pulled away again with lightning speed!

How could the speed of sound compare to the speed of lightning?

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign noticed that it could not chase up to Shi Xiaobai. What was most exasperating was that Shi Xiaobai would leisurely stop and wait for it to chase up whenever he opened up a gap. Every time it was about to touch him, a gentle rub was enough to open a despairing distance between them.

After failing several times, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign did not immediately chase him again. Instead, it stopped and looked at Shi Xiaobai's feet with stunned disbelief and indignation. It exclaimed, "What are those shoes?"

Shi Xiaobai turned around and gave a lofty glance and said arrogantly, “These are This King’s skating shoes!”

To be precise, they were skating shoes constructed out of Mu Yuesheng’s superpower. It was a pair of skating shoes that had the power of lightning in them!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign had an inexplicable change of expression. This was because it had never heard the term skating shoes. However, from its point of view, the pair of shoes had to be a divine artifact. Not only did this human possess a holy sword, he even possessed such an awesome divine artifact known as skating shoes!

The greed in the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign’s eyes turned more intense. However, it did not immediately take action because it had realized that there was no way for it to catch up!

Shi Xiaobai lightly laughed and said, “Have you given up? In terms of boasting ability, you are the best dog This King has ever seen.”

When the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign heard this, it let out an angry bellow and rushed forward once again!

Shi Xiaobai turned his head and rubbed his foot once more. Immediately, he appeared a kilometer away.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign gnashed its teeth in anger.

It felt that this was the most embarrassing moment it had ever experienced in its life. Suddenly, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign saw a forest in front!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign's eyes lit up immediately. According to its observations, the human would only run straight every time. The spots he stopped at were a result of different heights or because he needed to make a turn. And at this moment, the forest was an obstacle that made it impossible for him to dash in a straight line!

The chance was here!

“Your good luck ends here!”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign fumed with a roar. It chased after Shi Xiaobai as though it was insane!

It had to be said that the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign's observation was done very meticulously. Its guess was very accurate. If it were Mu Yuesheng's 'Lightning Flashstep', there was indeed a need for her to run in a straight line. She would only be able to lament at her inadequacy against a forest with obstacles that lined the area.

However, Shi Xiaobai had long seen through this. He had figured out that it was insufficient to only run in straight lines in a mountain!



Hence...he had constructed skating shoes!

Shi Xiaobai charged towards the forest at lightning speed and just as he was about to collide with the first tree, he suddenly rubbed his foot gently. He abruptly stopped the forward momentum he had!

Shi Xiaobai did not stop but slightly changed his angle. With another rub, he shot forward. With another rub, he would immediately stop as though he had jammed on car brakes!

Shi Xiaobai was still somewhat unfamiliar at the beginning, but after a few seconds, he slowly became adept at it. He constantly rubbed his feet and would at times, charge forward like lightning, or at other times stop and change his direction. He was able to dart through the forest, which was filled with obstacles, like flowing water!

Shi Xiaobai was like an electric bolt that could change trajectories and reflect. He snaked through the forest at an extremely fast speed!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was flying above the forest and was not obstructed by any of the obstacles, but even so, it could only close the gap by a tiny bit. It could not catch up to Shi Xiaobai no matter what!

“Hahaha...”

Shi Xiaobai, who was darting through space like a bolt of lightning, guffawed. His boisterous laughter resounded through the quiet forest!

One step, two steps. One step, two steps!

Each step was like a claw!

As though they were devil's footwork!

Rub, rub!

He constantly rubbed against the rough ground!

Rub!

Shi Xiaobai darted through the forest, across the mountains. With a pair of skating shoes, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was left in his dust!

Suddenly, a dilapidated ruins appeared in front of him. Shabby stone buildings had blocked off his path. Uneven levels of buildings made them seem like conjoined mountain peaks!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign's eyes lit up. The dense cluster of buildings had gaps so narrow that a human could not pass through. It was as though a mountain had blocked the road in front of Shi Xiaobai.

“Try to keep rubbing for This Sovereign!”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign gave a hysterical laugh. It had seen an opportunity!

# Chapter 269: Leaped Over A Wall In Desperation

---

In the core area of Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain

Sunless surveyed her surroundings and frowned slightly. Due to the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign's arrival, all the magical beasts had hidden away in fear. The stone door which was at 'hell' difficulty had dropped several levels in difficulty. She was not met with any resistance on her way, so she quickly arrived in the core region.

But...the Titan Ape had also hidden itself!

Sunless was feeling somewhat anxious. It was a race against time for them. Every second they wasted was an additional second of danger for Shi Xiaobai.

However, with Sunless' personality, it was impossible for her to shout, "Damn you Titan Ape, how much of a coward are you?! Get the fuck out here to die!"

Sunless hesitated slightly before pulling out her silver sword and slashed out an azure sword beam.

"Boom! Boom! Boom...."

Azure sword beams began striking trees, rocks and the ground,

resulting in one explosion after another.

Sunless constantly slashed with her sword, and during this period of time, several magical beasts that had been in hiding ran out. Despite their homes being destroyed, they still escaped without looking back to find another hiding spot.

The trepidation these magical beasts felt had reached such a stage!

Although Mu Yuesheng had to stop for a period of time due to certain actions Shi Xiaobai had engaged in, she too had quickly arrived in the core area. After understanding the situation, she also began shooting beams of lightning bolts and joined the destructive lineup.

Only when the entire core area was blasted up by sword beams and electric bolts till they were in ruins did the duo stop in a discouraged state. It was unimaginable for them that the Titan Ape was that cowardly.

After some time, Mozzie and Kevin finally arrived. Kevin was still alright, but Mozzie, who was pushing herself with all her might, was already panting. The two were dumbfounded when they saw the aftermath of the destruction.

After Mu Yuesheng explained to them, the two understood the present situation and also grumbled over the cowardly actions of the Titan Ape. The anxiety shown on their faces also turned more intense.

They were in a race against time, and with the Titan Ape hiding in an unknown location, they were feeling extremely anxious!

The biggest problem they were facing now was the finding of the Titan Ape!

Suddenly, Mozzie seemed to have thought of something. She slowly constructed a sharp psionic knife in her right hand. Gritting her teeth and turning her head away, she slit her left wrist forcefully!

The knife immediately created a laceration on her skin as blood immediately gushed out!

When the other three saw this scene, Mu Yuesheng, who was the closest, immediately rushed to apply pressure on Mozzie's wound. She exclaimed, "What are you doing!?"

Kevin also anxiously rushed over and said with great concern, "I know you are uneasy and blaming yourself. We are feeling the same way too, but you can't commit suicide!"

Sunless also walked over. A soft blue light emitted from her hands as she covered the wound that was profusely bleeding.

Mozzie's face was somewhat pale as she frowned slightly. The laceration was truly painful, but when Mozzie saw the concerned looks of the others, she knew that they had misunderstood. She

hurriedly explained, “Blood. My blood might be able to lure the Titan Ape out!”

Mu Yuesheng immediately asked curiously, “Why?”

Kevin’s eyes lit up and said, “Titan bloodline?”

Mozzie nodded and tersely acknowledged it. She recalled that back when Shi Xiaobai was teaching her and Kevin, Mu Yuesheng and Sunless were not present. She hurriedly explained to the other two girls that she possessed a Titan bloodline.

From the name, ‘Titan Ape’, it was probably an ape with a portion of Titan blood. It might be attracted to her blood which also possessed Titan blood. Furthermore, after Lord Shi Xiaobai’s help, the purity of her bloodline had increased. The bloodline purity she had was probably one of the best out of those that still had Titan bloodline.

The trio immediately understood Mozzie’s intentions as a glimmer of hope appeared in their hearts.

Sunless suddenly whispered, “Nose.”

Everyone turned around in surprise and saw Sunless gesture for them to pinch their noses.

Mozzie had spent some time with Sunless, so she immediately understood her as she said, “You want us to pinch our noses?”

Sunless nodded. She used her sword's tip to suspend in mid-air the mud that had soaked with Mozzie's blood.

Suddenly, a strong smell of blood emanated from the mud. It began spreading like clouds being spread apart.

The rest hurriedly pinched their noses and said in surprise, "This?"

Sunless said in a deadpan manner, "Air."

Her superpower, which was related to air, was not restricted to sucking away all the air and creating a partial vacuum in an area. At this moment, she was using her superpower to allow the smell of the blood to spread better.

The smell of blood began spreading through the air like a stream, and soon, most of the core region was tinged with the smell of Mozzie's blood.

As time slowly passed, the quartet held their breaths as they waited with great anticipation.

Suddenly, the ground began shaking violently!

"Boom!"



A series of deafening footsteps resounded. From behind a nearby mountain, a huge head popped out!

It was an ugly ape's head filled with black fur!

This black ape stretched its head out. Its nostrils spewed hot white gasses that twirled around like clouds.

This was the Titan Ape!?

Heavens, this ape was larger than a mountain!

...

...

On the other end of the mountainous area, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign believed that it had seen a chance when Shi Xiaobai arrived in front of the buildings, but it soon realized that it was extremely wrong!

Shi Xiaobai jumped to the top of the buildings and immediately turned into the embodiment of a parkour youth. He constantly jumped and proceeded forward through the concrete jungle. At times he would seem to bore through holes like lightning and at other times spin in mid-air. He demonstrated the art of parkour through the use of extreme actions!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign tried with all its might and realized it was still unable to chase up to Shi Xiaobai. Furthermore, the gap between them was slowly opening up!

Even though it was in mid-air and it did not encounter any geographical obstacles, it still could not make up for the gap between the speed of sound and the speed of lightning!

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign felt a true sense of defeat. Just recalling Shi Xiaobai previously comment 'having a thirty second head start is already very shameful for This King' immediately made it feel depressed and in need of weeping.

It had been ravaged by the speed of a scum at the Psionic Mortal Realm!?

“You are forcing This Sovereign!”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was incensed. Its pride would not allow it to be this humiliated!

“Roar!”

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign opened its mouth and produced a resounding roar.

The dark sky's sun was once again eclipsed by the huge shadow. The sky immediately turned completely dark once again. And amidst the darkness, the black poodle's tiny profile began to

suddenly expand again and again!

Like a constantly expanding balloon, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign transformed into a gigantic ball darker than the darkness. The ball expanded into a size with a hundred meters in diameter before suddenly changing shape at a rapid speed.

Its four legs reached out to the ground from the ball. A massive mastiff's head appeared out of the ball and a tail, which seemed like a column that reached into the skies, stood straight up!

“Roar!”

A black mastiff that was several hundred meters tall, a height taller than the mountains, stood in between the heavens and earth. Its roar was deafening, as though it was about to shatter the sky!

Shi Xiaobai had already run very far away, but when he heard the roar, he turned his head in horror. He saw the massive black mastiff at the ends of his vision.

A pair of gigantic crimson eyeballs were like suns that emanated a cold beam of light. The murderous intent was intense, spreading from one horizon to the other!

At the next moment, the gigantic black mastiff moved. Running in mid-air, it was able to cross more than a kilometer with a single step!

Its movement speed was appalling!

At the same time, the dense and dark clouds in the sky suddenly shot a black bolt of lightning to the ground in front of Shi Xiaobai!

A ravine opened up in the land when it was struck by the heavenly black lightning!

With ravines in front of him, was there any path for him to proceed forward?

Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded.

The Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign had leaped over a wall in desperation.

...

# Chapter 270: Cowardly Retracted Its Head Like A Turtle

---

In the core area of Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain

The black-furred ape's head that peeped out of the mountain looked extremely ferocious. Its gigantic nostrils spewed out white gasses that looked extremely hot, as though a cold mountain was burning.

“This is the Titan Ape. It's massive!”

Everyone was shocked. The Titan Ape was more than a head higher than the hundred-meter-tall mountain. Without even seeing its body, it was imaginable how massive it was!

The Titan Ape's gigantic eyes, that looked like empty sockets, looked at the Mozzie's fresh blood spilled on ground. Wrinkles seemed to appear on its forehead, as though it was deep in thought.

Moments later, the Titan Ape suddenly let out a disappointed but angry bellow. It stared at Mozzie with eyes filled with murderous intent, as it sensed that it had been tricked.

The four immediately were on full alert and readied themselves as they prepared for the intense battle that was about to begin.

However, not only did the furious Titan Ape not appear out of

the other side of the mountain to kill these ‘ants’ that dared to trick it, but it roared in indignation before retracting its head back, becoming a cowardly turtle that retracted its head!

When the four saw this scene, they were immediately taken aback. Kevin said in a speechless manner, “What the fuck, that’s way too cowardly?”

The Titan Ape’s fear for the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was so deep that it was willing to swallow the rage of being tricked. It was an act of extreme cowardliness.

However, the Titan Ape had already revealed its location, so how could the four let it go. They immediately charged towards the mountain and circled around it, arriving on the other side of the mountain.

On the other side of the mountain, the Titan Ape, whose body was bigger than a mountain, was squatting on the ground with its body curled up. It was using the mountain as cover and deceiving itself into thinking that it was doing a good job hiding. But in fact, its buttocks had been exposed on the other side of the mountain.

The Titan Ape’s hiding posture like a child’s playing of hide and seek formed a stark contrast with its massively large and black-furred body.

This contrast was also a testimony of how terrifying the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was. To make the Titan Beast, a lord of magical beasts, to be so afraid that it was hiding like a child,

showed how terribly frightening the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was.

The four did not dare to approach the Titan Ape. Just a hundred meters away, they could already sense the terrifying power emitted from the Titan Ape's body.

Sunless was the first to lead the charge. Slashing out with her silver sword, an azure-colored sword beam struck the Titan Ape's body!

“Boom!”

The azure sword beam exploded on the Titan Ape's body producing a cold, metallic shimmer on its black fur, as though it was unscathed.

At the same time, Mu Yuesheng had gathered a blob of electric bolts and shot it at the Titan Ape like a missile. Mozzie slashed out Grilling Hammer from afar while Kevin picked up a massive boulder and threw it out after using Price of Might!

“Boom!”

Explosive sounds succeeded one after another. The metallic sheen on the Titan Ape's black body intensified. Despite being subject to such attacks, it did not make even a sound. All it did was turn its head at the quartet a hundred meters away. Its eyes were filled with contempt, as though it was watching four trivial ants.

It was as though the quartet's strike was just giving it a scratch. It was unimaginable how powerful the Titan Ape's body defense was!

Sunless was not discouraged as she slashed out again. The sword produced an azure sword beam once again, but this time, there were howling winds that accompanied the beam, as though there were numerous sharp blades!

“Clang! Clang! ...”

This stormy wind that resembled blade edges struck the Titan Ape, resulting in incessant clanking sounds of metal colliding.

Mu Yuesheng conjured a gigantic icy-blue light blob in her hands. The electric bolts sizzled as they sparked around, like testy icy-blue pixies.

With a sharp cry, Mu Yuesheng shot out a thick icy-blue beam of light at the Titan Ape.

“Boom! Boom! Boom...”

The icy-blue electric current crawled around the Titan Ape's body as it constantly exploded.

Mozzie gritted her teeth and continued launching several Kun Peng Hammer strikes as well, enveloping the Titan Ape in flames



and their high temperatures. Kevin kept picking up boulders from the ground and constantly threw them at the Titan Ape as though he was pelting it with a barrage of artillery strikes!

Against the four people's crazy bombardment, the Titan Ape remained motionless, but the layer of metallic sheen eventually began to flicker.

“Roar!”

The Titan Ape finally seemed to find it unbearable as it growled angrily at the four.

The growl was deafening and it was accompanied by a strong wind. It toppled a few large trees and nearly blew the four away.

In the storm, Sunless suddenly slashed again. This strike split the storm apart as it headed straight for the Titan Ape's head.

The sword beam smashed into the Titan Ape's gigantic nostrils. The gushing hot gasses that it constantly breathed out suddenly came to a halt.

Deep wrinkles appeared on the Titan Ape's forehead as its nostrils stirred violently a couple of times.

“Roar!”

The Titan Ape raised its head and roared. With its air being snatched away around its nose, it could no longer take it anymore!

The Titan Ape slowly stood up and madly beat itself on the chest, producing reverberating “boom, boom, boom” sounds. The violent forces caused the ground around it to shake.

“Boom!”

When the Titan Ape stood up, it was as though its body was holding up the sky. When it took a step forward, the world began to tremble. Even the mountain behind it trembled as well!

The tough battle was finally imminent.

However, the quartet did not show any signs of fear but anxiety. They had to kill the Titan Ape as fast as possible. And from the looks of it, it was not a simple task. The Titan Ape’s defense and strength was astounding!

However, Shi Xiaobai was facing the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, a terrifying existence that made the powerful Titan Ape hide away like a scared toddler. The danger Shi Xiaobai faced was correspondingly much higher than theirs.

They did not want to waste even a single second at that moment, grabbing every second they had to strive for victory!

The Titan Ape stepped its foot down, immediately producing a

deep ravine. The four scattered to dodge his foot, but they simultaneously launched their third assault on the Titan Ape!

...

...

In the outskirts of Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain

Dark clouds loomed as thunder rumbled while black bolts of lightning kept striking the ground, like a downpour of rain. The strikes opened thousands of ravines and caused the ground to be almost in tatters.

And amid the pelting of lightning bolts and above the deep ravines, Shi Xiaobai began using devilish footsteps and lightning speeds to constantly dodge. If a ravine opened up in front of him, he would move in a different direction, and circle around the ravine at a rapid pace.

In mid-air, the black mastiff that was a few hundred meters in size roared as it ran in a straight line at supersonic speeds. It was approaching Shi Xiaobai at a very fast speed.

After the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign transformed into a gigantic mastiff, it seemed to lose its mind. The lightning storm it summoned was random and chaotic, while its eyes were only filled with killing intent. It was as though it was willing to destroy the world as long as it crushed Shi Xiaobai to death.

# Chapter 271: A Little Excited Just Thinking Of It!

---

The pressure put on Shi Xiaobai was immense. The irregular bolts of lightning and the constantly tearing ground forced him to focus fully on dodging, and the killing intent and the soul suppressing effects of the black mastiff behind him were constantly attempting to shake his resolve.

Shi Xiaobai had to divert some effort to maintain his will, which made him feel slightly restrained. Furthermore, the distance between him and the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was gradually closing. The surging killing intent that he sensed felt like an illusion of Death approaching him.

And the biggest crisis he was facing was that the superpower he had obtained from Mu Yuesheng was about to run out!

In other words, his skating shoes were almost worn out!

“Something must be thought of. This King does not want to be eliminated!”

Shi Xiaobai began to think calmly. The more dangerous a moment was, the more he needed to calm down!

The gigantic mastiff was probably another form of the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. Transforming into such a form probably made it lose its mind. If that was the case, the Thousand Eye

Demon Sovereign had become enraged from its humiliation and did things out of desperation. It no longer cared if it could obtain the holy sword. It only wanted to chase up to Shi Xiaobai to redeem the disgrace it had felt.

If it caught up to him, it was no use using his mouth anymore. The only thing he could do was fight it out or use the exit command.

Wait, lost its mind?

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up slightly. He immediately put his hand into a pocket and quickly pulled out a golden ball!

This golden ball's name was the 'Master Conquest Ball'. It was the B-level reward he had obtained after completing the Absolute Choice's destruction of fifteen cities. It had a 100% chance of conquering a non-highly intelligent biological being!

Shi Xiaobai did not know what the exact definition of 'non-highly intelligent biological being' was.

However, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was lacking in intelligence to begin with, and now with it losing its mind, shouldn't it be called a 'non-highly intelligent biological being'?

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to steal a glance. The black mastiff was already beginning to close in on him. The ground in front of him was riddled with holes. The skating shoes beneath his feet

could no longer hold out.

In such a desperate situation, a miracle was needed!

Was this golden ball able to create miracles?

Who cares!?

Without any hesitation, Shi Xiaobai threw the golden ball at the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign!

The golden ball was a B-level reward, a reward on the same level as Filthy Turtle Divine Technique and the Massage Technique of God!

The golden ball followed a parabolic trajectory as it struck the black mastiff's massive body!

The golden ball which was originally tightly closed suddenly opened as a golden beam of light appeared from within the ball, as though a golden light bulb that switched on. This glow was like stars in the night when compared to the black mastiff's massive black body.

However, once the stars lit up, the darkness in the sky suddenly was banished!

“Roar!”

The black mastiff let out an alarmed roar as its limbs were fixed in a posture of it struggling to run. However, its body was lodged firmly by the golden ball as it slowly pulled the mastiff in. Its tail had already disappeared into the tiny golden starlike beam.

“Roar! Roar! Roar!”

The black mastiff constantly howled, as though it was extremely apprehensive. When Shi Xiaobai looked back, he was completely astounded. He saw the black mastiff’s body twist and suddenly contract like black ink on a piece of paper. First was its tail, then its behind, followed by its back limbs, waist, front limbs, and finally its ferocious dog head. The massive mastiff that was as big as a mountain was sucked into the tiny golden ball!

The golden ball slowly closed and dropped to the ground from mid-air.

The golden ball began to rattle violently as it shook side to side!

Once!

Twice!

Shi Xiaobai held his breath.

A third shake!

The golden ball shook before coming to a stable halt. The golden surface also darkened and soon lost its golden hue, turning into a tiny black ball.

At this moment, a sacred but authoritative voice boomed, resounding across the whole world!

“The third level’s Level Lord [Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign] has been conquered. The third level has no Level Lord anymore! The conqueror is...Shi Xiaobai!”

Shi Xiaobai looked at the black ball with a confounded expression.

He conquered it just like that?

A Master Conquest Ball was all it took?

He had previously relied on his mouth for so long, rubbed with all his might, but had subconsciously overlooked this golden ball because he never expected the Master Conquest Ball to be so powerful!

If he knew earlier that all he needed to do was throw a ball, he wouldn’t have needed to do so much stuff!

However, there was no way to judge if the poodle-shaped



Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was considered a non-highly intelligent biological being or not. After all, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign might have seemed silly back then, but it could at least understand human speech.

Shi Xiaobai slowly walked towards the black ball and recalled the fiery voice mention that the Master Conquest Ball could conquer any biological being to make it his private pet.

A gigantic mastiff hundreds of meters tall as a pet?

It was a little exciting just thinking of it!

...

...

In the core area of Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain.

Sunless and company were engaging in a fierce battle with the Titan Ape.

The Heavens were fair. Despite giving the Titan Ape superior defense and terrifying destructive power, it had stripped it of its speed. The Titan Ape was extremely slow in its motions. Although its foot stomp could create a deep hole that extended dozens of meters, the four would usually be able to dodge it.

After dodging, the four would attack again without any rest!

The third round of attacks, the fourth round of attacks, the fifth round of attacks...

With round after round of attacks that were like a storm, this was the tenth round of attacks!

Even though the Titan Ape's defense was powerful, it could not withstand such senseless bombardment. Its furious roars finally sounded anxious. If this carried on, it was very likely that it would die from a battle of attrition by these four human scum!

The orange-haired petite girl and the blond youth's damage to it was average, but the short brown-haired girl and the azure-dressed girl's attacks could not be dismissed, especially the azure-dressed girl's sword techniques. Each strike was more dangerous than the other. Nearly every strike was enough to cut through its hard flesh!

However, the four appeared to be in an extremely tired state.

Mozzie looked pale in the face. The hand which held the warhammer was trembling slightly.

Kevin was covered in sweat. His arms were extremely sore from throwing boulders.

Mu Yuesheng was slightly out of breath. The amount of time she

took to charge her Electro-Cannon was getting longer as well.

Sunless did not seem to have any obvious changes, but her hair was slightly disheveled. Her azure dress was also stained with a lot of dust. It was an uncomfortable matter for a girl who was a germaphobe.

However, none of them stopped. They had to win every second for Shi Xiaobai!

Mozzie shouted, “Come on! Just a bit more!”

Mu Yuesheng nodded and said as well, “Everyone, just a little bit harder!”

Kevin picked up another boulder and loudly said, “Think of Shi Xiaobai. He’s currently facing the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign so many times more terrifying. The situation he is in must currently be much more arduous than ours. Even if we were to break our necks, we have to...save Shi Xiaobai!”

Kevin felt his heart culminating with burning hot blood as he threw another boulder!

Yes, he was saving Shi Xiaobai!

This was a little exciting just thinking of it!

At this moment, a sacred but authoritative voice boomed, resounding across the whole world!

“The third level’s Level Lord [Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign] has been conquered. The third level has no more Level Lord! The conqueror is...Shi Xiaobai!”

...

# Chapter 272: Shi Xiaobai, You Are My Daddy

---

Kevin had just said a passionate and heartfelt speech about ‘saving Shi Xiaobai’. The other three also had extremely intense fighting spirit while they struggled in battle to ‘save Shi Xiaobai’. This was because the person they were saving was Shi Xiaobai. Hence, this matter was something that kept them worried, but also had a special place in their hearts.

They were always helped by Shi Xiaobai and felt like they owed him. If they could save Shi Xiaobai, they might feel slightly better.

But they never expected a voice to suddenly resound!

“The third level’s Level Lord [Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign] has been conquered. The third level has no more Level Lord! The conqueror is...Shi Xiaobai!”

When the voice resounded, the dark sky suddenly cleared. The world was immediately covered with clear blue skies that went from horizon to horizon!

The quartet was dumbfounded.

Kevin said in embarrassment, “Forget what I just said about saving Shi Xiaobai. I was too naive.”

Mozzie exclaimed, “Awesome, my Lord Shi Xiaobai!”

Mu Yuesheng’s eyes flickered as she exclaimed, “Shi Xiaobai reminds me of a legendary figure!”

An undetectable smile suffused across Sunless’ lips as she quietly said, “Hero King.”

Mu Yuesheng nodded her head. Her eyes were filled with gratitude. Legendary figures were always people she idolized.

The Titan Ape was also as excited as the quartet. It raised its head and roared as it constantly pounded its chest. The terrifying aura that made it tremble in fear had finally disappeared!

At the same time, cheerful sounds erupted throughout the magical beast mountain. The silent mountain suddenly became extremely noisy.

The expressions of the four immediately changed.

The magical beasts that had hidden away were back!

If they saw their territories destroyed, they would probably go mad, right?

Now was not the time for them to relax!

The four immediately launched their eleventh round of assaults!

The Titan Ape, which was attacked, was left stunned for a moment before it was immediately enraged.

Can't This Ape be happy for a moment during this joyful juncture?

...

...

Stone Door #17

Heartless and company were dashing through the desert at full speed, but they were still a distance away from the guardian BOSS' zone.

The four looked nervous. Traveling through the desert in a rush made them look fatigued from the journey, but the pressure from the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign gave them ugly expressions.

Before the trials, the elderly God of Swords had specially exhorted them not to slack in the first three levels. They had to clear the level before the third level's Level Lord descended. Back then, they had vowed and guaranteed to do so. The pigtailed youth had even scoffed saying that if they could not maintain being in the leading group, they would definitely not call themselves Zeus rookies in the future!

As rookie representatives of a top tier domestic organization, it would be too embarrassing to not be part of the top 10%, members of the leading group!

However, they had really been reduced to such a state!

They did not dare to think what would happen if the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign were to suddenly appear in the stone door they were in. What would happen then!?

Being eliminated was nothing in comparison to how the elderly God of Swords would think of them!

How would the outside world look at them?

How would the media evaluate the Zeus team?

Even the tiniest scandal of the extremely famous Zeus organization would be pushed to the forefront of public opinion. If the four of them, including the super rookie, Heartless, were to fail at the third level, it was easy to imagine what sort of pressure those anti-fans and the meddling media would put on them!

Therefore, the four of them, who were filled with confidence, immediately felt intense pressure!

But at this moment, a voice resounded!



“The third level’s Level Lord [Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign] has been conquered. The third level has no more Level Lord! The conqueror is...Shi Xiaobai!”

Heartless and company stared with widened eyes as they drew a gasp.

Moments later, they broke out into surprised cheers.

The burly teenager could not calm down as he exclaimed, “Heavens, who is Shi Xiaobai? How is he so awesome?”

The pigtailed youth no longer knew what he was saying, “Regardless of who he is, he’s my brother from now on!”

The female whopper was beaming as she said, “That’s wonderful. There’s no need to worry about being eliminated at the third level! Thank you Shi Xiaobai!”

Heartless also revealed a smile as he said, “Talents appear every generation, but ever since the Hero King, there has been no one who managed to complete the feat of conquering a Level Lord. This Shi Xiaobai must be an impressive heroic figure. It would be extremely good if we are able to befriend such a figure. Regardless of the case, we must try to find a way to repay his kindness in the future.”

The other three nodded their heads heavily. They began

sketching a heroic youth's image in their minds. The Hero King back then was said to be extremely handsome and he made everyone in the world admire him. He was chased by numerous girls.

This Shi Xiaobai was probably not far from that?

...

...

Stone Door #666

Feng Yuanlin was constantly urging the people behind him along. He constantly muttered, "Damn it, damn it. We are still short of a few hundred points. We are truly doomed this time..."

The four people behind him had extremely ugly expressions. They were truly lacking in a lot of points. Although there was no commotion regarding the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign after it entered Stone Door #233 after a long period of time, no one could be sure when the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign would suddenly descend on them. They still needed to clear several stone doors. It was as though they were in a doomed situation.

Suddenly, the voice resounded through the world.

"The third level's Level Lord [Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign] has been conquered. The third level has no more Level Lord! The

conqueror is...Shi Xiaobai!”

The five came to a spontaneous halt as they revealed looks of surprise and disbelief.

This surprise was truly timely!

Feng Yuanlin immediately felt moved to tears as he looked up into the sky with tears streaming down his cheeks. He shouted loudly, “Shi Xiaobai, you are my daddy!”

The other four who wanted to express their gratitude immediately shut their mouths.

Fuck, you could even shamelessly recognize someone else as your daddy. How do you expect us to follow up on that!?

...

...

Shanghai City, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Main Auditorium

The elderly God of Swords was staring intently at the names on the third level shown on the stone monument with an ugly expression.

Riko and Yama Minamiya were also staring at the third level with nervous expressions.

The Level Lord had descended for a period of time, while all the Zeus and Gaia rookies were still stuck at the third level. It felt like they were tiny boats in a thunderstorm which were at risk of being overturned by the angry waves at any time.

On Gaia's side, it was still alright. It was considered a normal performance. However, on Zeus' side, it was terrible. The auditorium was filled with gleeful whispers of schadenfreude. They were making 'jokes' of how Zeus' two super rookies were both stuck at the third level.

Many journalists had already drafted their articles. The titles were—"Is the falling behind of the two super rookies a result of the Ye siblings being unworthy of their titles, or has Zeus destroyed their talents?" Such a news topic would definitely stir the masses. It was something the media loved to see.

If the Ye siblings were eliminated at the third level, it could not be any better. It could be the headlines for tomorrow!

The elderly God of Swords was very powerful, so he obviously had very good hearing. The whispers were all heard by him. His mood was as bad as it could be.

Suddenly, the text that filled the stone monument disappeared as a line of text suddenly appeared from top to bottom. It filled up the entire stone monument's surface!

The line of text read:

“The third level’s Level Lord [Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign] has been conquered. The third level has no more Level Lord! The conqueror is...Shi Xiaobai!”

Only when something major happened in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower would the stone monument respond with such a full-screen notice!

Sounds of disbelief resounded. The auditorium which was considered rather quiet suddenly turned into a cacophony!

“Heavens, the Level Lord has been conquered!?”

“It’s been more than three thousand years. Following the Hero King, he is the second person to conquer a Level Lord!”

“This will be entering the history books! Shi Xiaobai, why does this name sound so familiar?”

“Isn’t Shi Xiaobai the one who cleared the first level the fastest? After that there was nothing from him. I thought he waned, but who knew...who could even guess this!?”

“So the reason why Shi Xiaobai stayed behind in the third level was to stir something up! This matter is too heaven-defying. I

already have no idea what to say!”

“It was said that Speechless was the one who could become the second Hero King in three thousand years, but now, someone will change what they will say!”

“Ss... I’m looking forward to Shi Xiaobai and Speechless’s confrontation. Who do you think will go further in this trial?”

“Back then, the Hero King only reached the eighth level. Throughout history, only four people managed to reach the eighth level. It’s unknown if any of these two heroic youths will be able to reach the eighth level, or even...create brand new history?”

“ ... ”

# Chapter 273: Battle Arena, Enemies Often Cross Each Other's Paths

---

The exclaiming praises did not come to an end. The conquering of a Level Lord was unimaginable. This was because the Level Lord's strength was on par with the top mighty human figures in the world. With trial-takers limited to the Psionic Mortal Realm, there was nearly no way they could conquer a Level Lord. Throughout history, the only person who had done so was the Hero King, a unique genius that managed to accomplish this miraculous feat.

But today, another person had repeated such a miracle!

His name was Shi Xiaobai!

The journalists rushed to delete their drafts. Compared to this divine miracle, the matter regarding the Zeus rookies was worth less than shit!

Yama Minamiya and Riko were at a loss as to what to say. They knew Shi Xiaobai never did things in an expected manner and usually surprised people, but this matter was too ridiculous. Shi Xiaobai was only at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm... No, up until now, Shi Xiaobai had only been cultivating for about a month!

The elderly God of Swords did not know that Shi Xiaobai was Tu Dahei as he said in a gratified manner, "Heroes come from youngsters. It's really true that heroes come from youngsters. I

wonder which organization such a figure came from. Thor? Diablo? Or is it Muses?”

Yama Minamiya gaped. He felt a little embarrassed to tell the elderly God of Swords that Shi Xiaobai was Tu Dahei. He felt that no one would believe it even if he said so!

Riko gave a sly smile and said to the elderly God of Swords, “Senior, probably organizations like Thor won’t be able to produce such a heroic youth, right? The organization that nurtured Shi Xiaobai must definitely have a deep and robust foundation. The organization that is capable of doing so has to be like Zeus, right?”

When the elderly God of Swords heard this, he immediately gave a conceding nod and said, “What you said is right. Even Zeus has trouble nurturing such a talent, so it would be impossible for Thor. The organization that nurtured Shi Xiaobai must be at least on the level of Zeus!”

Yama Minamiya fell silent. He had a nagging feeling that his daughter had changed. She had been ‘led astray’ by Shi Xiaobai. However, this form of being ‘astray’ was rather adorable!

Yama Minamiya coughed gently and said with a laugh, “Shi Xiaobai is awesome. The organization he is from must also be very awesome. It’s something everyone needs to learn from!”

After Yama Minamiya said this, he suddenly felt full of energy!



Hey, you don't say, this was quite a refreshing feeling!

...

...

In the outskirts of Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain

Shi Xiaobai did not know that after throwing a tiny golden ball, not only did people recognize him as their brothers, there was even someone who called him daddy. He did not know that he had been 'divinized' by the media as a heroic youth who could one day follow the footsteps of the Hero King.

At this moment, he was staring at a tiny dog!

It was a snow-white poodle floating in mid-air. It was smaller than an ordinary poodle. It could be called a mini-sized white poodle.

The mini-sized white poodle floated and gave a standing posture. Its two front paws were curled to its chest as it cocked its head. It stared at Shi Xiaobai with its large and dewy black eyes, as though it wanted to be affectionate, but feared to do so.

“Woof!”

The poodle barked softly, as soft as a kitten's purr. It had a hint

of desire for affection.

Shi Xiaobai was rendered speechless. This poodle was actually the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. After it came out from the Master Conquest Ball, not only had it shrunk, its black fur had also turned white. Even its nature had changed. It seemed to lose all its past memories, turning sweet and cute like a kitten.

It fucking mentioned transforming into a pet, but to think it would truly become a pet!

Shi Xiaobai sighed as he stretched his hand towards the poodle. The poodle's eyes lit up and after a moment of hesitation, it slowly drifted downwards and sat in Shi Xiaobai's palm.

Shi Xiaobai held it up and stared at it, saying, "Can you still transform?"

"Woof?"

The poodle cocked its head and gave a questioning bark. After hesitating for a moment, it stuck out its tongue and gently licked Shi Xiaobai's face.

This was apparently pure dog-speak. Shi Xiaobai was helpless to realize that he did not understand it at all.

"Forget it. At least you are cute. It's at least much better than that cocky Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign!"

Shi Xiaobai forcefully comforted himself. He stored the poodle back into the internal space of the Master Conquest Ball.

He was planning to reinforce his partners who were battling the Titan Ape.

However, as Shi Xiaobai began walking, an authoritative voice boomed in his mind.

“Congratulations on killing the guardian BOSS. Everyone obtains 300 points for conquering Stone Gate #233 [Magical Beast Forbidden Mountain]!”

“You have accumulated more than 1000 points. You will be transported to the fourth level in ten seconds!”

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily stunned before a smile suffused across his lips.

These partners were rather reliable after all!

...

...

Ten seconds later, Shi Xiaobai felt himself enter a trance. He had finally arrived at the fourth level.

He surveyed his surroundings and was slightly stunned. At this moment, he was standing in a Colosseum that resembled ancient Rome's. However, the entire site was much bigger than an ordinary arena. There was no one in the audience stands, and the walls around him looked extremely hard. There was a transparent dome-like domain that enveloped the entire Colosseum.

The authoritative voice boomed once again.

“Welcome to the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower's fourth level, Battle Arena!”

“In the Battle Area, you will be randomly matched with a trial-taker and engage in a single formal duel. The victor of the duel will be sent to the fifth level, while the loser will be sent out of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower!”

“As the Battle Arena only has five other people excluding you, with four of them teammates from the previous level, they will not be matched with you. Furthermore, you have not been matched with the fifth non-teammate, so you will have to wait for others to arrive in the fourth level.”

“This duel will last till one side dies, faints or uses the exit command before the victor is determined.”

“Wishing you the best of luck!”

Once the voice was done, Shi Xiaobai felt delighted. Duel?

Come on, This King is unable to endure the thirst!

However, were there still anyone strong at this point in time?

The rules of this level were in fact not very friendly for the leading group. This was because the moment they were sent here, they would be matched with similar members of the leading group in battle. It was like Mars striking Earth!

It was very likely many excellent rookies had been eliminated by more excellent rookies at this level!

Shi Xiaobai patiently waited. Although he knew that the opponent matched to him was likely to be someone unimpressive, he was still hoping that he would meet an unlucky mighty person.

A few minutes later, a golden beam fell from the sky!

Shi Xiaobai's opponent had come!

When Shi Xiaobai focused his eyes, he immediately smiled.

The person who came was Heartless!

...

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #3

Mozzie's face was slightly pale. In order to kill the Titan Ape quickly, she had expended most of her stamina. She never expected the fourth level to be a duel. It was disadvantageous for her considering her present state!

Mozzie began using her endurance technique as she tried to speed up her recovery.

Suddenly, a golden beam of light fell from the sky. When Mozzie focused her eyes, she immediately frowned as her face turned paler.

The person who came was the female whopper!

When the female whopper saw Mozzie, she immediately said with a boisterous laugh, "The Heavens are really helping me!"

...

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #4

Kevin faced the burly teenager and gave a slight wry smile. The scene of him being defeated in one hit during the battle exchange

was still fresh on his mind.

After the burly teenager understood the rules, he cracked his neck and said with a sinister laugh, “I happen to have some anger I was unable to vent because of Tu Dahei. I hope you don’t run away too quickly and let me have some fun!”

...

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #5

Mu Yuesheng looked at the pigtailed youth across her, her eyes flashed with a cold glint.

Although the pigtailed youth did not leave much of an impression on her, she could still remember the swaggering attitude he had after he defeated one of the Gaia rookies that was pulled in to fill the numbers.

It was true enemies often crossed each other’s path. There was no need to show mercy!

The pigtailed youth swung his pigtail and said, “Great, at least it’s not the other two trash. However, it’s still trash. One minute. If I’m unable to finish this battle after one minute, I’ll cut my pigtail!”

...

# Chapter 274: That Night, She Shattered Several Toilets Squatting

---

Shanghai City, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Main Auditorium

As everyone was in heated discussion over the matter of Shi Xiaobai conquering the Level Lord, the stone monument finally returned to its ordinary feed after a few minutes.

Immediately, a keen-eyed member of the audience noticed something as he exclaimed, “Everyone, look at the fourth level!”

Everyone immediately turned their heads and revealed shocked expressions. They saw that on the stone monument’s fourth level zone, which only had one name on it, there were suddenly nine more names. And most interesting of all, out of the nine names, five of them were Zeus rookies, three Gaia rookies and one Shi Xiaobai!

Some people had originally speculated that ‘Shi Xiaobai’ was a rookie from Gaia, but the data they later obtained was that Gaia’s ‘Shi Xiaobai’ had yet to begin psionic cultivation when he entered Gaia. After the matter of Shi Xiaobai conquering the Level Lord, many people immediately debunked the theory of Shi Xiaobai coming from Gaia.

Yama Minamiya did not try to forcefully prove the matter because he realized that using facts was more useful than words. He began imagining what everyone’s expressions would be when



Shi Xiaobai came out and everyone realized Shi Xiaobai was Tu Dahei.

However, Yama Minamiya found it extremely uninteresting for what was happening now!

The fourth level was in between the third level which had the most number of people and the fifth level. It should have been a level with many people, but reality was just the opposite. There were constantly few people on the fourth level. This meant that the fourth level was likely randomly selected to be a 'duel elimination'.

Nearly everyone had deduced this conclusion. 'Duel elimination' was one of the most cruel forms of survival of the fittest. It was something no one wished to encounter.

And now, on the fourth level, out of the ten people, five were Zeus rookies, three were Gaia rookies, and a single Shi Xiaobai. Furthermore, according to the order, it appeared as though Heartless was matched with Shi Xiaobai. The three Zeus rookies were matched with three Gaia rookies. Sunless was matched with an unknown rookie.

"Heartless versus Shi Xiaobai. This match would be cruel. One is a super rookie, and the other is a dark horse that created a divine miracle. Both of them have what it takes to be in the top ten, but one of them will be forced to stop at the fourth level."

"That's why duel elimination mode is the most worrisome. In

past years, many genius rookies who could clearly go far encountered a more talented trial-taker than them in duel elimination, resulting in them coming to a regretful end of their trial. Heartless and Shi Xiaobai, one of them will end in regret!”

“Although I’m a fan of Heartless... I do not wish for Shi Xiaobai to be eliminated.”

“Pfft, you are speaking as though Heartless can eliminate Shi Xiaobai...”

“Eh? Did you notice that three of the Zeus rookies are facing three of the Gaia rookies. Two of them have apparently met each other in a battle exchange not long ago?

“Heh, what you said is true. I paid attention to the battle exchange. I remember that Gaia’s Wen Hezheng and Kevin did not even last ten seconds in battle. Now, they are facing the same opponents, and should it be said that enemies often cross each other’s path or that Gaia’s luck is really bad?”

“It can’t be? Not even ten seconds?”

“Ten seconds is just a euphemism. In fact, it ended in six or seven seconds. The gap between the two sides is just too great. There is no point in focusing on such a battle that is overwhelmingly advantageous to one side. The outcome is already decided.”

“Pitying Gaia.”

“ ... ”

Everyone was in a flurry of discussion.

Yama Minamiya and Riko's emotions were experiencing the twists and turns of a rollercoaster. They were still extremely excited for Shi Xiaobai previously, but now they felt worried. This wasn't called enemies often crossing each other's path, it was called colliding with a ghost!

They were already nearly certain that Mozzie and Kevin would be eliminated. Mu Yuesheng might need to endure a bitter fight with the outcome unpredictable. She was similarly in danger.

It was not that they chose to lack trust in their rookies, but it was because the outcome at the battle exchange was just too terrible. It was even called one of the most one-sided battle exchanges in recent years. If not for Shi Xiaobai changing the tides at the very end, the battle exchange would probably give Gaia flake for many years.

The elderly God of Swords looked somewhat complicated. The five Zeus rookies had reached the fourth level and had encountered the Gaia rookies that they could easily crush. That was obviously a good thing, but with Heartless meeting Shi Xiaobai, it made the elderly God of Swords worry.

Could his disciple beat the mysterious Shi Xiaobai, who had just created a divine miracle?

This duel elimination that seemed to be arranged by ‘fate’ had aroused the concern of many people.

...

...

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #3

Mozzie’s pale face finally turned for the better through the use of her endurance technique. The female whopper’s appearance had panicked her for a moment, but she quickly calmed down.

She had been training in the third level for more than ten hours. Furthermore, she had received advice from Lord Shi Xiaobai. She was no longer an ignorant girl. At least, she would not be defeated in a few seconds like last time.

Mozzie slowly constructed a psionic warhammer as her eyes revealed courage and fighting spirit.

The female whopper saw the change in stance of Mozzie and immediately said scornfully, “I thought you would immediately escape. Who knew that you were naive enough to attempt resisting. It looks like you still haven’t realized the difference between us!”

Mozzie smacked her lips and said, “The difference between us? Are you talking about the difference of This Mosquito being cute and endearing and you being fat and old-fashioned?”

“You’re courting death!”

The female whopper immediately widened her bell-like eyes as her nostrils spewed hot gasses. Angrily, she said, “I’ll beat you flat!”

Mozzie brandished her warhammer and shouted without fear, “Come on, let’s see who’s afraid of who!”

At this moment, a mechanical voice resounded in the arena:

“The duel is about to begin. Countdown in ten seconds, ten, nine, eight...”

Mozzie took a slow deep breath. Although she was not afraid, she was still somewhat nervous. The fat whopper’s body looked somewhat frightening as though she was a tiny mountain.

The fat face of the female whopper had an oily shine to it, making her even more ferocious looking. All her life, she had hated petite and cute girls that attracted the stares of boys the moment they appeared, just like Mozzie!

Furthermore, this cute girl was from the same organization as the evil Tu Dahei!

Only the heavens knew how many toilets she shattered that night from squatting!

“Three, two, one, begin!”

The moment the voice disappeared, the translucent domain separating the two participants immediately vanished!

“Die!”

The female whopper thundered and ran at full speed towards Mozzie. Her speed was extremely slow, but every step caused the ground to shake. She was like a rumbling heavy-armored vehicle that came smashing at Mozzie!

This time, Mozzie did not rush up to clash with the female whopper with her body, like at the battle exchange. Instead, she slowly raised her psionic warhammer!

# Chapter 275: Bronze Minotaur

---

After Mozzie slimmed down, her strength had increased rather than decreased. However, due to the loss of fat, her physical defense had indeed decreased. There was no way for her to engage in a head on clash with the female whopper who was covered in hard fat.

Furthermore, Mozzie was no longer a pure melee warrior!

“Eat This Mosquito’s hammer!”

Mozzie seized the moment and raised her warhammer to slam heavily onto the ground!

“Boom!”

The moment the warhammer slammed down, the ground cracked. A high-temperature force snaked through the ground straight at the female whopper!

Mozzie had developed a good eye for judgment over the entire training period. With the fat whopper running so slowly, coupled with her massive body, there was no reason for her to miss!

A high-temperature force spewed out from the ground like a transparent wok lid. The fat whopper, who was running towards her, happened to step on the transparent wok lid!

The fat whopper had wanted to laugh derisively when she saw Mozzie slam the warhammer on the ground, but when she stepped onto the high-temperature wok lid, her expression immediately changed!

“My feet!”

The female whopper cried out and immediately jumped forward. Her heavy body nearly stumbled when she landed on the ground. When she finally came to a halt, her forehead was oozing with hot sweat.

The high temperature had burned a hole in her shoes. Both her soles suffered burns, and with her poor feet supporting her massive body weight, it made her gasp in pain.

She had been careless for this strike!

She did not expect Mozzie to use such a ‘high-end’ offensive skill, so she had failed to use Hardening to protect her feet. As a result, her soles made direct contact with the high temperature of Stewing Wok Hammer!

The female whopper had suffered a devastating blow!

However, Mozzie did not halt her assault. With a charming cry, she slammed her warhammer again!

A continuous swirl of fire swept towards the female whopper!



With an angry roar, the female whopper conjured a translucent Psionic Barrier to protect her body!

Mozzie did not stop. Despite having just used Grilling Hammer, she was able to retract her warhammer extremely fast as she paid attention to the distribution of her power. As a result of not overexerting herself, she immediately produced a second Grilling Hammer!

“Ah Ah Ah Ah Ah....”

Mozzie closed her eyes as she constantly screamed as she flailed her warhammer with all her strength, sending incessant flames at the female whopper!

The female whopper had conjured a psionic barrier to withstand the flames, but the pain in her soles made her proceed forward at an extremely slow pace. Due to her clumsy movement, she was unable to dodge the assault of the flames!

She could only try to withstand the incessant flames!

Suddenly, after an unknown number of flaming blows, the psionic barrier the female whopper conjured suddenly shattered!

Flames surged through the cracks and ignited the fibers on the female whopper's clothes!

“Fuck!”

The female whopper cursed angrily and quickly used her hands to extinguish the flames on her body. However, a burnt hole was left in her clothes, exposing her disgusting fat!

The female whopper was immediately incensed. The short moment of sparring had put her at a complete disadvantage. She had been reduced to such a wretched state by such scum?

Although it was because she had been careless and because of the long-range advantage over her, this was an outcome the female whopper could not accept!

She felt humiliated and enraged. Her ferocious expression turned into a hysterical frenzy!

“You’re courting death!”

The female whopper angrily roared as her skin suddenly become dyed in a layer of bronze. Her eyes turned red as two horns slowly grew from her head. Her facial features also began to distort!

In a short moment, the female whopper’s head had turned into a bronze ox head. Her fat body was covered in a layer of bronze skin. She looked like a massive bronze Minotaur!

The female jumbo took a step towards the flame!

“Boom!”

The ground opened up into a deep pit, as the flames that struck her body were instantly extinguished!

“Roar!”

The female whopper roared and took one step after another towards Mozzie while disregarding the flames. Deep pits formed in the ground as the large eyes of the bronze ox head were filled with killing intent. It was scary!

Mozzie stopped as she stared ashen. She was panting heavily. After continuously using Kun Peng Hammer Technique, she had nearly drained the remaining psionic power in her body. How was she to defeat the frightening bronze Minotaur in front of her?

...

...

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #4

“I hope you don’t run away too quickly and let me have some fun a little longer!”

A sinister smile suffused across the burly teenager's lips. Tu Dahei had plucked the lofty snow lotus in the heavens he could only watch from afar and had caused him to squat on the toilet for an entire night. It was already infuriating enough. Not long ago, he had been stuck in a 'hell' difficulty stone door for nearly ten hours because of some asshole. He had been rushing through the desert while feeling trepidation for the Level Lord. So, the burly teenager had evil pangs of anger he needed to vent!

And at this moment, who else was more appropriate for venting his anger other than the blond youth that appeared in front of him?

The bloodlust in the burly teenager's eyes showed how eager he was.

Without a doubt, if Kevin did not escape, the burly teenager would torment him!

Kevin took slow deep breaths to calm his mind. Back at the battle exchange, he had been struck down by the burly teenager in one strike, making him feel extremely humiliated. However, he had never thought of taking revenge.

This was because Kevin knew how disparate his strength was from the burly teenager's, so there was no hope of revenge.

But at this moment, Kevin was first alarmed after meeting the burly teenager again, but he soon calmed down.

He was no longer the same person from a few days before!

He had completed a metamorphosis over the past few hours, a true metamorphosis!

“Three, two, one, begin!”

The moment the mechanical voice disappeared, the burly teenager rushed at Kevin like a cheetah. He was extremely fast!

At the battle exchange, the burly teenager had created an illusion to hide the fact about his speed to end the battle as soon as possible. But now, in their second encounter, there was no need to pretend to be a Strength-based warrior!

Although his body was built like a Strength-based warrior, what he was really good at was speed!

Kevin did not move. All he did was slowly raise his right palm!

“Naive!”

The burly teenager sneered. In a blink of an eye, he was in front of Kevin due to his extremely fast speed. He punched his fist at Kevin!

“Black Bear Dominating Palm!”

Kevin struck forward with Black Bear Dominating Palm, shattering the void in front of him with the surging power!

The burly teenager's punch was apparently an illusion. After punching out halfway, he circled around and appeared behind Kevin!

With Kevin missing, his body suddenly turned stiff!

The burly teenager grabbed this opportunity to kick Kevin in the buttocks!

Kevin was immediately sent flying forward. He fell to the ground in a pathetic manner!

“Hahahaha...”

The burly teenager guffawed with his head tilted up. His laughter resounded through the world, as though he was laughing at a comedic clown!

## Chapter 276: Always Ready

---

Kevin was sent flying with a kick and fell to the ground in a humorous manner like he was a dog eating shit. The burly teenager immediately laughed. He did not use any offensive skills for this kick, and had just relied on his strength. It did not deal much damage to Kevin, but it would cause physical pain, as well as produce comedic effects!

The burly teenager immediately felt better. Since he wanted to vent his flames of anger, he could not immediately finish the battle. He had to slowly torture his opponent and torment his opponent psychologically. Only then could he fully enjoy the fun.

Kevin crawled up from a wretched posture and turned his head to say angrily, “You deserve death!”

Seeing Kevin’s annoyed expression, the burly teenager felt delighted. He charged up once again. He could see the terror in the blond youth’s eyes. He wanted the pleasure of making him feel like he was a prey that was being toyed with!

After suppressing so much anger, it was truly great to encounter such a blond youth with a worrisome intellect!

The burly teenager acted as usual and appeared behind Kevin in a flash!

“Black Bear Dominating Palm!”

Kevin immediately appeared as though he could not restrain his anger and hit out with Black Bear Dominating Palm again!

However, the burly teenager easily dodged this strike once again. The explosive power missed completely!

The burly teenager kicked Kevin in the buttocks once again as Kevin fell to the ground in a pathetic manner!

This scene felt like a playback of the previous scene!

“Fuck!”

Kevin angrily cursed and after standing up, he charged at the burly teenager, sending another palm strike!

The palm was, as usual, done without any planning, with no emphasis on timing. It looked funny and laughable.

The sense of pleasure in the burly teenager’s eyes intensified. He easily dodged Kevin’s Black Bear Dominating Palm once again and kicked Kevin in the buttocks. Again, he only used a bit of strength, inflicting pain on Kevin but prevented him from becoming immobile.

Just as he previously said, he wished he could ‘have some fun a little longer’!



After being kicked to the ground a third time, Kevin stood up and questioned angrily, “Why is this happening? How can you dodge This Genius’s Black Bear Dominating Palm every single time? Why would you always dodge behind This Genius? It’s impossible! Impossible!”

Hearing Kevin’s hysteric questions, the smile suffused across the burly teenager’s lips. With a teasing voice, he said, “Fool, you are the first person I’ve seen to use your superpower in such a foolish manner!”

Kevin immediately had a drastic change in expression. He said in a panic, “How... How did you tell!?”

The burly teenager’s expression looked speechless as he said with a sneer, “Your stupidity is really incurable. There is no way you can possess such power with your strength. It’s obvious you augment it with your superpower. Every time you use Black Bear Dominating Palm, your body will stiffen. It’s obvious it’s a limitation of your superpower. There’s no one else who would reveal the weakness of their superpower so obviously like you.”

Kevin’s face suddenly turned pale as he said trembling, “No, there’s no way you could figure that out. You must be specifically targeting This Genius. You must have covertly investigated This Genius, or else, how would you be able to see through the weakness of This Genius’s superpower? That’s not right. That’s not This Genius’s weakness. You guessed wrongly. You guessed wrongly...”

Kevin hurriedly waved his hands as his eyes exposed a look of panic.

The burly teenager glanced at Kevin as though he was looking at a retard. He hissed, "Speaking with you only lowers my intellect. Fine, I'll let you understand how foolish you are to reveal the weakness of your superpower!"

The burly teenager rushed forward once again.

What followed was a unilateral abuse that was unbearable to watch. The burly teenager would dodge Kevin's Black Bear Dominating Palm every time, and use the moment of stiffness Kevin suffered from his superpower to strike. However, he would hold back and make Kevin suffer physical pain but prevented him from losing the ability to continue fighting.

As for Kevin, he looked extremely flustered. He would use Black Bear Dominating Palm again and again blindly. He would be assaulted every time his body stiffened, but he never realized his mistake. He was like a fool trying to use Black Bear Dominating Palm augmented with his superpower to strike the extremely fast burly teenager, but would end up in a wretched state every time.

The contempt in the burly teenager's eyes turned more intense. Only when Kevin was covered with injuries to the point of not being able to stand straight did he find it boring. He said with a sneer, "Alright, it's time to say goodbye to you."

Kevin staggered a few times. His body was completely bruised

and his eyes looked glazed over, as though he had been beaten silly.

The burly teenager's unhappiness was mostly gone. He was planning on giving the blond youth in front of him a 'quick, enjoyable one'. Obviously, he would not deal a fatal blow, but it was likely it would leave an indelible memory on the blond youth.

The burly teenager did not realize that although Kevin's eyes were glazed over, the cold glimmer in his eyes was calm and resolute. His five fingers had never separated from beginning to end. His right palm appeared to be always ready!

...

...

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #2

Heartless looked at the black-haired youth with delicate facial features in front of him. His eyes looked as though he was in a trance. He had recalled the day of the battle exchange. The strike that he was helpless against, and the power from that strike that clearly did not belong to a person of this level.

“Tu Dahei.”

Heartless never expected to encounter the opponent he absolutely did not want to meet in the 'duel elimination'. But

similarly, the pride of being a super rookie made him unafraid to face the battle!

Heartless slowly pulled a black sword from his back. This sword was more valuable than the previous one he used. The Ye family's head had sent him this sword in anger after learning that Heartless' sword that had accompanied him for a decade had been shattered.

This sword did not have a name. It was entirely black in color and was one of the sacred items passed down in Ye family for countless years.

However, this black sword once belonged to a legendary figure, so this black sword did not easily recognize a master. Although the Ye family had lasted for several millennia, few could truly control this black sword.

Heartless had yet to be able to fully control the sword, but his sword talent was astounding, so he had obtained a preliminary recognition of the black sword!

When the Ye family head sent the black sword over, an angry message came along with it—If you were to shatter this black sword, you are no longer part of the Ye family!

Heartless raised the black sword as fighting spirit gradually ignited in his eyes. He would not lose this time, nor could he lose!

Shi Xiaobai smiled slightly as he was rather happy. To be able to meet Heartless at the fourth level's duel of elimination was an extremely good thing for him!

Back at the battle exchange, in order to help Gaia, he had used 'One Second Shura'. In fact, it was not Shi Xiaobai's usual style. It did not conform to his kingly ways!

Shi Xiaobai was still nursing a grievance over the matter. Hence, to be able to fight Heartless with his true strength was something Shi Xiaobai anticipated greatly!

Shi Xiaobai slowly stretched out his right hand. White light bloomed as a pure-white Holy Radiance appeared in his hand.

The two of them faced each other in silence, but their eyes were filled with burning fighting spirit. It only professed a single word—battle!

“Three, two, one, begin!”

Once the mechanical voice was done, Heartless immediately charged at Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai raised Holy Radiance and gradually lifted his right foot, as he was prepared to charge head on!

At this moment, a fiery voice suddenly resounded in Shi Xiaobai's mind:

“Daily-style Absolute Choice is over. Twelve hours have passed. Massage Technique of God has yet to reached the Exemplary Mastery realm. You will experience a D-level punishment! From this moment forth, your right hand will completely and absolutely lose all feeling for the next twelve hours!”

“Receive your punishment, youth!”

The moment the voice was done, the right hand Shi Xiaobai had raised immediately lost all feeling. His five fingers that held Holy Radiance immediately stiffened.

“Clang!”

Holy Radiance fell out of Shi Xiaobai’s right hand and dropped to the ground.

At the same time, Heartless’ black sword slashed over!

...

# Chapter 277: This Black Sword Is Against Him!

---

“Receive your punishment, youth!”

The Absolute Choice apparently liked to do ‘surprise attacks’. The moment of the punishment was just perfectly timed. It caught Shi Xiaobai off guard, with an accident nearly happening.

But thankfully, Shi Xiaobai reacted very quickly. He dazed for an instant after Holy Radiance fell, but he quickly squatted down and rolled towards the right. As he dodged Heartless’ strike, his left hand quickly picked up Holy Radiance.

Although his actions looked rather pathetic, it was still the best choice in a true battle.

“Clang!”

At the moment Shi Xiaobai dodged, he suddenly heard the sound of a metallic sword hitting the ground. He quickly turned over and saw the black sword in Heartless’ hand drop to the ground as well!

Eh? What happened?

“What’s wrong with you?”

Shi Xiaobai and Heartless said the same thing in unison.

Shi Xiaobai, who was in a half-squat, stood up. He brandished Holy Radiance in his left hand twice and immediately felt a sense of ungainliness. Towards a right-handed person, using a sword in his left hand felt rather odd.

“It’s alright. This King’s right hand of a King is too powerful, so it would intermittently be sealed by the Evil Gods of various worlds. Now is a moment of the seal, so the right hand can’t be used. It’s alright. This King’s sword techniques with the left hand are equally awesome. It’s a piece of cake!”

Shi Xiaobai grinned. If this was a situation met by any other person, they would probably be flustered. They would grumble how the ‘Absolute Choice’ was such a scamming bitch, but Shi Xiaobai would not do so. He immediately thought of a solution!

If his right hand could not be used, couldn’t he use his left hand?

Such a solution looked very stupid and naive, and in fact, it truly was very stupid and naive.

However, from Shi Xiaobai’s point of view, this was the simplest and most straightforward solution.

Furthermore, challenging himself to use his left hand was rather interesting, wasn’t it?

The corner of Heartless’ mouth twitched. Things like Evil Gods



of the various worlds or intermittent seals were not comprehensible for a person like him who had undergone formal education and become the top scholar at a provincial exam. From Shi Xiaobai's conclusion, he was apparently going to use his sword with his left hand?

Was Tu Dahei's left-handed use of swords equally awesome?

Heartless picked up the black sword from the ground, but he looked somewhat unsettled.

Shi Xiaobai asked in wonderment, "What's wrong with you then?"

"It's nothing."

Heartless slowly shook his head. He lowered his head to glance at the black sword in his hand and could only give a wry smile.

He believed he had received the preliminary recognition of this nameless legendary black sword, but he never expected that the black sword would suddenly resist him at a critical moment. It was like an extremely obedient horse had suddenly kicked up a temper by lifting its forelimbs. As he was not mentally prepared for it, he was nearly thrown off the horse!

However, Heartless was not irritated. After all, this black sword had been passed down for several millennia, but few managed to control it. Only the original owner was able to fully control it.

Truly powerful swords all had a temper!

Instead, a desire for conquest was kindled in Heartless' heart!

Heartless raised his black sword and said, "Come on, let's continue!"

Shi Xiaobai nodded. With his left hand holding up Holy Radiance, he took the initiative to charge!

Shi Xiaobai used Beginner Sword with his left hand as he slashed at Heartless!

By holding a sword in his left hand, it was similar to writing with one's left hand. The first attempt would produce squiggly and crooked text. Hence, the trajectory of Shi Xiaobai's slash was also crooked. It looked like it was lacking in force, and most of its energy had been dissipated. It was unable to focus on a single point.

Heartless sneered in his heart and thought to himself that Tu Dahei was indeed just bragging. His swordplay with his left hand was clumsy!

Heartless charged forward. Against such a clumsy left-handed strike, he obviously would not use all his strength; hence, he was also using Beginner Sword!

Heartless slashed out!

Suddenly, Heartless' facial expression drastically changed. He felt the black sword in his hand strongly resisting him again!

Fuck, why does it keep choosing such a critical juncture!

Heartless refused to accept the fact as he withstood the pressure from the black sword's resistance as he forcefully slashed out!

“Clang!”

The pure white sword and the pure black sword clashed. It was a collision of forces which produced a dazzling flare!

“Clang!”

The black sword in Heartless' hand suddenly flew out and landed on the ground a short distance away. Heartless' expression drastically changed again as he rapidly retreated.

Shi Xiaobai's slash looked somewhat awkward, but it was still a force to be reckoned with. After withstanding the black sword's resistance, Heartless was only able to use 30% of his strength so this clash ended in defeat!

Shi Xiaobai did not continue pursuing him. He asked in wonderment, “Why does This King feel that your sword is

resisting you?”

After the clash, Shi Xiaobai had quickly noticed the problem.

Heartless immediately turned embarrassed. After picking up the black sword, he faked a calm expression and said, “This sword is a holy sword, so it’s natural for it to have a bit of a temper. It was just an accident.”

Shi Xiaobai was feeling somewhat confused. The Holy Radiance in his hand was rather docile. However, he knew little about the concept of holy swords, so he could only say, “Shall we continue?”

Heartless took a deep breath and nodded. Raising the black sword, he charged at Shi Xiaobai.

...

Three minutes later, Heartless watched disappointedly as the black sword flew out of his hand again and again. His eyes were filled with disbelief. It was the fifth time. Up to the fifth time of his clash with Shi Xiaobai, the black sword would always resist him at the most critical moment. It was as though it was deliberately against him!

As a result, after the fifth short clash, Heartless had been defeated five times by Shi Xiaobai, who was clumsily using his left hand!

Shi Xiaobai frowned and asked, “Are you actually up for it? Shall we just use psionic swords?”

Heartless gaped and felt somewhat at a loss as to how to respond.

Heartless felt like that plot had been written backwards. Against Tu Dahei, who for some unknown reason could only use his left hand, he should have been able to defeat him easily one time after another, then he could spare him one time after another, before repeating the ‘magnanimous’ question, “Are you actually up for it?”

Why did the plot become what it was now?

Or should he...just accept Tu Dahei’s suggestion and use psionic swords?

“No, I can control it. I can definitely do it!”

Heartless raised his black sword once again and said with resolute-looking eyes.

...

Half an hour later, the black sword flew out once again as Heartless stared in silence.

Heartless had already forgotten how many times he had been

defeated or how many times Tu Dahei had spared him. This black sword definitely had a grudge with him. It would resist violently at the most critical juncture every single time!

In fact, Heartless had begun to slowly see through the moment of the black sword's resistance. He had also learned how to deal with the resistance and had managed to reduce the negative effects to a minimum. Hence, he was insisting on using the black sword because he believed he would control it sooner or later!

However, not only he was improving, Tu Dahei was also improving!

# Chapter 278: Jealousy

---

Heartless was improving but so was Tu Dahei!

Furthermore, Tu Dahei's improvement was more apparent than his. It went from crooked slashes from the beginning to the point of mastering the essentials of using sword techniques with his left hand. In just half an hour, Tu Dahei's usage of sword techniques with his left hand looked as skilled as a lefty!

Without a doubt, Tu Dahei was a genius, a mind-boggling genius. He had spent only half an hour to conquer the unfamiliarity of using his left hand. Furthermore, he gained an understanding of how to use sword techniques with his left hand.

Heartless was extremely taken aback and similarly, he was rendered very speechless. In this 'duel', he had played the role of a pathetic training partner. Furthermore, it was the kind that kept being defeated. No, this plot must have been written backwards!

Heartless looked at the black sword in his hand. Most of the time, it was rather docile, but it would resist violently only during a clash. This black sword was the culprit of everything!

How good would it be if they had begun with psionic swords?

Heartless had such a thought as he began to feel a baffling sense of resentment towards the black sword.

“Are you actually up for it? Let’s just use psionic swords. This King does not like to bully others.”

Shi Xiaobai inquired once again. He had used a trick in his victory at the battle exchange, so despite him not being able to use his full strength due to the Absolute Choice’s punishment, Shi Xiaobai still wished to be able to defeat Heartless while he was using his full strength.

Heartless gaped but did not say a word. It wasn’t him not being up for it, but because this black sword was too much of a dirty trickster. Anyone would know how bad this black sword was if they used it. No wonder few people in the Ye family could control it over the millennia. Its temper was too bad!

Heartless wanted to throw the black sword and use a psionic sword. He knew that even with the drop in quality of the sword, he would then be able to use his full strength. So despite this trade-off, it would be a cinch for him to defeat Tu Dahei, who could only use his left hand!

However, Tu Dahei had made a ‘good-will’ offer for him to use psionic sword every single time, so if he truly switched swords, Heartless felt that it was equivalent to telling Tu Dahei that he was not up for it.

A struggle appeared in Heartless’ eyes for a few moments before his eyes suddenly lit up. He had thought of something!

Heartless suddenly threw the black sword to the ground in front



of Shi Xiaobai and said with a deep voice, “Why don’t you try?”

That’s right. By letting Tu Dahei experience the black sword’s temper, he would know why he was in such a pathetic state. Don’t be a fucking back seat driver!

Just a single sentence.

If you can’t do it then don’t even criticize!

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised but was more happy than alarmed. He was truly curious how bad the black sword’s temper was.

Shi Xiaobai was in no hurry to pick up the black sword as he only had one hand he could use at the moment in time. Thinking of something, Shi Xiaobai gently threw Holy Radiance from his hand to Heartless.

Heartless subconsciously caught Holy Radiance.

Shi Xiaobai said, “I’ll lend you this sword for now. It’s also a holy sword, but it has a rather mild temper.”

Heartless felt the warmth from the pure white sword in his palm. He was slightly alarmed. This pure-white sword was also a holy sword?

This rich aura of light exuded a warm sense of affinity.

This holy radiance was very docile!

Why were swords so disparate!?

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had picked up the entirely black sword from the ground.

Immediately, there was a look of anticipation in Heartless' eyes. This black sword was rather unfriendly to strangers. There were very few people who obtained the black sword's acknowledge in the Ye family throughout millennia. The black sword would crazily resist just from a single touch of most inheritors.

Heartless was anticipating the moment Tu Dahei embarrassed himself.

However, something Heartless found completely unexpected happened. At the moment Shi Xiaobai raised the black sword, the dull black sword suddenly emitted a blurry black halo!

The light black halo enveloped the black sword. The halo's light black color stood in stark contrast with the sword's dark black color. It was as though a film had suddenly developed around the sword, giving it a refined luster.

“Ding~”

The black sword vibrated slightly as it reverberated a clear sword hum.

Shi Xiaobai was given a fright. He felt the black sword stuck to his left hand like suction cups. The sword's hum seemed to express a form of ingratiating closeness at him.

This black sword's temper was bad?

Shi Xiaobai felt it was the opposite. He had a nagging illusion that the black sword was prepared to cling onto him until death.

Heartless was confounded as he said with a tremble, "It initiated...the acknowledgment of you as master? How... How could this be!?"

Over the past millennia, a few people from the Ye family had managed to gain control over the bad-tempered black sword, but none of them managed to make it acknowledge them as master.

But now, it had taken the initiative to acknowledge Tu Dahei as master?

For a holy sword to take the initiative to acknowledge a master was an amazing matter. Furthermore, it was this black sword with an odd temper. What was going on!?

At this moment, a sharp sword hum resonated!

Heartless immediately felt the white holy sword in his hand shake violently.

Heartless looked down as the white holy sword's creamy white luster was flickering.

“Ah!”

Heartless suddenly screamed as his right hand quickly released. The holy sword's hilt which was originally extremely warm to the touch suddenly became extremely cold, a cold colder than the dead winter's ice. It had frozen his palm numb instantly!

Holy Radiance fell from Heartless' hand but did not drop to the ground. Instead, it floated in mid-air and rapidly flew towards Shi Xiaobai!

As Holy Radiance shot out, it stopped in front of Shi Xiaobai. A frantic sword hum was emitted from Holy Radiance, as though it was an aggrieved child's crying complaints.

At the same time, the black sword in Shi Xiaobai's left hand produced a sword hum.

Holy Radiance's blade switched directions and by angling itself at the black sword, it began to vibrate.

The two swords' hums began to interlock as though they were quarreling children.

Heartless was dumbfounded as he stared at this scene. As he felt his slightly frostbitten palm, he thought to himself that the white sword's temper was clearly worse than the black sword's!

Furthermore, why were these two swords appearing to be 'jealous' over Tu Dahei?

It wasn't just appearance, it was definitely 'jealousy'!

Heartless finally figured out the reason why the black sword would resist him at a critical juncture despite him obtaining a preliminary recognition of the black sword. It was not because black sword suddenly had a bad mood and its temper flared.

It was because it had met Tu Dahei. Every time he slashed it at Tu Dahei, it would resist vigorously. It was resisting him because of Tu Dahei!

"What...what's the meaning of this?"

Heartless was too deep for tears.

What sort of charm did Tu Dahei have? How did Tu Dahei make the black sword initiate the acknowledgment as master to the

point of making the white sword feel insecure, resulting in the two holy swords 'quarreling' over him?

This was never seen or even heard of before!

## Chapter 279: You Are Actually A Lefty, Right?

---

Shi Xiaobai was also dumbfounded. He also realized that the two holy swords were being 'jealous' of each other. They were arguing over the right to be in his hand!

The sword hums from the black and white swords became harsher on the ears as they vibrated more intensely, as though they were about to come to a fight.

Shi Xiaobai obviously could no longer sit idle. With a cough, he said to the two swords, "This King has received the intentions of the both of you. There is no need for the both of you to argue any further. Doesn't This King have two hands?"

The black and white swords apparently understood what he said as their sword hums came to a halt, but very quickly, they began buzzing again, as though they were arguing over who should be the right-handed sword and left-handed sword.

Shi Xiaobai stared at them as he stabbed the black sword in the ground and said, "No more fighting or This King will not use either of you!"

This sentence was certainly effective as the two swords immediately became like deflated balloons. The sword hums came to a stop and moments later, two ingratiating low hums were produced, as though they were two children who were admitting their faults.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but shake his head and sigh. “Sigh, it is not your fault. The fault lies with This King being too excellent!”

When Heartless saw this scene, the corner of his mouth could not help but twitch.

Can you not be so shameless?

When Heartless saw the ingratiating black and white swords, a trace of envy could be seen in his eyes.

These were holy swords!

Ordinary people, even sword geniuses like him would thank their lucky stars to obtain the recognition of a holy sword. Getting a holy sword to recognize it as its master was a thing of dreams.

Even the elderly God of Swords could only force a holy sword to make it to recognize him as its master. No one was like Tu Dahei. Not only was he the recipient of two holy swords taking the initiative to recognize him as their master, they even became ‘jealous’ over him!

If this matter was made public, it would probably cause a brouhaha in the swordplay community. An envious storm would immediately stir!



At this moment, Shi Xiaobai placed the two swords side by side and exhorted, “In the future, both of you are family. Learn how to get along together first!”

The black and white swords emitted a reluctant sword hum, but did not separate from each other, as though they were afraid of displeasing Shi Xiaobai.

Heartless was immediately unhappy about this.

Although the black sword had taken the initiative to recognize Tu Dahei as master, it did not mean it was his!

Heartless hurriedly said, “This black sword is my Ye family’s sacred heirloom. Brother Dahei, this black sword is only lent to you to try it out, and not as a gift!”

When Heartless said this, the black sword immediately issued a sharp protest in the form of a sword hum before Shi Xiaobai could even say a word. It had expressed its attitude.

When Shi Xiaobai saw this, he could only shrug his shoulders and say, “This black sword seems be a sword of This King’s destiny. As you can see, it does not want to leave This King at this moment. Of course, This King will similarly not engage in forcefully robbing items from someone else. Let’s do it this way. If you can defeat This King in battle, this black sword will be given back to you temporarily. If you were to lose, the black sword would be temporarily be kept with This King. This King will specially visit your family in the following days and give a sacred item of

equivalent value as compensation for your family's loss!"

When Shi Xiaobai said this, psionic power surged out from his left hand and instantly constructed a psionic sword. He added on, "To make it fair, This King will not use either of the holy swords!"

When Heartless heard this, his face looked unsettled. This black sword was extremely important to the Ye family. How did he dare to use the black sword as a bet? However, with the current situation, it appeared to be the only way.

Furthermore, there was no reason for him to lose to Tu Dahei, who was using his left hand, in a battle of psionic swords!

Heartless hesitated for a long time before taking a deep breath to say, "Regardless of the battle's outcome, this black sword cannot be given to you. But since the holy sword has initiated recognizing you as its master, and you have a relationship with my sister, you would have to visit the Ye family at the end of the selection regardless of the outcome! Let's do it this way. If you can win this duel, this black sword can be lent till the end of the selection. But once the selection is over, you have to hand it back. Whether you are able to get this sword from the Ye family after this will depend on yourself. How about it?"

Heartless languished in thought for a long while before finally thinking of a compromising solution.

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, "Alright!"

Shi Xiaobai could also read the tough situation Heartless was in. Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai would not forcefully steal the heirlooms of others.

Heartless' eyes turned serious as a psionic sword appeared in his right hand as sword intent surged.

Heartless said in a deep voice, "For the holy sword, I will do my best even if you are using your inept left hand."

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, "This King can't wish for anything better!"

Heartless did not speak further and walked towards Shi Xiaobai with his sword raised. The true battle was going to begin from this moment!

Both sides were using psionic swords, so the external interference was eliminated. The key to victory depended on their sword techniques and sword abilities, as well as their understanding of sword truth!

Heartless was hailed as the second best sword genius in the younger generation. Other than Sunless, he had never been defeated by any of his peers!

Hence, there was no reason for him to be defeated by Tu Dahei, who was only using his left hand!

“Watch it!”

Heartless slashed out and the sword technique he used was the pride of the Ye family—Homecoming Sword!

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up and met the strike with the sword in his left hand. What he used was a return to simplicity, Beginner Sword combined with the essence of the Kun Peng Sword Technique!

“Clang!”

Shi Xiaobai was forced to take a step back when the swords clashed. Immediately, Heartless charged over with another slash!

Shi Xiaobai calmly faced him and with a block, he took another step back!

Heartless followed up with his third strike, but Shi Xiaobai did not dare to take it on. He retreated three big steps!

Just three strikes placed Shi Xiaobai completely at a disadvantage!

The Beginner Sword Shi Xiaobai used was extraordinary, but Heartless’ Homecoming Sword was far superior. Furthermore, Heartless’ comprehension of sword truths were also in the lead.

Furthermore, the power of Shi Xiaobai’s sword techniques were

greatly reduced by using his left hand!

However, Shi Xiaobai did not look upset after being restrained by the three strikes. Instead, his eyes turned brighter. The flames of fighting spirit in his eyes burned intensely!

He saw Sunless' figure in Heartless. It was as though he had returned to the night when their sword intents resonated. They had a spiritual connection and engaged in a swordplay exchange!

That night, he suffered defeat six hundred and fifty-three times and from that, he understood the difference of sword truths.

However, he slowly improved from suffering an abject defeat in one strike till he could withstand dozens of strikes. His comprehension of sword truths also went from nothing to something!

Shi Xiaobai had always found it regretful that his swordplay exchange with Sunless ended too soon. This was because the formation of his sword truth was just short by a tiny bit!

And at this moment, the Heartless in front of him gave him a similar pressure!

Although this pressure was not as great as the one Sunless gave him, it was a real pressure!

Shi Xiaobai liked pressure because pressure could allow him to

challenge his limits, so that he could constantly improve and exceed his limits!

“Again!”

Shi Xiaobai greeted it with a beaming smile!

Three strikes and Shi Xiaobai nearly lost!

Ten strikes and Shi Xiaobai managed to barely continue!

Thirty strikes and Shi Xiaobai was still struggling!

Fifty strikes and Shi Xiaobai had yet to be defeated!

A hundred strikes, Shi Xiaobai was like an indestructible cockroach. He would always hold out at the final most critical moment!

Two hundred strikes, Shi Xiaobai gradually grasped the pattern of the pressure. As Heartless attacked him more and more violently, he finally managed to not retreat in a pathetic manner!

Three hundred strikes and Shi Xiaobai found a chance to launch a counterattack while defending. Slashing out, he forced Heartless to take a step back!

Heartless caught his breath as he looked unsettled. He looked with a face of excitement at Shi Xiaobai and suddenly said with a deep voice, “Tu Dahei, you are actually a lefty, right!?”

...

# Chapter 280: You Can Scold Anyone But Tu Dahei!

---

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #5

The pigtailed youth held a dagger in hand while feeling short of breath. He looked exhausted.

That's not right. Describing him as pigtailed youth was no longer correct because his pigtail had already disappeared!

The pigtail youth's pigtail had been cut off at its roots. There was not even a tiny tail left!

And the person who did such a sordid (beautiful) job was the pigtailed youth himself!

This was because at this very moment, thirty minutes had passed since the pigtailed youth said the words—"One minute. If I'm unable to finish this battle after one minute, I'll cut my pigtail!"

Without being able to finish the battle even after thirty minutes, with an inkling that it would drag even longer, the pigtailed youth eventually cut his pigtail out of anger!

"You sure can run. You may not be strong, but your running skill is the best I've ever seen."



In his rage, the pigtailed youth cackled. The girl with brown, short hair in front of him had a heaven-defying superpower. The 'Lightning Flashstep' was completely unreasonable. Every time he was about to catch up to her, she would transform into a bolt of lightning and appear elsewhere. That speed was something that left him in the dust!

And what was most infuriating for him was that the girl had her eyes closed the entire time. She ran from beginning to end and did not even counterattack once.

The pigtailed youth was young and arrogant, so how could he endure such disregard? He had really blown his top!

If the pigtailed youth knew that Mu Yuesheng was not only closing her eyes, but was in Cogitation in a multitasking manner, he would probably tear up!

Mu Yuesheng ignored the pigtailed youth's mockery and continued her Cogitation. Shi Xiaobai's Massage Technique of God had improved her Cogitation cultivation greatly, but such an improvement had a limited duration. Mu Yuesheng did not want to waste a single second!

Therefore, even in the midst of a duel, Mu Yuesheng prioritized Cogitation. This was because her goal was not the fourth or fifth level, but to be in the selection's top ten!

For this, she had to reach the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal

Realm as soon as possible!

The pigtailed youth took a deep breath as he tiptoed towards Mu Yuesheng without a sound.

At a distance of about six meters away from her, a cold flash appeared in the pigtailed youth's eyes. He suddenly burst forward with a staggering speed, and closed the distance instantly. Raising the dagger, he stabbed at Mu Yuesheng's back!

“Go to hell!”

The pigtailed youth stared angrily, his face somewhat hideous, as though he was a cornered wolf!

“Buzz!”

The sounds of electric current buzzed as icy-blue bolts sparked around. Mu Yuesheng shot forward and instantly opened up a gap of more than a hundred meters. Without any suspense, the pigtailed youth's sneak attack missed!

“Fuck! Are you fucking only able to run?”

The pigtailed youth cursed angrily. He nearly threw away his novel. This was not the way things worked!

Mu Yuesheng continued ignoring him. She did not even open her

eyes. Her Cogitation was at a critical moment. She felt that she was beginning to come into contact with the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. She was just short of a tiny bit to make a breakthrough!

As for the pigtailed youth's attacks?

Mu Yuesheng simply ignored him. Thinking back to that night during her fight with Shi Xiaobai, even Shi Xiaobai's surprisingly fast Crab Steps was helpless against her. He had finally managed to wear her out with his strong endurance.

If her opponent at the battle exchange was anyone else but Sunless, who completely inhibited her, she would not have been easily defeated, even if it was Heartless!

In terms of psionic cultivation realm, damage or defense, Mu Yuesheng knew that she was still far inferior compared to the rookies in the selection. But in terms of speed and dodging, Mu Yuesheng believed she was one of the best!

Maybe there would be a rookie who would be able to catch her in her bolt form, or there would be a rookie who had enough strength to corner her, or a rookie like Sunless, who possessed a method to inhibit her, but that person was definitely not the pigtailed youth in front of her!

Mu Yuesheng continued her Cogitation without any worry. She knew that the fifth and sixth levels determined if she would be able to enter the top ten. As for the fourth level, it was the last time she

could catch her breath!

The pigtailed youth, who was disregarded, felt incensed. There was truly nothing he could do to this brown haired-girl!

“Gaia is indeed the trashiest organization. All its nurtures are trash like you that only know how to run?”

As the pigtailed youth could not hit Mu Yuesheng, he began launching verbal invectives!

Mu Yuesheng continued ignoring and disregarding him. She felt that she was about to breakthrough. Just a little bit more!

The pigtailed youth had given up attacking as he began to taunt to vent his anger, “Trash that cannot last longer than ten seconds in the battle exchange. Look at the trash that participated in the selection. A retard calling himself a genius? A humanoid pet that only knows how to act cute? And you, a coward that can only run away?”

Mu Yuesheng’s eyes remained calm. Such a pointless and weak taunts could not make her heart quiver at all.

“Just a bit...a bit more...”

Mu Yuesheng felt that she was already about to touch the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm with her fingertips. She felt like a pupa being restricted in a cocoon. She had already broken out a

tiny crack, and light was seeping through the crack. The desire to break out of it grew intensely as no one could prevent her from taking that resolute step forward!

The pigtailed youth said with a grim look, “The funniest person is Tu Dahei. He’s just a scum at the seventh level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, yet he calls himself king? He’s just a retard with eight-grader syndrome. He must have used a forbidden method with an extremely high price on the day of the battle exchange to increase his strength. He’s just a dog that will go to despicable means raised by Gaia. That forbidden method must have emptied his body, so he will not progress any further in the future. With his character, that doesn’t know any better, I can already foresee the horrible outcome of him dying out on the street...”

When the pigtailed youth mentioned Tu Dahei, his eyes were filled with hatred, so he spoke with even more vicious words.

“Just a bit more...”

Mu Yuesheng sighed and suddenly opened her eyes. She turned to look at the pigtailed youth, while her brown pupils looked as cold as snow. Mu Yuesheng coldly said, “You made a very bad choice.”

He could launch invectives at Gaia, he could taunt her, but cursing Shi Xiaobai, that was intolerable!

Icy-blue bolts flashed around vibrantly around Mu Yuesheng like testy pixies. The sizzling sounds of electric currents were

intermixed with angry explosions.

The pigtailed youth said angrily, “How can trash that only knows how to run do anything to me? I’ll let you know how wide the gap is between me as an elite of Zeus and a Gaia trash like you!”

...

Ten minutes later.

A pigtailed youth who was charred black all over lay on the ground as though he was dying. Electric currents snaked around his body as they buzzed.

The pigtailed youth convulsed from time to time as his eyes looked glazed over. He said trembling, “You... You should not be a Gaia rookie... How can a trash organization like Gaia...have such a...powerful rookie like you? Im-Impossible...”

Mu Yuesheng stood afar with a calm look in her eyes. “Gaia will soon surprise everyone.”

No, Gaia has Shi Xiaobai. It will probably not be as simple as a surprise!

Mu Yuesheng seemed to think of something as a smile suffused across her lips.

When the pigtailed youth heard this, his eyes were filled with contempt while he wanted to say something derisive about Gaia.

At this moment, an icy-blue current flashed and with a sizzling sound, the pigtailed youth convulsed once as his eyes rolled back. With a terrible cry, he fainted!

An authoritative voice immediately resounded above the arena:

“The duel is over with Mu Yuesheng emerging victorious. The victor will be sent to the fifth level in ten seconds and the loser will be sent out of the training ground!”

# Chapter 281: What Goes Around Comes Around!

---

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #4

“Alright, it’s time to say goodbye to you.”

The burly teenager was somewhat bored and planned to mercifully end this unilateral abuse.

The blond youth in front of him was covered in injuries. His eyes looked glazed over and he had almost lost all ‘torture’ value.

The burly teenager briskly walked towards Kevin. He wanted to pluck the nearly-ripe fruit of victory!

The burly teenager was planning to use the most stylish posture to end this duel. As he briskly walked, he suddenly accelerated towards Kevin, like a cheetah that had noticed its prey.

Kevin’s eyes that looked glazed over suddenly recovered and stared angrily. With a roar, he smacked out with his right palm at the burly teenager!

“Black Bear Dominating Palm!”

That palm strike was still the unrepentant Black Bear



## Dominating Palm!

“Are you still trying to put up a last struggle? It’s already been dozens of times, but you still don’t realize that such a foolish offensive skill will never succeed?”

The burly teenager sneered in his heart. He instantly stepped away and easily dodged the extremely destructive Black Bear Dominating Palm, that unfortunately had too much precursory movements!

After dodging, he could sense that the blond youth who had just struck could not help but stiffen his body.

“It’s over!”

The burly teenager turned around and came behind Kevin. Seizing the one second of Kevin’s stiffness, he chopped at Kevin’s neck!

The burly teenager was relaxed and happy. This victory was indeed too easy.

Suddenly, the burly teenager’s pupils violently shrank. His raised right hand came to a halt as he looked incredulously at his abdomen—a palm impression was left on his abdomen!

Time seemed to stretch out at that very moment. At the moment the palm imprint appeared on his abdomen, the burly teenager’s

mind went blank. Immediately following that, the pain of his internal organs rupturing spread across his body!

“Boom!”

The burly teenager flew backwards like a cannonball. He flew out more than ten meters at an extremely fast speed. By the time he was in mid-air, his eyes had turned white as hot blood spewed from his mouth.

“Putong!”

The burly teenager crashed to the ground and convulsed twice. He appeared to struggle to stand up but immediately collapsed to the ground weakly. Blood was pouring out from his mouth as his eyes glazed over.

Sounds of soft footsteps slowly approached him as the burly teenager endured the pain to look up. He said with a tremble, “How... How is this possible? How did you do it?”

Kevin lowered his head at the burly teenager and said, “Guess?”

The corners of the burly teenager’s mouth twitched. Kevin’s sudden destructive power had struck his abdomen without any warning. He was seriously injured and was quickly losing his ability to fight. He was bound to lose the battle.

But why did this happen? Why did the fool from before that was

being beaten into a pulp suddenly was able to make such an effective counterattack?

“You had clearly...stiffened...because of your superpower... Why... Why could you turn around and hit me?” the burly teenager said amid coughs.

Kevin shrugged and said, “Think about it slowly.”

The burly teenager’s eyes were filled with rage. He struggled to get up but Kevin struck at him!

“Boom!”

This palm strike hit the burly teenager in the back. Even though the burly teenager had used Psionic Hardening, he was still directly sent sinking into the ground. With a cry, he spat out another mouthful of blood!

Kevin showed no mercy nor did he provide the burly teenager any respite. Instead, he was beating on the downtrodden burly teenager till he lost all his combat strength.

The burly teenager gave a wry smile. The difference in strength between them was clearly immense, yet he had lost to a single strike out of carelessness, losing him the entire battle.

The burly teenager began recalling the entire duel and gradually understood something. As he was plastered to the sunken ground,

he turned his head with great difficulty. He said in disbelief, “You...have always...been acting?”

A smile suffused across Kevin’s lips. Yes, he was of course acting all along!

By playing the role of a fool from the beginning, he took the initiative to bear the ridicule and beatings, all to seize that opportunity to launch a surprise attack!

The stubborn usage of Black Bear Dominating Palm was to make the burly teenager discover the weakness of the Price of Might, making him convinced of that weakness. All of that was to lay the foundation for this sudden palm strike!

Kevin did not use his superpower for the final Black Bear Dominating Palm. The stiffness was faked so as to let the burly teenager turn careless before he seized the opportunity to strike out at an extremely fast speed with his palm!

This palm was not any offensive skill. It was simple and fast, but with the augmentation of the Price of Might and the burly teenager not putting up any defense, this strike caused immense damage!

This was a successful deceit, allowing him to make an absolute comeback in one move!

All of this was taught to him by Shi Xiaobai—the essence of a deceptive assassin!

Kevin said with a sneer, “I forgot to tell you, This Genius is now an assassin.”

The burly teenager’s eyes widened as he gave a wry smile. Back at the battle exchange, he had said something similar, but he never expected for it to be returned to him so quickly.

However, he had indeed lost. Kevin had endured the humiliation and trampling, completing a near-perfect deceit. This was a textbook example of the weak beating the strong. He had lost without a cause, but it was also understandable!

“What goes around comes around.”

Kevin crouched down and raised his palm. “Then, it’s time to say goodbye.”

Kevin chopped the burly teenager’s neck forcefully. With a cry of indignation, the burly teenager fainted after all the serious injuries had reached the point of not being able to move!

At the next moment, the authoritative voice resounded above the arena:

“The duel is over with Kevin emerging victorious. The victor will be sent to the fifth level in ten seconds and the loser will be sent out of the training ground!”

Kevin looked up. His eyes were slightly red.

He had won. He had defeated a mighty Zeus rookie!

He had avenged himself, avenging the humiliation of the seven-second defeat!

He had changed. He had gone from a pathetic worm that indulged in his vanity, maturing to become a deceptive assassin who could endure humiliation.

And all of this was because of that one person.

That person clearly ought to have hated him, but he had given him help and guidance. He had made him understand the absurdity of vanity and had made him know what was true mightiness. That person had made him see a path filled with true light!

That person was someone he previously hated and later was jealous of. But now, all that was left was admiration and gratitude. That person had never changed. He was always that person who you hated and loved, but he was able to change your opinion, mind and even your values!

Without that person, this victory would have been impossible!

“Shi Xiaobai!”

Kevin looked up into the sky and shouted, “This Genius knew from the beginning that the term deceptive assassin is something you invented, but...This Genius still likes it a lot!”

# Chapter 282: For Lord Shi Xiaobai!

---

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #3

The female whopper's skin had turned bronze-colored, with a pair of horns growing on her head. Her face twisted and turned into an ox head. She had transformed into a massive bronze Minotaur!

“Boom!”

The female whopper took a step forward fissuring the ground as the ground began to shake!

Her eyes which were the size of bells had already turned red. Staring at Mozzie, she had surging killing intent that felt suffocating.

The female whopper was thoroughly enraged. An ant she thought she could easily trample had taken advantage of her carelessness to burn her soles and clothes, making her appear wretched. The ant was not to be forgiven and deserved death for her sin!

The female whopper walked towards Mozzie. The flames produced by Grilling Hammer did not blaze any further when they struck her bronze body. Even the high temperatures of Stewing Wok Hammer were useless.



Mozzie could only constantly retreat, but her speed was extremely slow as well. Soon, she was cornered by the female whopper.

“Die!”

The female whopper bellowed angrily as her right hand that had transformed into a metallic hoof came smashing down at Mozzie!

“Magical Silver Shield!”

Mozzie managed to conjure a dark silver shield just in time!

“Boom!”

The metallic hoof that brought with it devastating power smacked down, causing the magical silver shield to vibrate violently, as a tiny crack appeared.

For a B-class defensive skill to barely withstand a single strike, it was evident how powerful the female whopper was.

But thankfully, the female whopper’s speed had become more retarded after transforming into a bronze Minotaur despite having her strength and defense enhanced.

At this moment, the female whopper resembled the Titan Ape!

“This Mosquito might not be stronger, but can’t she hide?”

Mozzie did not forcefully use Magical Silver Shield to resist the next strike but found an opportunity to run to the side.

From previously kiting the Titan Ape, Mozzie had finally rounded up the methods of fleeing. The way she dodged the female whopper’s retarded hoof looked extremely proficient.

“You can’t run!”

After the female whopper missed with her hoof, she immediately turned around to look angrily at Mozzie. Suddenly, she raised her metallic hooves and slammed down on the ground!

“Boom!”

As the metallic hooves struck the hard earth, a rift opened in front of her. This rift spread forward like a snake that was rapidly crawling towards Mozzie.

Alarms sounded in Mozzie’s heart as she hurriedly ran.

The rift barely missed Mozzie’s feet, but suddenly, like grapefruit skin that split apart, it turned in a ravine a meter wide and three meters deep.

Mozzie rolled on the ground in a wretched state, narrowly avoiding falling into the ravine.

“You can’t run!”

The female whopper’s expression was ferocious. Her sharp voice sounded frightening as she continued trampling forward like a behemoth towards Mozzie. From time to time, she would slam on the ground with her metallic hooves, spreading tiny rifts before opening them up into ravines that crossed throughout the arena.

Mozzie gritted her teeth while constantly on the run. She was like a rabbit that was being hunted relentlessly by a wolf.

But soon, ravines filled the ground as a result of the female whopper’s wanton destruction. The amount of space Mozzie had to escape to was shrinking, and slowly, she was forced into a corner.

“You won’t be able to run now!”

The female whopper sneered at the cornered Mozzie. Three ravines formed a triangle, sealing off all routes of retreat for Mozzie!

There was nowhere for Mozzie to run!

“I’ll crush you to death, shattering each and every bone of yours!”

The female whopper said such vicious words as she approached step by step.

Mozzie wheezed as she tried to catch her breath while fragrant sweat poured down her pale face. The battle with the Titan Ape had drained her greatly, and with her escaping in panic, her stamina was depleted.

Mozzie stared at the female whopper and said with a sneer, “You want to crush This Mosquito with those crappy hooves of yours? Do you even have any common sense? Furthermore, This Mosquito can use the exit command at any time. You don’t even let your vicious words go through your brain. Oh right, you don’t have a brain. A cow’s brain is filled with fat! Hmph!”

The female whopper’s face turned increasingly ugly. She had realized that she probably did not have a chance to vent her anger.

The female whopper stopped and stared angrily at Mozzie. She cursed, “Darn exit command! Get lost. Count yourself lucky. The next time I grab the chance, I’ll crush all your bones!”

Mozzie stubbornly stared at the female whopper. She had been forced into a corner and there was no way for her to challenge such a frightening Minotaur in a head-on fight. The only option for her was to escape with the exit command.

Since this selection was only a form of training herself, she did not plan on going that far. She was already lucky enough to reach

the fourth level, so what more was there to wish for?

With her strength, it was only right for her to be eliminated at this moment. As long as she said the exit command, she would not need to remain so exhausted and forcefully persist on. She could lie in bed and have a good night's sleep. She could have a sumptuous meal to celebrate her reaching of the fourth level.

No one would believe that she could defeat a Zeus rookie anyway. Even she did not think so highly of herself. Hence, no one would mock her for failing at this moment. No one would feel disappointed either. It was a trivial matter.

“Is that really true?”

Mozzie went into a daze for a moment as her pupils slightly contracted.

“No, that's not true!”

There was still one person, a person who believed that she could go further and that she was not a weakling. That person even believed she had a chance of entering the top 10.

That person had selflessly contributed and seriously guided her. That person had taken great risks in order for her to become stronger.

That person had never obtained anything from her, but that

person had allowed her to mature and be moved time and again. It was all very precious.

Did that person hold any hopes for her?

If she were to run now, would that person...be disappointed?

“No, I can’t disappoint Lord Shi Xiaobai!”

Even if there was a one percent chance, she could absolutely not disappoint Lord Shi Xiaobai!

Mozzie’s eyes turned red. The cowardliness and confusion in her eyes disappeared at that moment, leaving behind resolve and determination.

Mozzie suddenly took out a dark red bead from her pocket and put it into her mouth before swallowing it!

“Ah!”

Mozzie cried out. Her delicate skin suddenly turned red as though she was being consumed by fire. Her face tightened as though she was experiencing excruciating pain.

This dark bead was the blood essence of the Titan Ape obtained as a reward after clearing a ‘hell’ difficulty stone door by collectively killing the Titan Ape!

The Titan Ape's blood essence contained the power of the Titan bloodline; hence, Sunless and company naturally left the blood bead for her.

This was a treasure meant to enhance the purity of her bloodline when she was strong enough, but Mozzie had swallowed it at this moment!

This was actually extremely dangerous, and could even be considered a life-threatening move!

This was because Mozzie's body might not be able to withstand the power contained within the blood essence. It was very likely she would explode to her death from swallowing the blood bead!

However, Mozzie was prepared to go for broke!

It was not for victory, nor was it a wager, but to not disappoint Lord Shi Xiaobai!

It was to not let the effort Lord Shi Xiaobai spent on her go to waste!

It was all to vindicate Lord Shi Xiaobai!

Hence, she wanted to win!

She had to win!

Mozzie swallowed the Titan Ape's blood essence and immediately felt her blood boiling. A pain surged across her body and shot straight to her head. She screamed and nearly lost consciousness.

When the female whopper saw that Mozzie did not say the exit command but suddenly turned red as though she was in excruciating pain, her eyes immediately lit up. She walked towards Mozzie with cold and terrifying eyes.

At times, the thoughts of women could be more vicious than men's!

“Go to hell!”

The female whopper roared angrily and slammed down at Mozzie with her metallic hoof, straight at Mozzie's cute and delicate face!

“Boom!”

A delicate hand suddenly reached out and grabbed the female whopper's metallic hoof.

The strike had come to an abrupt halt!

“How can this be possible!?”



The female whopper's eyes were filled with disbelief. Despite exerting her strength till her face turned red, her hoof failed to inch forward. She could not retract it either!

The fingers that clasped her metallic hoof looked like tender fingers, but they contained infinite power!

“How are you...”

The female whopper lowered her head to look at the cute girl in front of her. At this moment, her skin and eyes were both red. There was a demonic and sinister look on her adorable face.

An innate fear suddenly arose in the fat whopper's heart.

Mozzie looked up, revealing her red eyes. With a hoarse voice, she said, “How dare a bronze ox offend the mighty Titan?”

Mozzie raised her hand gently, easily lifting the female whopper up by her metallic hoof!

The female whopper screamed in extreme fear!

Mozzie hurled her lightly!

“Boom!”

The female whopper was helpless as she flew out like a cannonball before slamming into a wall. She penetrated wall after wall, but the arena's walls did not seem to have an end. The female whopper did not stop as she continued crashing through the walls.

The female whopper's eyes rolled over as she could not withstand such immense power. Soon, she fainted.

The red glow around Mozzie gradually dissipated. As she shook her head in a trance, she slowly regained her proper state of mind. She saw a hole in the wall that appeared to have no end in sight. The hole was no different in size to the female whopper. There was even the shape of a pair of large horns.

“Eh... What happened?”

Mozzie's mind was filled with questions as she frowned.

At this moment, the authoritative voice resounded above the arena:

“The duel is over with Wen Hezheng emerging victorious. The victor will be sent to the fifth level in ten seconds and the loser will be sent out of the training ground!”

Mozzie immediately stared widely.

She had won?

How did she win?

She only remembered feeling extreme discomfort all over her after swallowing the blood bead. She fell unconscious from the pain, but after that, the situation turned into this.

Mozzie felt some lingering fear over the period of pain she had when she swallowed the blood bead. However, she was overjoyed over having somehow won the battle.

She had won, proving that Lord Shi Xiaobai's hard work had not been in vain.

That was enough!

Enough!

...

# Chapter 283: I'll Just Quietly Watch You Posture

---

Shanghai City, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Main Auditorium

At this moment, everyone in the auditorium had a face as though they had seen a ghost, especially the elderly God of Swords and the middle-aged Zeus couple which recently arrived. Their expressions were already indescribable with words.

The elderly God of Swords was still alright. In order to maintain his awesomeness, he forced himself to remain calm. However, the middle-aged couple could not hide the gloom, disbelief, anger and disappointment on their faces...

In the last thirty minutes, everyone was watching the stone monument, focusing on the five Zeus rookies on the fifth level. Sunless was the fastest to obtain victory and head to the fifth level, but soon, news of three defeats appeared!

The female whopper was defeated by that cute girl from Gaia, Mozzie!

The burly teenager had been defeated by the blond youth from Gaia, Kevin!

The pigtailed youth had been defeated by the short-haired girl from Gaia, Mu Yuesheng!

The outcome of the three battles was displayed on the stone monument for all to see!

The people who were discussing how long the three Gaia rookies could last a moment ago had all shut their mouths.

The middle-aged couple that wanted to make snide remarks at Yama Minamiya and Riko felt as though they had eaten a fly. They could not produce a single sound for a long time!

This result was too sudden and too incredulous!

A bizarre but silent atmosphere pervaded the entire auditorium. The crowd that had been smacked ruthlessly in the face no longer knew what to say.

The rookies of Gaia, a second-tier organization, against rookies of Zeus, a first-tier organization ended up in three out of three victories?

Two of these lineups had their duels end in less than ten seconds in the recent battle exchange. And at this moment, the outcome was completely reversed?

What had just happened?

No, it should be said, what drugs did those three Gaia rookies

eat?

How was it possible for them to make such an amazing reversal?

Without being able to use words and comments to express their feelings of shock and distraught, everyone could only remain silent. Even if their faces had swollen from being smacked, there was no way to retort stubbornly.

The first person to break the silence was Riko. Flowers were already blooming in her heart from the joy she was experiencing. The beaming smile on her beautiful face could melt the eyes of everyone, but even so she said with a smile, “At Gaia and Zeus’s battle exchange, Tu Dahei once said—Gaia is filled with hidden talents! In fact, these three rookies are hidden talents. The performance at the battle exchange was just to hide their true strength, but now, having met an old rival, they could not spare them since it was an elimination duel. So everyone, there’s no need to be shocked. The matter is just like that, nothing much.”

Riko sat down after saying those words. Her eyes were narrowed into the shape of crescents as she commended Mozzie and company for producing such impressive results.

This was the most pleasant moment in years before she could vent her unhappiness in public as a person from Gaia.

Yama Minamiya helplessly shook his head. His daughter’s actions were beginning to resemble Shi Xiaobai’s. This was problematic!

Yama Minamiya coughed slightly and said, “I wish everyone will not over-emphasize this matter. I believe everyone knows that Gaia has been keeping a low profile all these years, so this matter is truly nothing. It’s only defeating Zeus, just three victories out of three. Nothing much.”

After Yama Minamiya said this, he immediately felt exceedingly cool.

Fuck, the word ‘only’ is truly artistic!

Everyone was at a loss for words. They only had one thought in their minds:

You are awesome, I’ll just quietly watch you posture.

The middle-aged couple had livid expressions. They could not remain silent and just as they wanted to stir up a storm, the elderly God of Swords immediately stared at them. He gave a repressed shout, “Aren’t you going to the medical ward to check on the children?”

The middle-aged couple could only nod their heads and leave the auditorium filled with indignation. They did not even dare to say any redeeming words before they left. There was no other way. With three victories out of three, especially against Gaia, which they taunted so much, their faces had been smacked so much that they swelled into pigs’ heads.

The silence in the auditorium remained for a few moments before someone suddenly said, “Look, Shi Xiaobai and Heartless’ battle is not over! Anyone has any guesses how their fight is going?”

Immediately, someone responded, “It has to be abnormally fiery, with both sides pushing hard at it, fighting a desperate battle, constantly exceeding their limits and surpassing each other. A battle of the century which no one is willing to lag behind!”

People in the auditorium began to discuss immediately.

There was no other way. Their faces hurt from the smacking. There was a need to change subjects!

...

...

Fourth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower,  
Battle Arena #2

“Tu Dahei, you are actually a lefty, right!?”

When Heartless said this, his expression looked serious. However, his tone was mostly being jovial and feeling helplessness.



He obviously knew that Tu Dahei was not a lefty. The clumsiness at the beginning could not be faked, but at this moment, Tu Dahei's use of his left hand was smooth, without even the slightest delay. He was more lefty than a lefty.

This dramatic improvement only took him about thirty minutes!

Such terrifying adaptability was completely unheard of!

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said in high spirits, "What a joke. How can This King be compared to mortals like you. This King is ambidextrous, proficient with both left and right hands!"

Heartless could not help but roll his eyes. This Tu Dahei actually acknowledged his praise for him.

Heartless took a deep breath and said seriously, "Tu Dahei, I only used 60% of my strength during the three hundred strikes. It is also to repay you for the mercy you showed me. From now on, I'll be using my full strength."

Homecoming Sword was the most basic sword technique for Heartless. It was equivalent to his 'Beginner Sword'.

He only used Homecoming Sword three hundred times as a form of repaying Shi Xiaobai's mercy when he was defeated because of the "black sword's rebellion".

But in the three hundred clashes, Shi Xiaobai had went from

‘barely struggling’ to ‘seizing the opportunity to counterattack’. Such terrifying learning capacity made Heartless fear holding back.

This was a monster that would surpass you if you were a little inattentive!

“Come on!”

Shi Xiaobai nodded as his eyes became brighter. The fighting spirit in his eyes burned hotter.

Heartless’ Homecoming Sword was after all his ‘Beginner Sword’, but wasn’t Shi Xiaobai also using Beginner Sword all this time?

After the three hundred clashes, Shi Xiaobai had conquered the unfamiliarity of using his left hand. After gaining the quintessence of using his left hand was the best time for him to use Kun Peng Sword Technique with his left hand!

The two lifted their swords and faced each other once again.

This duel did not seem like there was an obsession towards victory, but more like a sword exchange with mutual respect!

“Ha!”

Heartless suddenly boomed with a low pitch. The white psionic sword in his hand was immediately enveloped by azure rings. The azure aura was like layers of condensate film, reflective and crystalline. When the sword moved, it would produce ripples, just like ripples that appeared on an azure water surface.

A light azure glow suddenly enveloped Heartless' body. His entire body was wrapped in an azure liquid membrane as it emitted a cold aura outwards. Heartless was extremely handsome to begin with, and now with him shrouded in the azure glow, his mortality seemed extinguished, making him as striking as an immortal that had descended.

# Chapter 284: You Shall Be Defeated By This Sword Attack

---

Amid the azure halo, Heartless looked like an immortal that had descended.

“My master is Jian Xilai of the Kun Peng Sword Sect. With a single Kun Peng Sword Technique, he has dominated the world with his sword. He has been a God of Swords for decades and he has yet to be defeated! My sister and I have been cultivating in the Kun Peng Sword Technique since we were young. I’m said to be a sword prodigy, and I have gained insights into the lower form of the Kun Peng. My sister is slightly better, gaining insights into the middle form of the Kun Peng! With just the lower form of the Kun Peng, among my peers, I have only lost to my sister!”

When Heartless said this, he suddenly slashed towards his side. An azure sword beam flew out immediately, turning into sword-shaped water wave. The water wave suddenly froze into a frost icicle before shattering, turning into bits and pieces of snowflakes. As the snowflakes descended, each of them contained immense sword intent. They carved streaks into the ground when they landed.

The sword beam condensed into water, water froze into frost, frost shattered into snow, snow fell as swords!

The weird multi-fold changes all happened in an instant, but it was a coherent and complete picture. It was hard to discern with the naked eye. It felt that every transformation of the sword beam contained a different sword intent, and each level of sword intent

seemed to contain nomological sword truths!

“This is the lower form of the Kun Peng—The northern darkness has Kun, waters stir at a flick of its tail!”

Heartless looked at Shi Xiaobai and said, “You shall be defeated by this sword attack!”

You shall be defeated by this sword attack!

This sounded so extremely domineering that it could not be contained!

Shi Xiaobai gaped slightly, but he was not astounded. Instead, he was amazed—Holy shit, Kun Peng Sword Technique was this awesome?

Shi Xiaobai had gained insights into the upper form of the Kun Peng from the mantra and had even cultivated it to the Familiarized Proficiency realm, but he did not find it particularly powerful. He felt that compared to the silver-armored blond woman he saw in his mind that slashed out golden sword beams that filled the world, it was just too weak.

But at this moment, Heartless had touted the Kun Peng Sword Technique as though it was nearly ascending the heavens!

“Did This King do it wrongly?”

Shi Xiaobai began to wonder.

The lower form of the Kun Peng that Heartless used was something Shi Xiaobai had observed several times from Sunless. However, Sunless' lower form of the Kun Peng was not as exquisite as Heartless'. She did not achieve the transformation of sword beams into the four states of water. All she produced was biting cold sword intent.

However, Sunless' middle form of the Kun Peng was able to slash out stormy blade edges, with sword energies transforming into wind that blustered forward, as though thousands of fine sword beams were simultaneously slashed out.

From Shi Xiaobai's observation, he believed that the lower form and middle form of the Kun Peng Sunless used was characterized by the power of low temperatures and sword-wind manifestation, making it completely counter to the upper form's power of high temperatures and sword-fire manifestation.

But from the looks of it, that did not seem to be the only case?

Shi Xiaobai suddenly found something suspicious as his eyes gradually brightened.

“Sunless failed to attain the quintessence of the lower form of the Kun Peng!”

Shi Xiaobai came up with such a conclusion.

Sunless had focused on cultivating the middle form of the Kun Peng; hence, she was able to achieve sword-wind manifestation. Due to neglect in the lower form, she did not comprehend its essence!

As for Heartless, he was completely opposite. He was unable to comprehend the middle form, so he put all his effort in the lower form. Hence, he was able to achieve sword-water manifestation!

The northern darkness has Kun, waters stir at a flick of its tail!

It changes into Peng, winds arise at a flap of its wings!

This was the true essence of the Kun Peng Sword Technique. The Kun swam in water, so sword-water manifestation. The Peng flew amid the winds, so sword-wind manifestation!

If that was the case, the lower and middle form of the Kun Peng were the Kun Sword and the Peng Sword respectively. Combining the two together achieved the complete Kun Peng Sword!

But even so, what was the situation with the upper form?

Kun-Stewing Wok?

Two Peng Grills?

Compared to the stirring of water with a flick of the tail and the arising of winds at the flap of wings, the upper form did not resemble the Kun Peng Sword Technique at all. It appeared rather redundant, and seemed...

Shi Xiaobai suddenly thought of something as his eyes lit up!

He came to a possible realization!

Shi Xiaobai pondered over it quickly, and with his great imagination and ability to fill in the blanks, he took a few seconds to go from a simple discovery and hypothesis to an amazing possibility!

Shi Xiaobai raised his sword with his left hand. His eyes were like brilliant stars as a smile suffused across his lips.

Upon seeing this, Heartless felt a sense of foreboding. However, he did not speak any further and instead ran towards Shi Xiaobai with sword raised!

“Watch it!”

Heartless slashed out!

Vaporized water, gushing sword intent, freezing, shattering, falling. Snowflakes filled with sword beams began falling from



above!

Shi Xiaobai looked calm. He did not show any intention of dodging. Instead, with sword in his left hand, he slashed out at the sword snowflakes that filled the sky!

This slash looked extremely casual, as though he had gently raised his sword to streak across the sky.

However, after slashing out, the snowflakes that filled the sky instantly melted and evaporated, turning into boiling bubbles that rose towards the sky!

Heartless immediately stared with widened eyes that were filled with incredulity!

The snowflakes were no ordinary snowflakes but sword energies that were biting cold. How could they be melted and evaporated into water vapor?

Shi Xiaobai's grin broadened.

Heartless was alarmed as he immediately slashed out again!

This time, it was not the falling of snowflakes but azure water waves!

The Kun Sword had three forms—water wave, ice front, and

snowflakes. This strike was the water wave!

But rather than calling it water wave, it might as well be called a tsunami in mid-air. The sword energies swept forward like a tsunami towards Shi Xiaobai, as though being inundated by the sword energies would cause one to be swallowed by the sword energies in the water wave!

The sword waves churned at an astonishing speed towards Shi Xiaobai, who remained calm. Once again, he casually struck.

With the slash, a transparent sword beam collided with the sword wave. The sound of water boiling immediately was heard as the azure sword tsunami immediately evaporated, turning into rising plumes of white mist.

Heartless drew a gasp and said in surprise, “What sword attack is this?”

What sword technique could instantly obliterate the Kun Peng Sword Technique’s sword intent, and evaporate all the sword beams?

Shi Xiaobai did not answer. This attack was of course, Kun-Stewing Wok. In the past, he would have said Kun Peng Sword Technique, but at this moment, he no longer thought so!

Be it the name ‘Kun-Stewing Wok’ or from its effects, it was clearly designed to counter the lower form sword of Kun Peng!

Water waves?

Ice front?

Snowflakes?

Who cares what waters you stir with a flick of your tail. They would all be evaporated as a result of high temperatures!

Of course, this so-called evaporation was not evaporation as described in Physics. The power of high temperatures was also not simply high temperatures, but they referred to the sword energy produced by Kun-Stewing Wok being able to 'evaporate' Kun Sword's sword energies!

This was a very simple and crude counter. It was completely unreasonable!

Shi Xiaobai did not respond, but neither did Heartless ask any further. Heartless slashed out Kun Sword in silence once again, but this strike was easily dissipated by Shi Xiaobai.

However, Heartless did not stop. He continuously slashed Kun Sword!

He was carefully watching Shi Xiaobai's sword techniques and sensing the sword intent in every strike so as to discover the secret

of the attack!

Shi Xiaobai seemed to read Heartless' mind. He matched his wishes by using Stewing Sword to extinguish Heartless' sword energy.

After a long while, Heartless suddenly stared with widened eyes and said aghast, "This is...the Kun Peng Sword Technique!?"

## Chapter 285: Heavens, Quickly Take This Bastard Back

---

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was slightly astonished. Back at Ogre Forest, Sunless could tell that the sword move he was using was the Kun Peng Sword Technique after a few observations. Her sword talent was clearly much better than Heartless, who had to observe for such a long period of time. However, why were Heartless and Sunless able to tell that the Stewing Sword, which Shi Xiaobai theorized to be a mysterious sword technique that countered the Kun Peng Sword Technique, be part of the Kun Peng Sword Technique?

Before Shi Xiaobai could even ask, Heartless had already loudly said, “Why does your sword technique possess the unique sword intent of the Kun Peng Sword Technique?”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up when he heard this.

The sword intent of Kun Peng Sword Technique?

If that was the case, the Stewing Sword may be a sword technique that countered the Kun Sword, but it was also part of the Kun Peng Sword Technique!

Could it be that the entire Kun Peng Sword Technique was a sword technique that reinforced and countered each other?

The lower form was a Sword of Water, the middle form was the

Sword of Wind, and the upper form was the Sword of High Temperatures and the Sword of Fire!

High temperatures countered water!

Wind countered high temperatures!

Fire countered wind!

Water countered fire!

The four sword techniques restrained each other, turning into a cyclic system!

This was the true nature of the Kun Peng Sword Technique?

That's not right. High temperatures might not be the true essence of the Stewing Sword!

Shi Xiaobai was slightly astonished. He thought of another possibility. Since the Kun Sword Sunless used could only manifest the power of low temperatures, it was very likely that he had yet to grasp the quintessence of the Stewing Sword. Hence, all he could do was manifest the power of high temperatures!

Wind, water, fire were natural elements in Chinese culture. Then, to combine them into one, the Stewing Sword would slash out a sword beam that was the manifestation of a natural element!

What natural element could counter water waves, ice fronts, snowflakes, and even the Kun?

“Earth!”

Earth countered water, and also countered fish!

But it was not ordinary Earth, but burning grounds!

Burning grounds were what countered water and fish the most!

If that was the case, the true Kun Peng Sword Technique was—Earth, Wind, Water, Fire!

Earth countered Water.

Water countered Fire.

Fire countered Wind.

Wind countered Earth.

Four sword moves, reinforcing or countering each other!

No, it might not only be reinforcing or countering, there was

perhaps a way for the four sword moves to combine!

Earth, Wind, Water, Fire were regarded in Buddhism as the four elements that made matter, and were also called ‘Cycle’!

“This is the true mystery of the Kun Peng Sword Technique! Combining—Earth, Wind, Water, Fire—four as one!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes turned bright and hot as he could not help but feel a tinge of excitement in his heart.

Heartless frowned. He had been asking incessantly, but Tu Dahei remained silent. He appeared deadpan before suddenly looking excited.

Heartless could not help but wonder what Tu Dahei was getting high on.

If Heartless knew Shi Xiaobai had figured out the hidden ancient secret of the Kun Peng Sword Technique through the use of these two sword moves, he would probably be astounded.

What sort of different line of thought and ability to come up with such fanciful and reasonable thoughts did he have?

Shi Xiaobai naturally would not waste time explaining to Heartless his complex reasoning. He only had one thought on his mind!



This King has created a sword that combined ‘Earth, Wind, Fire, Water’!

Because of this, he needed to first grasp the quintessence of each of the four sword moves!

Sword of Fire, he had grasped its quintessence for no good reason.

Sword of Earth, he had yet to grasp its quintessence.

Sword of Wind, he had observed it from Sunless for a period of time, but had never used it before.

Sword of Water, he had only truly seen it a couple of times up to now.

“Let’s start by practicing the least familiar one!”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai looked at Heartless and loudly said, “Try taking on This King’s strike!”

Heartless felt Shi Xiaobai was filled with oddness. He was in a completely passive state after using Kun Peng Sword Technique that he prided himself with. After hearing Shi Xiaobai’s declaration of attack, Heartless immediately perked his focus.

“Come on!”

Heartless was waiting alert.

Shi Xiaobai prepared slightly before slashing forward!

This strike contained a tiny hint of sword intent he obtained from observing Sunless' swordplay.

It changes into Peng, winds arise at a flap of its wings!

“Pu!”

A fart-like sound resounded as Shi Xiaobai slashed out a sword beam that fell apart immediately, turning into a gentle breeze.

This breeze blew for a meter or two and was extremely weak. There was no need to talk about giving Heartless any trouble, it probably could not blow up the hair strands of a girl.

Shi Xiaobai had ended up in failure with his first use of the Peng Sword.

Shi Xiaobai's face turned slightly red as he coughed and said, “An accident, purely an accident!”

Heartless stared confounded as he cried out, “Middle form of the

Kun Peng? Why do you know the middle form of the Kun Peng?”

Although this strike had failed, Heartless was able to tell that this strike was the middle form of the Kun Peng. This was because Sunless had failed countless times in her practice of the middle form of the Kun Peng when she was young. Every failure produced such a weak breeze.

Heartless had seen it countless times, so he could tell that Shi Xiaobai was currently producing the middle form of the Kun Peng!

Heartless was feeling extremely perplexed. Why was Tu Dahei able to execute a Kun Peng Sword Technique, which countered his Kun Sword, that he had never seen before? Also, why was he able to use the middle form of the Kun Peng?

Suddenly, Heartless thought of a possibility as he shouted, “My sister taught you!?”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was taken aback. Sunless was not good with words, so she did not know how to express her thoughts. She could only let him observe using her swordplay. It was not considered teaching. But in all seriousness, this was probably a method of imparting swordsmanship?

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment before he nodded.

Heartless immediately gave a wry smile and said with a sigh, “I never believed the saying that girls have their thoughts outside the

family, but I have finally understood it. This Kun Peng Sword Technique is a secret technique of the Kun Peng Sword Sect that is not to be imparted. Yet, Little Sun has imparted it to you...”

If Heartless knew that Sunless had handed the Kun Peng Sword Manual directly to Shi Xiaobai, he would probably vomit blood on the spot.

Shi Xiaobai did not plan on explaining. All he had on his mind was the Kun Peng Sword Technique. Seeing Heartless looking depressed, he took a few steps back and began brandishing his sword around in the corner.

“Pu... Pu... Pu... Pu...”

Shi Xiaobai constantly slashed out Peng Sword, but suffered repeated failures. It was apparently not that simple to grasp its quintessence.

Seeing Shi Xiaobai ignore him while practicing his swordplay in the corner, Heartless immediately felt bitter.

Hey, aren't we supposed to be battling now?

Heartless recalled the entire process of this duel and immediately found it absurd.

In the first half of the duel, he had been tortured by the black sword, resulting in constant defeat. Tu Dahei's proficiency of his

left hand also gradually increased.

In the middle of the duel, he had held back to fight with Tu Dahei for three hundred rounds in order to return the favor. As such, Tu Dahei completely grasped the use of his left hand.

In the second half of the duel, he used the lower form of the Kun Peng, but was countered by Tu Dahei's mysterious sword technique. He was immediately at a disadvantage. Then Tu Dahei began ignoring him and practiced the middle form of the Kun Peng himself.

What did this mean?

This duel was him clearly being a sparring partner. Tu Dahei was not satisfied just training his left hand in the way of the sword, this was the precursor of him continuing to practice the middle form of the Kun Peng!

Holy shit, I'm a super rookie, a sword prodigy that defended the title of champion at the National Secondary School Swordplay Tournament for three consecutive years. And now, I'm a free sparring partner?

Heartless even felt like dying!

Seeing Shi Xiaobai's back facing him as he slashed out the middle form of the Kun Peng again and again at a corner, but failing time and time again. He did not feel it was right to sneak up on him, nor

did he bear to interrupt him. However, he finally could not help but taunt, “Stop trying. The middle form of the Kun Peng is not a sword technique that can be mastered by brandishing the sword a hundred or two hundred times. Even my sis took three years to barely succeed!”

Just as Heartless finished saying his sentence, Shi Xiaobai slashed out another time. This time, the sword wind did not instantly dissipate like before. It howled towards a wall!

When the sword wind crashed into the wall, it issued a harsh sound. Densely packed sword streaks were left instantly on the wall!

“Su...ceeded!?”

Heartless gaped. He did not dare to believe the scene in front of him.

Tu Dahei had managed to use the middle form of the Kun Peng!

Although the strike was extremely immature, it was the middle form of the Kun Peng that had properly manifested. Heartless remembered that his sister had failed for three years. During those three years, she had practiced slashing thousands, if not millions of times before finally being able to slash out a strike Tu Dahei had managed.

His sister was labeled as a rare sword fanatic, but now, what sort

of monster was Tu Dahei?

After Shi Xiaobai managed to produce the strike, he was pleasantly surprised. He had yet to comprehend the Sword of Earth, but he never expected to grasp the quintessence of the Sword of Wind so quickly.

From the looks of it, he had an affinity with Wind and Fire?

What was his affinity with Water?

How long would he take to learn the Sword of Water?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes glowed as he turned towards Heartless. With a strong desire in his tone, he said, "Come on, quickly use your Kun Peng Sword Technique. This King is unable to endure the thirst!"

Heartless fell silent. He could clearly tell from Shi Xiaobai's expression three words—"want to learn!"

In the short span of an hour, Tu Dahei had used him as a sparring partner, grasping the ability to use his left hand and learned the middle form of the Kun Peng. Now, he even fucking wanted to steal from him the learnings of the lower form of the Kun Peng?

Heavens, how can you be this shameless!?

Heartless could not tolerate it further as he said angrily, "Tu

Dahei, I want to battle you!”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised as he said out of curiosity,  
“Aren’t we battling?”

Heartless went silent for a moment before he involuntarily cried  
towards the heavens!

So you fucking know we are battling!

Heavens, quickly take this bastard back!

...



# Chapter 286: Failure Is The Mother Of Success

---

This was a duel, a duel that determined who could go further in the mass selection. It proved who was stronger. It was even an important duel that determined the honor of an organization!

This duel was supposed to be abnormally fiery, with both sides pushing hard at it, fighting a desperate battle, constantly exceeding their limits and surpassing each other. A battle of the century in which no one would be willing to lag behind. Finally it would end with a narrow margin that would be regretful.

But, why did this scene imperceptibly change?

Why did the duel transform into the present state?

Why?

Heartless sighed as his eyes gradually turned icy-cold.

“Tu Dahei, I will no longer hesitate or show any mercy. This is a duel. Sword is our only form of exchange. Using your full strength is the best form of respect.”

Heartless raised his psionic sword and his face was without expression. His gaze was keen, as surging sword intent churned around him. He had a dominating aura as he said coldly, “Sword

techniques are split into five levels. Sword Technique, Sword Intent, Sword Truth, Sword Soul, and Sword Domain. Typical swordsmen would only be able to use sword techniques that are empty in nature. After practicing swords for several years, they would acquire Sword Intent through a honing process. But extremely few swordsmen are able to create their own Sword Truth. As for Sword Soul and Sword Domain, those are things only the top swordsmen in the world are able to comprehend.”

“Tu Dahei, your sword already possesses sword intent, but that is all to it. Compared to an expert with Sword Truth, you are still a great distance away. I have practiced swords for more than ten years. At the age of fourteen, I gained insight into the Sword Truth, and this Sword Truth of mine is known as [Heartless]”.

“So I regret to tell you that you will be defeated by Sword Truth, [Heartless]!”

After Heartless said this, his eyes turned cold, as though he had abandoned all his emotions.

Shi Xiaobai slowly wiped away the overwhelming excitement filled him when fully immersing himself in the study of the Kun Peng Sword Technique. He could sense the cold aura exuded by Heartless. It was as though he was an ice sculpture which had frozen all his emotions, thoughts, and ‘burdens’.

Heartless had ‘activated’ his Sword Truth, [Heartless], making him enter a realm of emotional voidness.

Sword Truth seemed like a vague term, but in fact, its existence was very real, real and powerful.

Shi Xiaobai had previously understood Sword Truth from Sunless. Her Sword Truth was [Fanaticism], with swords being the only thing in her head. She only had eyes for the sword, and even her heart was for the sword!

Sunless was a sword fanatic. She was constantly having her Sword Truth [Fanaticism] 'activated'. She did not 'deactivate' it when she was sparring with Shi Xiaobai in their subconsciousness. Sunless' Sword Truth had already become 'one with the sword' with her body itself.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai had suffered an abject defeat in the consciousness sparring. At the beginning, he only knew sword techniques and lacked sword intent. Hence, he could not even last a strike. Gradually he gained insight into sword intent, allowing him to use Beginner Sword to enter a deadlock with Sunless for more than ten rounds.

The power of Sword Truth was obvious.

The reason why Heartless was considered to be the second best sword prodigy among rookies was because he had managed to create his Sword Truth at the age of fourteen. The possession of a Sword Truth was the benchmark criteria if a swordsman was excellent or not. For example, whether one possessed Sword Truth, or if the Sword Truth was strong, or if the Sword Truth could allow the person to become one with the sword, etc.

“Come on, let This King experience your Sword Truth!”

The fighting spirit in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes ignited again!

Heartless had a deadpan expression as he silently walked towards Shi Xiaobai with sword raised. The stance he had was a heaven and earth difference from before.

Shi Xiaobai put aside all the distractions in his heart. Sword techniques were never his most powerful skill. It was even the combat skill that he had only just begun practicing. However, he would only use a sword for this battle.

Just as Heartless said, swords were their only way of communication!

Heartless closed the gap and suddenly slashed over!

This strike was simple. It was not even in the form of a sword technique, it was just a simple slash!

But this strike was as domineering as fire and as fast as lightning!

Instead of retreating, Shi Xiaobai advanced and slashed out in a similar manner!

“Boom!”

This was a clash of swords, the explosive skirmish of sword beams. It was a competition between sword intents!

There was no victor from this clash, but Shi Xiaobai was completely at the disadvantage.

Heartless slashed out once again!

No, it was not a single strike this time. In this strike that appeared like a single strike, it contained three sword intents!

Shi Xiaobai managed to parry the first two sword intents, but was no match for the third sword intent. He had no choice but to retreat!

Heartless' attacks would not take a break because of Shi Xiaobai's retreat. He slashed out with a stronger strike!

Heartless did not use the Homecoming Sword or the Heaven Shrouding Eclipse, nor did he use the lower form of the Kun Peng. He just simply slashed forward, but such simple strikes seemed to contain the shadows of the three sword techniques.

This was the concentration of Heartless' sword techniques!

His Sword Truth, [Heartless], froze all his emotions. Hence, his every strike did not give him excitement, fear, nervousness or

softheartedness or other emotions that would affect him. His every strike was simple and direct, directed straight at vital body parts!

Shi Xiaobai faced with with the sword, but the battle became more and more taxing on him. He could only retreat again and again.

Finally at the thirteenth round, Shi Xiaobai's psionic sword was shattered. He retreated in time, but a gash had appeared across his clothes. It had nearly slashed out a gaping bloody wound.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not feel fear during this period of time. Nor did he have time to feel frustrated or disheartened from every failure in each clash. This was because Heartless' next strike was already slashing at his throat!

“Clang!”

Heartless' sword was blocked!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes were shining like the hot sun. Boiling fighting spirit seemed to burn everything!

Having fear in the heart?

Feeling disheartened because of defeat?

Shi Xiaobai would not experience such emotions. At the instant

his psionic sword was shattered, other than dodging the fatal strike, he had immediately constructed a brand new psionic sword!

He would not waste time to regret failure.

He only had one thought on his mind.

Give This King such failure another ten thousand times!

...

...

In front of a crumbling wall, there was a young boy about six years old, holding a small knife carved from wood. He was constantly stabbing at the wall.

On closer look, there was a very tiny hole in the wall. And the boy's thrust of the short knife was aimed at that tiny hole in the wall.

However, the hole was just too small, and was just slightly larger than the knife's blade tip. It had to be precisely aligned in order to thrust the knife into the hole. However, the boy's stabbing actions appeared to be deliberately magnified. Every thrust needed him to throw out half his body. This prevented him from being able to precisely stab the hole.

The boy's knife would stab around the surroundings of the hole, but every strike was stabbed at an extremely fast speed and with great strength. This caused his hand to go numb from the recoil after each thrust.

The boy frowned and, with a tear stricken face, he repeated the thrusting at the hole.

Ten times, a hundred times, a few hundred times, more than a thousand times...

From noon to dusk, he had only managed to thrust the knife into the hole fewer than ten times.

The autumn's dusk was dark and cold. As the air seemed to turn into frost, the boy's hand turned slightly red from the cold, but he did not stop.

"Xiaobai, it's time to eat."

A gentle voice was heard as footsteps approached from the other side of the wall.

The boy's eyes lit up and he immediately stopped. He jogged towards the other side of the wall and saw a black-haired teenager walking towards him slowly.

"Brother!"



The boy exhaled lightly before running towards the black-haired teenager's side.

The black-haired teenager crouched down and stroked the boy's head. He held the boy's tiny right fist.

“Si...”

The boy let out a tiny cry of pain.

The black-haired teenager lowered his head and saw the boy's white palm already red, to the point of it turning purple. The black-haired teenager's heart ached for him as he said with a sigh, “Man, don't you know how to skive? I purposely brought Dad away so that you could rest, but you...Sigh. Why don't you stop practicing the Pig Slaughtering Knife?”

“No!”

The boy rounded his eyes with a stare as he said while shaking his head, “Dad said that if the pig slaughtering knife is not stabbed in accurately, the big white pig will feel a lot of pain, much more painful than me. So, I need to diligently practice so that I can stab it accurately! Brother, leave me alone. It's not that painful. I'm no longer a three or four-year-old. There's no need for Brother to be worried!”

The black-haired teenager gave a wry smile as he stroked the boy

on the head and said, “Yes, yes, yes. You are five this year, so you must pay attention to your safety and health, got it? Dad might look very strict, but he is actually secretly feeling the pain in his heart. As for you, there’s plenty of time left. You can slowly practice the Pig Slaughtering Knife!”

When the boy heard this, he fell into a moment of thought. Suddenly he shook his head resolutely and pursed his lips to say, “No! I’m too stupid. I can’t stab that tiny hole. Dad said that without diligence, I’m hopeless with my stupidity. Furthermore, Brother previously said that, failure is the mother of success. The more you fail, the earlier Baby Success will be born.”

The black-haired teenager gaped and was at a loss as to what to say. He had said so in the past to console the young boy who had suffered numerous failures. He never expected the boy to take his words to heart, to the point of using it to encourage himself.

Was such a matter good or bad?

The black-haired teenager could only say, “Let’s go. It’s time to return for our meal.”

The boy’s eyes immediately lit up as he nodded his head vigorously. He was very, very hungry at that moment.

The black-haired teenager walked to the other side and held the boy’s left hand, as the two headed home.

“I like Mother Failure!”

As the boy walked, he suddenly looked up and asked, “Oh right, Brother, when is Mother coming back? I still haven’t seen her!”

The black-haired teenager’s footsteps came to a halt as he turned his head gently to the side. As though he was hiding something, he said softly, “Mother? She went to a very, very far place. I don’t know when she will be back as well. However, she is always very concerned with Xiaobai. She must definitely wish to see Xiaobai.”

The boy gave an “Orh” and did not speak further.

The evening glow cast long shadows of the two. The shadows of the hands were bound together, as though they would never separate.

...

...

“Failure is the mother of success.”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai constructed another psionic sword.

In a short span of ten minutes, his psionic sword had shattered more than twenty times. His clothes were riddled with holes and

there were bloody wounds on his body.

When it came to sword techniques, Shi Xiaobai truly was unable to compare to Heartless, who had activated his Heartless Sword Truth. Without any suspense, he was defeated and retreated in a sorry state. The amount of psionic power and stamina he had was greatly drained. If not for 'Unleaking Turtle Aura', which forcefully allowed him to persist on, he would have long suffered true defeat from his exhaustion.

However, Shi Xiaobai was still persisting on. Despite having lost in the sparring of sword techniques for more than twenty times, the battle had yet to end.

Heartless did not show any mercy, nor did he hesitate. After Shi Xiaobai retreated, he would draw close once again. It was as though he would only end after obtaining true victory.

“The next strike shall end this duel.”

Suddenly, Heartless, who had been silent for a long while, spoke. His voice was calm and cold, as though he was an emotionless machine stating an objective fact. His auric pressure increased once again.

“This King thinks so too.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded in approval and said, “For with the next strike, you will be defeated by This King’s Sword Truth!”

...

## Chapter 287: Excalibur

---

“For the next strike, you will be defeated by This King’s Sword Truth!”

The moment Shi Xiaobai said this, points of near-transparent golden dots of light floated up from the ground as they rapidly surged towards Shi Xiaobai.

The golden points of light gathered and merged into Shi Xiaobai’s body. A translucent golden light enveloped Shi Xiaobai in a membrane.

Two golden vortices appeared in his black eyes.

“This King’s Sword Truth—Excalibur!”

There was a sudden hint of divinity in Shi Xiaobai’s voice.

Shi Xiaobai had been defeated by Sunless six hundred and fifty-three times in their consciousness sparring. He went from only knowing sword techniques to grasping sword intent. He was also extremely close to creating a Sword Truth that was unique to him.

And at this moment, against Heartless, who had activated his Sword Truth, [Heartless], he had suffered one defeat after another, to the point of being powerless to resist. But through this, Shi Xiaobai completed another metamorphosis.

Growing from failures, that was Shi Xiaobai!

He had created a Sword Truth that belonged to himself!

This Sword Truth was born out of failure, so Shi Xiaobai wanted to call it Success, but he suddenly thought of a sword technique which the loli sword spirit had previously mentioned to him. It was a sword technique that left a deep impression on him—Excalibur<sup>1</sup>!

Hence, the thought of naming his Sword Truth [Excalibur] could not be stopped.

Victory born out of countless defeats. Wasn't that exactly the most persistent and resolute victory?

For victory, he was willing to steadfastly progress forward despite thousands of failures. This was...Excalibur!

This was a symbol of Shi Xiaobai's divine kingship, and it was also Shi Xiaobai's Sword Truth!

Near-transparent golden light enveloped Shi Xiaobai. His aura soared to its maximum as he 'activated' his Sword Truth!

Heartless was deadpan. He had frozen all his emotions. Even though the scene in front of him was horrifying and thrilling, he would remain indifferent!

However, his aura was similarly soaring. This was because he wanted to end the duel with the next strike!

Black gasses emitted from the ground as they circled Heartless' psionic sword.

Heartless raised his sword high as black mist shrouded it. Slowly, a gigantic black sword projection appeared.

“Heaven Shrouding!”

Heartless yelled as he held his sword with both hands. From more than ten meters away, he slashed at Shi Xiaobai!

“Eclipse!”

A humongous black sword projection fell from the sky as it shrouded the heavens. The sword projected was like a gigantic black mountain as it crashed down at Shi Xiaobai!

This black sword projection nearly covered every inch of the arena. Surging sword intent emanated from the sword projection as countless sword beams stirred, as though it was tearing apart space itself!

Shi Xiaobai could not avoid it!



But he would not avoid it as well!

With sword in his left hand, the golden points of light around Shi Xiaobai's body surged towards the psionic sword. The white psionic sword emitted a dazzling golden light, as though it was a treasured sword made out of gold.

All the psionic power in Shi Xiaobai's body spewed out at the instant. It was constantly being gathered, compressed and converged to a single point. The golden psionic sword's sword tip immediately burst out a light more glaring than sunlight!

Why was it Excalibur?

By using all his strength, exhausting his everything, concentrating his commitment to victory, he would slash out the final strike with absolutely no regrets!

This was the Excalibur Shi Xiaobai understood. He may have not seen this strike before, but he could create it himself!

He recalled the moment when the blond woman with coiled hair produced that strike that made him possess the thought of "This King wants to learn swords". He then used the line of thought with how Turtle-speed Divine Punch constantly compressed psionic power, and the inspiration from compressing all his strength through the use of One Second Shura. By combining three factors together, he created a sword technique that belonged to him alone!

This strike was Shi Xiaobai's full strength. It was meant for victory, leaving no room for escape!

This was the finale strike!

This strike was Excalibur!

More and more golden points of light gathered towards the sword's body as psionic power that was continuously compressed made the sword's edge appear even more dazzling!

Suddenly, a gigantic golden sword projection rose to the sky!

At the same time, the black sword projection of Heaven Shrouding Eclipse that Heartless had slashed out came crashing down like a mountain.

The golden sword projection went past the black sword projection, as though sunlight tearing through the haze!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes grew brighter as though they were shimmering stars!

“Excalibur!”

Shi Xiaobai roared as he slashed out!

The gigantic golden sword projection slashed vertically, splitting the black sword projection into two!

“Boom!”

The golden sword projection exploded as though a star had gone supernova. The golden light burst out, filling the world. The fragments of the black sword projection were instantly engulfed!

The golden light enveloped everything, as though gold was the only color in the entire world.

Shi Xiaobai's psionic sword shattered and the glow from his body dimmed. His mind went blurry as his feet went limp. He nearly fell backwards. Through the expedient use of Unleaking Turtle Aura, he prevented himself from fainting.

He had created his own Sword Truth, and from the foundation of his Sword Truth, created a sword technique that belonged to him!

This strike was named Excalibur by him!

Although this strike did not possess the terrifying power that came from using 'One Second Shura', Shi Xiaobai had used all his mental efforts in an instant to create such a strike.

This strike could only be used once in a short period of time. There was no turning back. It was truly the finale strike!

The dazzling golden light filled the world for a few moments before it slowly dissipated. And Heartless, who had been enveloped by the golden light was slowly revealed.

At this moment, Heartless was already lying on the ground. His clothes were torn and the upper half of his body was naked. His eyes were closed, but he was still breathing slightly. It appeared as though he had fainted.

An authoritative voice immediately resounded above the arena.

“The duel is over with Shi Xiaobai emerging victorious. The victor will be sent to the fifth level in ten seconds and the loser will be sent out of the training ground!”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai revealed a smile. He struggled to take a few steps towards the black and white swords.

The two swords simultaneously issued crisp sword hums.

When Shi Xiaobai neared the two swords, he frowned and discovered a problem.

His right hand had been sealed by the Absolute Choice's punishment. He temporarily could not use his superpower in his right hand, preventing him from transforming the two swords into energy to store them.

At this moment, he could only use his left hand, so how could he hold two swords in one hand?

It was tiresome just thinking of it!

“Both of you, fuse together!”

Shi Xiaobai stared at the black and white swords as he said in an incontestable manner.

...

...

Half a minute later, Shi Xiaobai had arrived in the fifth level. His mind gradually turned lucid as he surveyed his surroundings. He discovered himself in a sparse forest. The ground beneath him was slightly muddy and there were the faint sounds of bird chirping.

Shi Xiaobai was holding a sword in his left hand. It did not look any different in terms of appearance compared to a normal sword, but there was something extremely odd about this sword. This was because the sword was constantly changing its color.

One moment, it would be pure white, and the next moment, it would be pure black. At times, it would be a mix of black and white, as though the black and white colors were scrambling to be the sword's only color.

This sword was of course the...fusion of Holy Radiance and the black sword!

When Shi Xiaobai said in an incontestable manner, “Both of you fuse together!”, the two swords had really fused together. However, after their fusion, they entered a competition for the color of the sword’s surface. Clearly, the two swords were very reluctant about the fusion.

Shi Xiaobai was very pleased with the two ‘sensible’ swords.

Shi Xiaobai stood there for a moment waiting and soon the authoritative voice boomed in his head.

As usual, the rules of the level’s trial would be announced upon stepping into each level.

“Welcome to the Nine Revolutions Transcendental World’s fifth level, Land of Life and Death!”

“In Land of Life and Death, on every trial-taker’s shoulder will appear a Life Epaulette. If the Life Epaulette is shattered, the trial-taker will be transported out of the tower!”

“Every ten minutes, there will be one trial-taker whose Life Epaulette will transform into the Death Epaulette. The assessment program will inform all trial-takers in the Land of Life and Death the identity of the trial-taker with the Death Epaulette, as well as

the information of the trial-taker's location for up to ten seconds.”

“Once trial-takers with the Life Epaulette succeed at destroying the Death Epaulette, it will be considered as a successful clear of the level and the trial-taker will be sent to the sixth level. Every Death Epaulette can only have one destroyer. Simultaneous destruction will be considered and void.”

“If the trial-taker wearing the Death Epaulette is able to prevent the Death Epaulette from shattering for ten minutes, the trial-taker will be considered as having cleared the level and the trial-taker will be sent to the sixth level.”

“The fifth level's Level Lord, [Death Aristocrat], has been awakened. It will descend in eight hours. Please make haste!”

“Gentle reminder, do not easily trust anyone. Wishing you the best of luck!”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he could not help but glance at his shoulder. And indeed, an epaulette had appeared on his shoulder.

It was a silver epaulette the size of a coin that had no patterns.

This epaulette was the Life Epaulette. He would be eliminated if it was shattered.

This level's ruleset...was probably one of the most cruel ones out of the five levels so far.

Only one person could clear the level every ten minutes. The trial-taker who had his epaulette changed to a Death Epaulette was equivalent to a fugitive on the run. The trial-taker had to 'survive' for ten minutes in order to clear the level. The remaining hundred or two hundred trial-takers would be equivalent to pursuers. They would definitely gather to kill the Death Epaulette trial-taker in order to clear the level.

The assessment program would even provide the pursuers identity of the fugitive, as well as ten seconds of the fugitive's location.

In this trial, the fugitive would find it difficult to survive, while the pursuers needed to compete with another hundred or two hundred people, only for one person to clear the level. If the Death Epaulette was simultaneously shattered, it would be void. Therefore, even a 0.01 second advantage was something to strive for.

The cruel competitiveness of this level's trial was obvious.

After Shi Xiaobai considered the rules, he lay down on the ground for a moment. Although the side effects were not as exaggerated as using 'One Second Shura' after he slashed his self-made Excalibur strike, his psionic power was somewhat drained. He needed to recover for a moment.

Shi Xiaobai rested for several minutes.



Suddenly, the authoritative voice resounded in the sky, throughout the world.

“The thirty-first round shall begin immediately. Death Epaulette wearer has been randomly chosen. The wearer’s name is Ye Sheng.”

When the voice faded away, an image immediately appeared in Shi Xiaobai’s mind. There was a freckled youth fleeing in panic amid the mountains.

At the same time, a gigantic map appeared in his mind. There were only two points on the map. One point was motionless, while the other was moving extremely fast.

Shi Xiaobai immediately understood. The immobile point was him, while the rapidly moving point was the freckled youth who had become the fugitive.

The assessment program had indeed provided the identity and location of the fugitive.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but stare with widened eyes.

This was because he discovered a fascinating thing.

The freckled youth was nearing him, and running straight towards his position.

Holy shit, was this some welfare that was given to him?

Should This King just sit here and wait, or to sit here and wait?

...

## Chapter 288: How Do You Wish To Die?

---

The two images in his head only lasted for ten seconds, but Shi Xiaobai had confirmed that the Ye Sheng, who had been chosen as the fugitive, was heading towards him. According to his speed, he would arrive in about a minute.

Shi Xiaobai immediately jumped up to a tree and looked towards the direction where Ye Sheng was.

Where he was situated was probably in a mountain. However, the vegetation was sparse and the trees were not thickset. Hence, a single glance made the area abnormally expansive.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings. He immediately noticed figures appearing along the horizon. The nearby trial-takers were rushing here in an attempt to intercept Ye Sheng.

A few seconds later, a freckled youth was running in panic at the ends of the horizon. There were seven or eight trial-takers behind him in pursuit. From time to time, someone would shoot a psionic arrow at Ye Sheng, who could only dodge in a sorry state while running desperately.

On a careful look, he noticed that there was a white crystal covering Ye Sheng's shoulder. Clearly, he had used psionic power to protect the Death Epaulette.

Ye Sheng was blindly running and did not know that people were weltering towards him from all directions. They had completely

surrounded him. Regardless of the direction in which he went, he would eventually meet pursuers.

How difficult was it to last ten minutes against a hundred or two hundred trial-takers' combined efforts?

Of course, it was not easy to snatch the outcome of shattering the Death Epaulette out of a hundred or two hundred people.

Shi Xiaobai did not wait. This was a bonus that came to his doorstep. He obviously would not give it away.

Shi Xiaobai leaped down from the tree and used Crab Steps and headed towards Ye Sheng at a blistering speed.

The ground beneath his feet was soft. Every step left a deep depression into the ground. There were noisy sounds sounding off from everywhere in the sparse forest. The sounds of the pursuers' footsteps were closing in.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up slightly. In front of him, he could see Ye Sheng!

Ye Sheng clearly saw Shi Xiaobai approaching him as well. Immediately, he screamed as though he had seen a ghost.

“Tu Dahei!”

Ye Sheng's face paled. He hurriedly did a reversal by changing his direction to the right. He apparently knew that it was impossible for him to escape Tu Dahei in a head on clash!

“Don't you go running!”

Shi Xiaobai laughed loudly. With an extremely fast speed, he chased after him and instantly, the gap between them shrank.

Ye Sheng turned his head and his eyes were filled with horror.

Fuck, how exaggerated was this speed?

In just a few seconds, the distance between Shi Xiaobai and Ye Sheng was less than five meters. He would be caught at the very next moment. Shi Xiaobai had already reached out his left arm. The sword that was switching black and white colors seemed extremely strange in his left hand, but Ye Sheng knew without a doubt that the sword could instantly cut his arm off.

In this pursuit, although the Life Epaulette represented 'life', the Life Epaulette was just the size of a coin. Furthermore, it was adhered tightly attached to the shoulder. In the bid to grab an opportunity, few trial-takers would show any mercy.

Ye Sheng had witnessed several fugitives guarding the epaulettes with their lives. Their shoulders ended being cleaved, penetrated, exploded and various tragic outcomes.

In this “Life and Death” Assault, it did not seem like life would be a problem on the surface, but reality was frequently cruel.

“Peng!”

At this moment, the sound of a gunshot was heard from a distance!

Shi Xiaobai’s eyebrows twitched as he slashed out with his sword five meters away from Ye Sheng!

A transparent sword beam shot straight at Ye Sheng’s shoulder!

“Ah!”

Ye Sheng screamed as he crouched down to the ground in fright. But all he saw was a bullet that had been split into half dropping on his shoulder.

The bullet emitted boiling hot gasses with the smell of gunpowder.

At the next moment, gunshots, that resembled the sound of a rainstorm pattering the ground, were heard.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

The terrifying sounds of the gunshots did not resemble the constant shots from a machine gun. Instead, it was as though hundreds, if not thousands of guns had shot at the same moment in succession.

Ye Sheng hurriedly turned his head over and nearly peed his pants. He saw bullets that filled the sky pouring down on him at an extremely fast speed!

The bullets were like dark clouds that shrouded the sky. The speed was so fast that the naked eye could not discern them. Ye Sheng could not react in time as his eyes glazed over. A look of despair suffused his eyes.

Suddenly, a figure appeared in front of him almost instantaneously.

A black and white sword slashed out at the bullets that filled the sky!

As the sword fell, a strong wind howled!

“Keng! Keng! Keng! ...”

The violent sword wind scattered the dense rain of bullets. Each bullet was shattered as it fell down.

“Peng! Peng! Peng! ...”

The rain of bullets that was blown into two pelted down on the soft ground, riddling it with holes. The ground immediately appeared to fill with crevices.

Ye Sheng's body had curled up. He looked at the figure that had suddenly appeared to sweep the rain of bullets away. A look of disbelief appeared in his blank expression.

It was Tu Dahei!

Tu Dahei had saved him!

At this moment, seven other rookies that were chasing him came surrounding him. There were also figures that began appearing at the end of one's vision!

Ye Sheng finally realized that he had been surrounded!

He was surrounded by pursuers. Furthermore, the rain of bullets might fall once again. He was in a hopeless situation.

Ye Sheng recalled the terrible states of the last few pursuers. His lips turned pale as they shivered.

“To last ten minutes? That's impossible...”

As Ye Sheng ruminated, a look of resoluteness flashed in his eyes.



He suddenly looked up and shouted, “All you bunch of madmen. You want to shatter my epaulette? Dream on! I’ll rather be eliminated than to give it to you!”

Ye Sheng seemed to be in a frenzy and his voice sounded hysteric.

When the rookies surrounding him heard this, they realized something and shouted, “No!”

However, no one could prevent Ye Sheng, who had been scared out of his wits. He yelled with his throat hoarsened, “Open Sesame!”

The two words were the exit command!

Shi Xiaobai turned his head in astonishment as he saw Ye Sheng transform into a golden beam of light that shot towards the sky. He had vanished from the trials.

At the same time, the authoritative voice resounded through the entire world:

“The fugitive has exited the trials. This round’s Life and Death Assault is and void. The next Life and Death Assault will begin in seven minutes.”

The rookies that came in pursuit stopped and looked at each other. They began grumbling.

“Sigh, another coward that used the exit command!”

“This won’t do. If every fugitive were to use the exit command at their last struggling moment, how are we to clear the level before the Level Lord descends?”

“We can only do it by surprise. We have to sneak up on the fugitives before they can even react and destroy their Death Epaulettes. However, that is very difficult as well.”

“The main reason is because the previous fugitives ended up in a terrible state. All of them were stubbornly persisting to the point of suffering grievous injuries. One of them even died a terrible death. So now when the fugitive is surrounded, the fugitive would hurriedly exit the trials. We would do the same if we were in their shoes. The scene was just too bloody and gross. If you aren’t careful, your shoulder might disappear as well. In short, it is very difficult for a pursuer to clear the level.”

“Sigh, it’s difficult for a pursuer to clear, but it’s even more difficult for a fugitive. With so many people chasing after the fugitive, it’s just too difficult to last ten minutes!”

“...”

The rookies that came in pursuit discussed as they left separately. They were waiting for the next round to begin in seven minutes.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a moment. Suddenly he turned towards where the rain of bullets came.

Clearly, he had missed a chance of clearing the level by a sliver.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not regret it. He could have indeed chosen to shatter the Death Epauvette on Ye Sheng's shoulder, but Ye Sheng would very likely be riddled in holes by the rain of bullets.

Shi Xiaobai obviously would not choose to do such a despicable act that was oblivious of life in order to clear the level. Therefore, he had rushed in front of Ye Sheng immediately, using the Sword of Wind from the Kun Peng Sword Technique against the rain of bullets.

However, Shi Xiaobai was furious. The bastard who had shot the rain of bullets had shown complete disregard for Ye Sheng's life. Such a ruthless act infuriated Shi Xiaobai. And the crux of the matter was, that the thing that was in the bag flew away just like that. How could Shi Xiaobai tolerate this!?

Shi Xiaobai was extremely fast as he quickly traversed through the forest. Soon, a figure entered his vision.

He was a lanky short-haired teenager, wearing black clothes, but his eyes were cold. Both of his hands were in his pockets, but his expression looked somewhat incensed.

Shi Xiaobai stopped and frowned slightly. “It’s you?”

Shi Xiaobai’s nose twitched and smelt the a faint and dissipating smell of gunpowder. Immediately staring at the short-haired teenager, he coldly said, “It’s you!”

Shi Xiaobai never expected that the bastard who had ruined his plan dared to stand at his original spot.

The short-haired teenager squinted his eyes slightly. His slender single eyelids narrowed into a slit, while his expression looked somewhat cold. With a cold tone, he said, “How do you want to die?”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai immediately laughed.

Yo, this bastard is rather overbearing!

Shi Xiaobai slowly raised his black and white sword. Although he had just used Excalibur a short while ago, the little amount of psionic power he had regained was enough to beat the shit out of the bastard in front of him.

Shi Xiaobai was seldom angered, but the bastard in front of him had truly angered him.

At this moment, circular rings of yellow light began to light up as guns of all sorts—shapes and sizes—appeared out of the circular rings of light.

Densely packed guns filled the sky as they distributed all around Shi Xiaobai. Even the sky above his head was filled with guns.

“How do you want to die?”

The short-haired teenager's hands were still in his pockets as he leered at him. He looked insufferably arrogant.

It was the same sentence, but the extent of its terror was completely different. The first sentence of ‘How do you want to die’ was like a threatening scare, but when the densely packed guns appeared out of thin air, this sentence sounded like the declaration of a death sentence.

If it were any ordinary person facing all these guns, they would probably pee themselves and hurriedly shout the exit command.

However, the person the short-haired teenager was currently talking to and had all the gun barrels pointed at was Shi Xiaobai. He was Shi Xiaobai, who remained intrepid even when facing the legion of skeletons soldiers, the bat riders that shrouded the sky, and the demonic army that filled Demon City.

“This King loves to teach a lesson to foolish mortals who think that they are better than others.”

Shi Xiaobai said coldly as he took a step forward.

At this moment, the triggers of all the guns that filled the sky were automatically squeezed!

...

## Chapter 289: You Really Can't Blow Well

---

When Shi Xiaobai took a step forward, the multitude of guns had their triggers squeezed simultaneously. Bullets began to envelop Shi Xiaobai like smoke.

The bullets came from every direction without leaving even a tiny gap.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly revolved his body with sword in hand!

“Bladestorm!”

A sword beam that spiraled 360° was slashed out. Each beam contained violent sword winds, blowing away all the densely approaching bullets. The bullets were shattered and dispersed. The multitude of guns were also struck by Bladestorm that disintegrated them.

A look of surprise flashed in the short-haired teenager's eyes. However, his expression remained cold and calm.

Yellow rings of light lit up once again as guns emerged from it. This time, there were even more guns. The moment the guns appeared, their triggers were immediately pulled automatically.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not take it head on. A move like Bladestorm expended a great deal of psionic power. With the remaining reserves of psionic power he had left, he could no longer

use it several times.

As a result, Shi Xiaobai had used Crab Steps to charge towards the short-haired teenager after slashing out Bladestorm. He used a Sword of Wind to take down the guns in front of him and burst through the gap.

Shi Xiaobai's speed was so fast that he instantly was beyond the encirclement of the guns.

However, the short-haired teenager reacted quickly. He retreated at the instant Shi Xiaobai charged towards him. His hands were still in his pockets, and as though he was cycling, he retreated back at quite a respectable speed.

As the short-haired teenager retreated, yellow rings of light constantly lit up. Bullets sprayed out and shot straight at the pursuing Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai could only dodge left and right or forcefully clash head on with Sword of Wind due to the interference of the bullets. He failed to catch up to the rapidly retreating short-haired teenager as a result of his lacking psionic power.

The short-haired teenager looked extremely calm. If it were anyone else, just seeing Shi Xiaobai's unreasonable Bladestorm and jaw-dropping Crab Steps would be startled, much less being able to maintain their calm. However, the short-haired teenager appeared calm from the very beginning. It was as though he was constantly leering.



However, Shi Xiaobai's adaptability was extremely exaggerated. He very quickly found the pursuit method that could be done faster. The gap between the two was constantly shrinking.

The short-haired teenager's eyes flashed a cold beam as he suddenly pulled the right hand out of his pocket.

It was a pale and bloodless hand. When this hand stretched out towards Shi Xiaobai, a golden beam of light bloomed out of his fingertips as a suave-looking black pistol appeared in his right hand.

“Die!”

The short-haired teenager spat out the word from his lips as he pointed the barrel in front of him. Without any careful aiming, he squeezed the trigger!

There was no sound of the gunshot, but a blackish-gold bullet shot straight at Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai immediately sensed a grave danger. Without any hesitation, he twisted his body and ran sideways.

“Boom!”

A deafening explosion boomed. At the instant the blackish-gold

bullet shot out, a large number of blackish-gold bullets split off and fanned out. It carpeted an area thousands of square meters. The bullets exploded like missiles in an incessant manner, blowing up the ground into shambles.

After the short-haired teenager shot the blackish-gold bullet, he left without turning back. It was as though he did not care about the outcome of the shot.

On the boundary of the explosive zone, Shi Xiaobai caught his breath. This shot was truly somewhat dangerous. If he was in his optimal state, Shi Xiaobai would have made a breakthrough by clashing with the blackish-gold bullet. However, he had forcefully used the endurance 'Unleaking Turtle Aura' gave him to barely catch up to the short-haired teenager. He could only choose to dodge when he sensed that the blackish-gold bullet would pose a threat.

Shi Xiaobai looked to the side at the gigantic fan-shaped scorched ground. He was slightly alarmed. The range of the blast was as though a missile had been launched. Furthermore, it was not an ordinary missile that a psionic barrier could easily defend against.

Such a bullet was likely extremely valuable for the short-haired teenager or he would not have used it only when he was out of options. After using it, he decisively left.

The short-haired teenager quickly disappeared from his sights, while Shi Xiaobai did not pursue him either. His psionic power was nearly drained, so he was in urgent need to restore it.

“Forget it, This King will let you go scot-free for a moment.”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and sighed. He found it somewhat regretful. If he was still in his optimal state, or even just half his optimal state, the short-haired teenager would never be able to escape him.

Unfortunately, he had drained most of his psionic power in his battle with Heartless. He could only let the bastard go scot-free for a moment.

Shi Xiaobai rested for a minute before strolling through the mountainous woods. There were still a few more minutes left before the next Life and Death Assault. He had nothing to do, so he walked around, hoping to see if he could encounter someone familiar.

It was unknown if Sunless, Mozzie, Mu Yuesheng, and Kevin had arrived in the fifth level or not. He wished to reunite with them as soon as possible.

...

Shi Xiaobai strolled through the mountain forests. His psionic power was quickly recovering along the way. Although ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’ was an extremely special endurance technique, it also had the conventional ability of accelerating the recovery of psionic power.

After walking for a while, Shi Xiaobai still did not encounter anyone else.

Suddenly, a surprised cry came from the distance!

“Save me!”

The voice sounded distant and was rather weak by the time it propagated to him. However, Shi Xiaobai had a very good sense of hearing. He could hear it very well and could even sense the anxiety within the voice.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised.

Someone was crying for help?

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly used Crab Steps to head towards the voice.

Shi Xiaobai ran very fast so he quickly saw a frail girl running in front of him. There were four youths chasing after her like hungry predators. They were catching up very soon.

The girl yelled for help as her eyes were filled with anxiety. Her hair was disheveled and her clothes were messy.

One of the youths chasing after her shouted with a grin, “Keep shouting. Even if you tear your throat shouting, no one will save

you!”

The moment the youth finished his sentence, Shi Xiaobai happened to appear in front of the girl’s escape path.

The four youths came to a sudden halt as though they had seen a ghost.

The girl appeared as though she had seen her savior as she exclaimed, “Tu Dahei! Tu Dahei, quickly save me!”

The girl hurriedly fled behind Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai frowned and asked, “What happened?”

The girl hurriedly said, “They, they want to destroy my epaulette!”

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to glance at the epaulette on the girl’s shoulder.

It was a Life Epaulette and not a Death Epaulette. Why were these four youths engaging in hot pursuit in an attempt to destroy the girl’s epaulette?

At this moment, a youth coldly said, “Tu Dahei, I respect you as a good man because you dared to spar with Pulp Farmer. However, it’s best you mind your own business. By destroying this bitch’s

Life Epaulette, everyone will have one fewer competitor. It's also beneficial for you."

Shi Xiaobai asked aloud, "Do you have a feud?"

Shi Xiaobai was not a nosy person, nor was he a goody two shoes who would help a person for no reason.

The girl hurriedly said, "No, I don't even know them! They are hunters!"

Shi Xiaobai asked, "What are hunters?"

The girl immediately said, "Some people realized that others can be eliminated as long as you destroy their Life Epaulettes at this level. In order to reduce the number of competitors, and increase the chances of clearing the level, they have formed teams to 'hunt' others. The four of them belong to a group of hunters!"

Shi Xiaobai was surprised.

People actually did this?

But on careful thought, it was not without reason.

The fewer people there were on this level, the number of competitors as pursuers would decrease. The fugitives that were being pursued would also have their chances of clearing the level

enhanced.

As no one knew when they would become a fugitive, only people with great mutual trust would form groups. As a result, most rookies were left alone. By grouping up to ‘hunt’ rookies, it would be extremely easy. After all, it was just the shattering of a Life Epaulette. How hard was it for four people to destroy a person’s epaulette?

The four youths did not plan on denying as well. One of them persuaded Shi Xiaobai, “Tu Dahei, this is a selection, a competition. It’s only wise to reasonably make use of the rules. We will not harm her either. We will just destroy the epaulette on her shoulder. You can pretend as though you did not see a thing. We will be the bad guys here. Of course, we will welcome you if you wish on joining us.”

Shi Xiaobai burst out laughing as he said, “A competition has the premise of fairness before it’s called a competition. By having four of you bullying her. No offense, that is the mark of a spicy chicken...”

Just as Shi Xiaobai spoke halfway, a dagger stabbed from behind, piercing through Shi Xiaobai’s shoulder!

The four youths immediately revealed sinister smiles.

“Fool, you have been tricked!”

What looked like a frail and weak girl no longer looked frail at all. Her face was extremely cold as a derisive smile suffused across her lips. Her dagger had stabbed through Shi Xiaobai's shoulder where his epaulette was!

However, the imagined blood that splattered out did not appear. When she stabbed through the shoulder, it did not possess any realism.

The girl and the four youths stared at the Shi Xiaobai in front of the girl which was suddenly penetrated by the sunlight. Slowly, it dissipated like a mirage.

“Phantom image!?”

The girl exclaimed and hurriedly turned her head, but she noticed that Shi Xiaobai was already standing behind her with an expression that read ‘you are the fool instead’.

The girl hurriedly retreated and said in surprise, “How did you realize it?”

The four youths immediately charged forward and came to the girl's side while pulling out their weapons.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and said, “Your acting is too average. It was almost unbearable for This King to watch. This King suggests you to go to Steel City if you have the time to find an Oscar-winning actress named Yang Weiwei and learn from her.”



The girl immediately said angrily, “You are courting death! Don’t think that you are safe having avoided that strike. No matter how strong you are, it is impossible for you to be able to fight the five of us combined!”

Shi Xiaobai laughed coldly but did not say another word. He slowly raised his sword. He detested such a so-called hunter team. He could ignore them joining forces to gank someone, but they were shameless to use such a common scheme.

The five raised their weapons, as the battle was about to spark off.

Suddenly, the sound of melodious flute music came from nearby.

The flute music sounded clear and distant. It was ethereal, as though the tune were the rustling of pines through the blowing of winds.

The girl suddenly widened her eyes as she said in shock, “Demonic Flute An Mo?!”

A youth hurriedly said, “Quickly cover your ears!”

Another youth muttered, “It’s too late.” With that, his eyes closed as he planted his face to the ground.

The girl held her forehead and stumbled a few steps before sprawling to the ground. The other three youths were also knocked unconscious.

As the melodious tune softly floated over, the five were knocked unconscious in less than ten seconds.

The flute's tune was still continuing on, and accompanying it was the sound of approaching footsteps.

Very soon, a figure appeared at the end of Shi Xiaobai's vision.

It was a white-dressed youth. He had black hair that reached his waist. He was lanky and had a handsome look. His skin was rather pale and his eyes sparked. He held a rosewood flute in his hands which was placed by his mouth as he gently played.

The white-dressed youth looked as warm as jade. After playing for a while, he lowered his flute and looking at Shi Xiaobai, he said in surprise, "You are unaffected listening to half the Lullaby Tune despite having caught off guard?"

Shi Xiaobai carefully sized up the white-dressed youth and said with a shake of his head, "No, This King feels as though his ears have been polluted. That tune is alright, but you really can't blow."

When An Mo heard this, the corner of his lips twitched slightly. This was the first time someone criticized his flute-playing skills.

He hesitated slightly before saying, “I just played it casually just now, and it’s indeed harsh on the ears. If this brother doesn’t mind, do you mind listening to me play another tune?”

“Ah? Again?”

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly and hesitated for a moment. Realizing how he did not have any pertinent things to do, it was not like he could not give this person a chance to prove himself. Shi Xiaobai finally nodded and said, “Blow it.”

An Mo nodded and without saying any nonsense, he immediately began blowing.

The flute’s tune was similarly melodious, but it contained a chilling killing intent.

An Mo observed Shi Xiaobai’s face and was amazed to realize that Shi Xiaobai was still unaffected. Other than him being unable to hide the repulsiveness on his face, there was no other expression.

What was going on? Why was the tune of the demonic flute useless against this person?

An Mo was extremely surprised, so he began to blow even harder. The strength of the demonic music grew in intensity, but Shi Xiaobai remained indifferent.

Midway, Shi Xiaobai suddenly sighed and said, “Enough! This

King can't tolerate listening to such an unpleasant flute tune. You really can't blow well. This King suggests you to go to... Eh, forget it. That person is on Earth. You probably can't go there."

An Mo remained silent. He was regretting why his feet did such a stupid thing as walking out.

An Mo did not dare to speak to Shi Xiaobai again, afraid that his broken heart would experience another trauma. He walked towards the unconscious five. With a wave of his flute, the Life Epaulettes on their shoulders immediately shattered. Soon, they transformed into golden light as they were transported out of the trial.

Shi Xiaobai obviously would not stop it. For hunters to be 'hunted', it was something they deserved.

When Shi Xiaobai noticed how the white-dressed youth no longer paid him any attention, he planned on turning around and leave.

At this moment, the authoritative voice resounded through the world:

"The thirty-second round shall begin immediately. Death Epaulette wearer has been randomly chosen. The wearer's name is Sunless Ye!"

...

# Chapter 290: So As To Eliminate Her Personally

---

“The thirty-second round shall begin immediately. Death Epaulette wearer has been randomly chosen. The wearer’s name is Sunless Ye!”

The moment the authoritative voice faded away, two images appeared in Shi Xiaobai’s mind once again.

One of them was the entire map of the mountainous region, indicating where his and Sunless’ respective locations were on the map. At this moment, the two were separated by a great distance, almost more than half the entire mountainous range.

The other image was fixed on Sunless. She was dressed in an azure dress and she was expressionless. Her eyes looked somewhat in a daze, but her beauty made people have the feeling that this girl should be in heaven. The mortal world could not afford her.

Compared to Ye Sheng’s wretched form of fleeing, the current Sunless was standing in the same spot motionless, as though she had no intentions of fleeing.

Sunless had given up?

Of course not. Just as the ten seconds of the image were up, a rookie had appeared at the boundary of the image. Clearly, the rookie was one of the eager pursuers. However, before he reached

a hundred meters away from Sunless, a strong wind blew, sending the rookie flying backwards. The Life Epaulette on his shoulder suddenly shattered as the rookie transformed into a beam of golden light and was transported out of the trial.

Sunless held a silver sword in hand and remained expressionless. She did not even turn her head to look at the rookie that had suddenly appeared. She was just standing there quietly. Her silence was golden, but she also exuded an inexplicable dominance.

### Life and Death Assault?

Why must I run? I'll stand here waiting for all of you. If you have the guts, then try your best. Let's see who 'kills' who!

The image slowly dissipated. Shi Xiaobai could not help but reveal a smile. Sunless had done what he was thinking. They were just a bunch of spicy chickens, what was the need to flee? If one came, kill one. If a group came, kill a group. Who cares what monsters or demons they were, they would be killed!

An Mo was a little alarmed as he said with a frown, "This is Sunless, third on the rookie forecast? Although this courage is commendable, isn't this too reckless!? Indeed, no one is her match in a one-on-one situation, but if it were one against ten, or one against a hundred, how is she to deal with it? Why doesn't she flee and attack at the same time. With her strength, it is not a problem to protect her epaulette while running."

Shi Xiaobai heard this and glanced at An Mo. He said, "No

wonder your flute's music sounds terrible, it's because your thoughts are problematic. This King shall bestow you a sentence—The value of a treasured sword depends on whether you regard it as a treasure or a sword.”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai ran off without even turning his head again. Although he was not worried for Sunless, she was his friend. And in a sense, she was his confidant. With her being in a situation with others laying a siege on her, he obviously could not sit idle.

Shi Xiaobai ran towards Sunless' location at full speed!

An Mo stared at Shi Xiaobai's back blankly as his brows furrowed even deeper.

“Is my flute's music really that terrible? Why must you say that my thoughts are problematic?”

An Mo ruminated over the final words Shi Xiaobai had said. Moments later, he shook his head as he said with a sigh, “The value of a treasured sword depends on whether you regard it as a treasure or a sword? As for what profound meaning this sentence has, I really...can't figure it out.”

An Mo thought for a moment before he gave up thinking. He then began heading towards Sunless' location.

The value of a treasured sword. Was this problem something

worthy of study?

If he had the time, he might as well investigate the price of this large treasured sword.

...

...

In the quiet woods, the area was reeking with smoke as whispers filled the air.

Sunless was standing alone on an empty plain. There were no trees around her in a hundred meter radius.

She stood there silently with her eyes calm. She looked somewhat indifferent, and to a stranger, she looked like an ice-beauty who could topple countries with her beauty.

The Life and Death Assault had gone on for three minutes. During this period, there was no lack of pursuers that had rushed here. However, they were in no hurry to charge through the forbidden zone of a hundred meters. Even the best rookies of first-tier organizations could not withstand more than a few strikes.

The hundred-meter zone seemed to be an area no one could step through. Drove of rookies that came in pursuit had their Life Epaulettes shattered one after another. The most one could reach was a distance of fifty meters. It was no doubt a thrashing.



Sunless was this year's super rookie, a rare sword fanatic that appeared once a century. She was forecast to be third among the rookies, and her strength was redoubtable. She was on a completely different level from the other rookies.

The rookies obviously realized that attempting to make a breakthrough one after another was impossible. However, they were unwilling to give up at this moment. Hence, they began to spontaneously wait in the forest a hundred meters away from Sunless. They were waiting for enough pursuers to arrive.

One person was not enough, so were ten. But if a hundred people charged forward at the same time, regardless of how powerful Sunless was, there was no way for her to instantly kill a hundred people in those short hundred meters!

And if they could eliminate Sunless, who was bound to take a spot in the top ten, they would have an additional chance of entering the top ten candidates for the collective training. Hence, this was not a simple 'Life and Death Assault'. It had deeper meaning behind it, so it was worth it to do it at all costs, despicable or not!

More and more rookies gathered in the forest a hundred meters away. They were in whispers and waiting for their numbers to accumulate. They planned on rushing forward at the same time.

Sunless was still standing there silently. Even though the atmosphere which resembled the calm before the storm was

repressing, she did not bat an eyelid. She did not choose to take the initiative to attack while the rookies were slowly gathering together. She was only waiting, as though she did not care how many people would rush at her when the time came.

In some people's eyes, this was the confidence and the courage of the strong.

But in the eyes of others, this was hubris, an act of thinking too highly of herself.

...

At this moment, on one side of the woods a hundred meters away from Sunless. There was a bunch of rookies gathered. The numbers were about to exceed a hundred people.

For a team on such a scale, it naturally needed a leader. It needed a few key figures with the authority to lead. If the timing and procedure to which the attack was carried out was not agreed upon, it would be a waste of time disputing.

At this moment, in the middle of the rookies were three people clustered together. They had become the temporarily leaders of the hundred-man team that would quickly dissolve.

They did not need impressive leadership skills. All they needed were strength and reputation to convince the crowd.

One of them was a curvaceous girl wearing tight leather clothing. Her hair reached her waist, and her hair was slightly permed. Her looks were delicate, but she was not considered beautiful. However her eyes that accentuated her appearance seemed to have an intelligence to them. She held a whip that could automatically expand and contract, causing others to involuntarily make weird associations.

This girl was rather famous among the rookies. Her name was Zhou Chuchu, ranked tenth on the official forecast.

Beside Zhou Chuchu was a youth dressed in armor. He looked average and there was nothing unique about him. However, his solemn expression and serious look in his eyes made him seem very reliable. This person was ranked ninth on the official forecast, Feng Yuanlin.

The third person was dressed in a loose robes. His hair was coiled up and he held a whisk. He was a youth dressed like a Daoist, named Liu Yu. He was known as the Half-Dao Sage and was ranked eighth on the official forecast!

These three were superstar rookies ranked tenth, ninth and eighth on the official forecast. They excelled in a particular domain, so they were well known by many rookies. Hence, these three were immediately chosen by the rookies as their 'leaders'. This was because only the three of them could command the masses.

The trio apparently knew each other and they were gathered together as they spoke softly. Their voices were lowered to the

point of whispers.

The other rookies did not deliberately eavesdrop, but if they heard the conversation between the trio, they would probably faint from exasperation.

Feng Yuanlin said, “What do we do? Bite the bullet and charge forward?”

Liu Yu said, “Benefactor, This Penniless Priest notices that your glabella seems dark, that’s an ominous portent. Quickly take a look and see if mine is dark as well.”

Feng Yuanlin nodded and said, “How can it not be dark? That is Sunless. If the three of us take the lead in the fight, aren’t we just dooming ourselves?”

Zhou Chuchu was unconvinced as she said, “Sis Sunless may be mighty, but I can hold her down. Don’t look at my ranking. It’s actually just an illusion. I just prefer to keep a low profile and only use a tenth of my true strength.”

Feng Yuanlin said, “Alright, in terms of bragging, I’ll only believe that you, Braggart Chu, are the best. However, I choose to believe you this time. Go on, since you are so mighty, you should lead the charge!”

Zhou Chuchu curled her lips and said, “No. It’s so bad to have so many people bullying Sis Sunless. I won’t be partaking in such an

endeavor. I am only, only here to cheer Sis Sunless on!”

Liu Yu sighed and said, “Actually, This Penniless Priest does not like such form of bullying either. However...This Penniless Priest has inferred from Heavenly Dao and peeked into the secrets of heaven, and from that discovered that it’s impossible to defeat Sunless in a one-on-one battle.”

Feng Yuanlin sighed and said, “Your inference of the secrets of heaven sure is accurate. It will be a joke if one can win in a one-on-one fight with her. But to fight hundred against one, I can’t do something like that! Shall...we not do a thing when the battle begins later?”

Zhou Chuchu agreed, “I was not planning on attacking in the first place. If I were to attack, would there be a need for you? I’ll say, I’m here to be a cheerleader for Sis Sunless!”

Liu Yu said, “This Penniless Priest is in a dilemma as well. If Sunless is eliminated, one of the ten spots would open up. It’s also beneficial for us, but for a group to attack one person, This Penniless Priest really can’t do it. Just as Yuanlin said, we will not make a move when the time comes!”

Feng Yuanlin added on, “We can rush out halfway and retreat during the chaos midway. We can pretend...pretend to be sick?”

Liu Yu and Zhou Chuchu immediately approved of it with a nod of their heads.

The rookies were in whispers, discussing as to how to lay siege on Sunless. However, they did not know that their leaders had already betrayed them!

At this moment, an exclamation came from the front of the crowd.

“Pulp Farmer, Pulp Farmer is here!”

Everyone turned their heads over. They saw a youth about eight feet tall with thick eyebrows and large eyes, a broad jawline and cut facial features. He held a silver spear in hand as he walked over in a domineering fashion.

Who else was it but fourth on the official forecast, Pulp Farmer?

A number of people had their expressions drastically changed.

This was because they recalled of a rumor. It was rumored that Pulp Farmer had once said in his drunken stupor—Only this girl and her sword is something I can never forget.

Although the two of them had never interacted before, to the point of not even knowing each other, which heroic youth would not have his heart stirred by a girl as beautiful as a snow lotus like Sunless?

When everyone thought of this, they had a sense of foreboding.

However, they never expected that when Pulp Farmer came, the first thing he said was, “I’m not here to help her and it’s completely the opposite. My goal here is to eliminate her myself.”

Everyone was startled, as though they vaguely understood what had happened.

Someone immediately suggested, “Since Pulp Farmer is here, what are we waiting for? Let’s begin attacking!”

...

...

In the mountains, Shi Xiaobai was proceeding forward at full speed. However, due to the great distance, he needed a little time before he could reach where Sunless was.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai saw a black-robed youth holding a bloody sickle walking slowly in front of him. The way he walked appeared extremely slow, but his speed was actually extremely fast.

However, Shi Xiaobai’s speed was even faster. In a few seconds, Shi Xiaobai had overtaken the youth. When he passed by the youth, he turned to glance at him. All he saw above the black robe was an ugly face that seemed disfigured, but there was no attempt to hide it.

Shi Xiaobai frowned. He could sense an aura from the ugly youth that he extremely detested. He could not help but feel a sense of irritation.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not have the time to investigate this. He forcefully repressed the inexplicable sense of irritation as he quickly left the youth behind.

The ugly youth looked at Shi Xiaobai's back. Suddenly he took out a crumpled piece of paper, and on it, there were a few names.

“Sunless, kill!”

The ugly youth's voice was hoarse and dry, as though he was an old man in his seventies. “The list doesn't have...Tu Dahei.”

“But...there's this urge to kill him. Then he shall be killed!”

...



# Chapter 291: Professional Assist

---

“Since Pulp Farmer is here, what are we waiting for? Let’s begin the attack together!”

A rookie suggested and immediately the crowd echoed him.

A few minutes had already passed. If this dragged on, Sunless would safely last the ten minutes and clear the level successfully.

The chances of snatching the opportunity to shatter the Death Epaulette was minute in a group attack. However, if they could eliminate Sunless, a spot in the ten openings, which was previously impossible to contend for, would open up. This was extremely alluring for every rookie present.

At this moment, Pulp Farmer suddenly said, “Attack together? No, all of you can just watch by the side. I said I’ll eliminate her myself. None of you need to interfere, and none of you are to interfere!”

When everyone heard this, their expressions changed drastically. They never expected Pulp Farmer to have such an intention.

Immediately, a rookie who was not afraid to maliciously speculate shouted, “You want to hoard the Death Epaulette yourself? Or do you actually plan on helping Sunless clear the level? Are you deliberately using a duel to buy her time?”

Immediately, someone followed up, “He must be doing this to help Sunless. It’s already rumored that Pulp Farmer likes Sunless. So how can he bear to hurt her?”

Everyone began a flurry of discussions.

“Pulp Farmer, you are truly strong, but Sunless’ official forecast ranking is one spot higher than yours. Do you think you can eliminate Sunless yourself?”

“There’s no need to think further. He must be here to help Sunless. Don’t fall for it, everyone!”

“I will never agree to Pulp Farmer’s suggestion anyway. If we are attacking, all of us are to attack. We can let Pulp Farmer take the lead, but anything else is out of question!”

“ ... ”

The crowd immediately started to clamor. They did not believe Pulp Farmer would attack Sunless to begin with. And now, they found it impossible to believe that Pulp Farmer could eliminate Sunless alone. Conspiracy theories were abound.

Pulp Farmer’s eyes turned extremely cold as he suddenly stabbed his spear deep into the ground, causing the earth to shake.

Everyone jumped in fright. Pulp Farmer was dressed in armor and looked majestic. He exuded a domineering air that made it

unbearable for others to look at him straight.

Pulp Farmer surveyed the crowd and said with a sneer, “A bunch of fools. Even if a hundred of you were to rush forward, none of you are Sunless’ match. Got it? If you do not want to be eliminated now, wait here obediently. This is not a suggestion but a warning. If you really want to attack together, go ahead. I’ll clean up all of you spicy chickens in a minute!”

The moment this was said, everyone was immediately infuriated as they raised their weapons.

“Fuck, that’s so arrogant!”

“Brothers, can we still tolerate this? I want to kill him!”

“Pulp Farmer, are you courting death!?”

“No, he’s here to die in her place. He’s trying to buy time for Sunless!”

“...”

The crowd’s anger could not be appeased. Pulp Farmer did not engage in any further banter with them as he raised his spear and aimed it at the crowd.

Seeing that the battle was about to begin, Feng Yuanlin jostled

out of the crowd and gestured with his hands, “Everyone, calm down! This is a good thing. Why are you stopping this?”

Everyone looked at Feng Yuanlin with perplexed looks.

This was a good thing?

Feng Yuanlin said earnestly, “Think about it. If Pulp Farmer were to battle Sunless alone, we can sit back and wait for the internecine struggle to end so as to reap the eventual benefits. When the battle between Sunless and Pulp Farmer ends, there will be great losses regardless of the outcome. When the time comes, we can charge over. Wouldn’t we be able to eliminate the both of them as a result? If Pulp Farmer were to buy time for Sunless, that wouldn’t be a problem either. Sunless will clear the level and run away, but where is Pulp Farmer to run? When the time comes, we can join forces and eliminate him. We would still eliminate someone from the top ten. Think about it, how different is third and fourth place? So just let Pulp Farmer eliminate Sunless himself. If we are lucky, we can even eliminate the both of them together!”

After Feng Yuanlin said this, everyone was dumbfounded as they fell silent.

They realized what Feng Yuanlin said was very reasonable. They had nothing to offer to his viewpoint.

However... However, wasn’t Pulp Farmer just beside you? How can you vocalize such a shameless plot? Are you treating Pulp Farmer as a fool or as though he was deaf?

However, Pulp Farmer was not angered. Instead he said with a laugh, “A very good suggestion. Follow what he had just said. Also, I have always been perfectly open in all my actions. Since I said I would eliminate Sunless, I would definitely use all my strength. I would not be like all of you and have such despicable thoughts.”

Once Pulp Farmer finished his sentence, he lifted his spear and walked forward. There were struggles in the eyes of the rookies blocking him, but they eventually chose to make way. The aura Pulp Farmer exuded was as formidable as a tiger. They really lacked the courage to stop him.

And it had to be said that Feng Yuanlin’s words had really changed their minds.

Even if they could not eliminate Sunless, they had every reason to vent their anger on Pulp Farmer. There was little effect to whichever person they eliminated. If they were lucky, they might be able to eliminate both!

“Let’s go. Everyone form a circle. Do not let Pulp Farmer escape!”

Immediately, someone whispered. Everyone immediately echoed it and began taking action. They formed a circle so as to attack at any time. They could also prevent Pulp Farmer from escaping.

When Feng Yuanlin saw this, he gave a delighted smile to Liu Yu and Zhou Chuchu, who were beside him and said, “How was it? Wasn’t I awesome? Quickly, praise me! With just a few words, I

had not only prevented a tough battle, I have also extricated us from this situation. Sigh, I feel as though I'm a reincarnation of a masterful genius."

A dark look filled Liu Yu's face as he said, "Aren't you afraid that your words will enrage Pulp Farmer to slaughter you first?"

Zhou Chuchu also rolled her eyes at Feng Yuanlin and said, "Your suggestion was tailored to trap Pulp Farmer."

Feng Yuanlin smacked his lips and said, "Everything is within my plans. Anyway, Pulp Farmer is just a boor. He's no way like a fairy like Sunless, so if I don't con him, who should I con?"

The two were left speechless.

Nobody could be better than you in tricking someone with such righteous indignation.

...

...

Pulp Farmer did not seem to mind that Feng Yuanlin's words had ensnared him. He did not even seem to care about the grim situation of the crowd attacking him regardless of the outcome of the upcoming battle.

Even though the rookies had formed a hundred-meters circle around Sunless, as well as him, Pulp Farmer only had eyes on one person.

The person was the azure-dressed girl in front of him.

However, Sunless did not even look at him. Her head was lowered as she looked at the sword in her hand. It was as though she only cared about swords.

Pulp Farmer did not directly walk into the hundred-meter zone because he knew that once he took a step forward, Sunless' sword beam would immediately come slashing at him. Without any hesitation, the battle would be triggered.

However, before the battle began, Pulp Farmer had something to say. He focused on Sunless and said, "The world thinks I like you. Even your brother thinks so too. But in fact, I'm just like you, a fanatic. You are a sword fanatic, while I'm a martial arts fanatic. Other than martial arts, I do not like anything else, not now, never have, never will. So, I do not like you in any meaning of the word."

With this said, the crowd were appalled. They never expected that the words Pulp Farmer said would be completely opposite to what they had been thinking.

Sunless did not make any response, as though she had not heard his words.

Pulp Farmer did not anticipate a response either as he continued, “It was rumored that I once said in a drunken stupor—Only this girl and her sword is something I can never forget. This rumor is true, but what I can never forget was the battle when I was ten... That time, I lost. I lost very thoroughly. You made me never forget that defeat. Therefore, I have always been watching you, desperately chasing after you. I’m very happy that you were like me, a fanatic. You are a fanatic in the way of the sword, and you have always been improving, never stagnating. Therefore, I never had the confidence of defeating you up to now.”

Pulp Farmer’s words shocked the crowd. They never expected that what Pulp Farmer found unforgettable was the defeat of a battle at the age of ten. However, for an amazing genius like Pulp Farmer, the number of times he lost to his peers was probably a handful, or maybe only once.

Pulp Farmer’s expression suddenly turned cold as he said, “But I discovered that you recently changed... Other than you being fanatic in the way of the sword, you appear to have discovered other things that you like. Therefore, the way of your sword has begun to waver. You are unable to be wholeheartedly obsessed with the sword. You are no longer the purest sword fanatic! This discovery greatly disappointed me. I was infuriated as well as lost. This is because the Sunless that required me to put in great effort to chase after is about to disappear!”

Sunless continued ignoring him as her head was lowered towards her sword. However, a look of perplexity flashed in her eyes.

Pulp Farmer took a deep breath and said, “If I’m not wrong, the



reason why your fanaticism for sword arts have wavered is because of a person. That person's name is...Tu Dahei!"

The moment Tu Dahei was mentioned, the expressions of many rookies changed. In fact, there were a number of people present who had experienced the counteroffensive on the Demon City. Tu Dahei was the City Destroyer Hero in their hearts!

As for the rest, they remembered that this name had appeared in the official forecast. He was labeled as a mudslide among the rookies and was ranked at the most special zeroth place.

The name, Tu Dahei, seemed to possess something magical about it. It made many people feel good vibes and had also made Sunless finally raise her head.

When Sunless raised her head, her gaze finally left that sword. However, it did not seem to land anywhere else. Her eyes did not focus on anything and appeared unsettled. Anyone could tell that her beautiful eyes were filled with perplexity.

"I believe you have not truly recognized your own feelings. This is because you are a pure sword fanatic. Other than swords, you have nearly zero other emotions. On this point, I'm inferior to you."

Pulp Farmer said, "But you have been unsettled. This is the best proof. I will only ask you once. No, it should be you asking yourself seriously—Do you like Tu Dahei or not?"

Everyone held their breaths. They never expected to hear such a bombastic question.

How could the purest sword fanatic, Sunless, who was like a snow lotus that could only be watched from afar, like Tu Dahei?

How would Sunless answer this question? How long would it take for her, a person who had no idea about feelings, to understand this question?

However, something contrary to all expectations happened. Sunless nodded her head without any hesitation. She even softly said a single word.

“Like.”

Like, she liked Tu Dahei.

Heartless had asked this question before. Back then, she had liked the sword arts heritage Tu Dahei had given her. She liked the sword aura from Tu Dahei’s body and liked the sword sparring in her consciousness with Tu Dahei. So she had nodded and said yes. Back then, she believed her answer was that she liked it.

But in fact, what she liked was still a result of swords!

Be it the sword arts heritage, the sword aura, or sword sparring, they were all related to swords. And Tu Dahei was just a prefix to all of this.

But now, Sunless did not think so.

The amount of effort Tu Dahei had put in for Mozzie and Kevin was something she had witnessed.

She remembered the wise words Tu Dahei had said when imparting the upper form of the Kun Peng to her.

When they encountered the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, Tu Dahei had forced himself to play the bad guy and had saved them through his wisdom. He dared to lead the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign away and even successfully conquered the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. This was the first time Sunless was startled.

That was a Level Lord. With their present strength, it was a terrifying existence that they were unable to put up even the slightest of resistance. However, Tu Dahei had managed to perfectly deal with it. His wisdom, courage, kindness, and sacrifice... If it were anyone in Sunless, Mozzie and company's shoes, they would also feel touched and impressed.

Hence, Sunless changed her mind.

She still liked things that were related to swords. However, Tu Dahei was no longer an optional prefix. He was a unique and indispensable existence!

Sunless nodded firmly. Her unsettledness was not because she

liked Tu Dahei or not, but whether her like for Tu Dahei would waver her fanaticism towards swords.

This was because she felt that...her Sword Truth had improved as a result!

This was something that should not have happened. Her Sword Truth was Fanaticism.

If she liked something else or someone else, it should have been weakened. Why did it end up improving?

This made Sunless unsettled.

The crowd obviously did not know the reason for Sunless' unsettledness. They believed Sunless had affirmed her heart due to Pulp Farmer's question.

Everyone lamented.

“Heavens, the goddess in my heart has fallen.”

“Fuck, this Pulp Farmer is a professional assist, right?”

“This assist... I'm suspecting that Pulp Farmer is an accomplice hired by Tu Dahei!”

“ ... ”

Pulp Farmer did not expect Sunless to give such a resolute answer. His eyes turned cold as he coldly said, “You are no longer the Sunless of the past. By liking someone so resolutely, your Fanaticism Sword Truth will definitely be substantially weakened. I’m very, very disappointed! So, I will take back the victory I deposited with you. If possible, I wish the defeat in this battle would wake you up!”

As Pulp Farmer said this, he took a step forward.

This step placed him into the forbidden zone of a hundred meters.

Sunless did not hesitate and slashed out. The sword beams that were like a hurricane startled the surrounding rookies’ mouths shut.

Pulp Farmer’s eyes looked cold as he raised his spear and thrust straight at the hurricane-like sword beams!

...

# Chapter 292: The Bullet That Changed The Outcome

---

Somewhere in the mountains, three people were running. Right in front was a blond youth. Behind him was a cute girl with long orange-red hair. The girl was carrying another girl with short brown hair that had her eyes shut tightly.

The three were obviously Kevin, Mozzie and Mu Yuesheng. They had quickly gathered together after arriving at the fifth level.

However, Mu Yuesheng was currently unconscious, so Mozzie had to carry her.

For a petite girl to piggyback another girl, while the guy accompanying her was running ahead as though he had turned a blind eye to it, made other rookies that they occasionally pass curse.

Serves him right for being single his entire life.

But in fact, no one would believe that with the possession of a Titan bloodline, Mozzie's strength was actually much higher than Kevin's. Piggybacking the light Mu Yuesheng was as simple as an ordinary person holding a book.

Kevin obviously would not ask for a rebuff by requesting to carry her. Other than Mu Yuesheng refusing it, Mozzie would probably not agree to it as well.

At this moment, they were running through the mountains. Mozzie's speed was rather slow, but the expression on her face was filled with anxiousness and worry. From the looks of it, she was already working hard at speeding.

Kevin was running in front and had deliberately slowed down. He turned back and said, "Don't worry. Sunless will definitely be fine."

Mozzie sighed and said, "Will we be able to make it in time?"

Kevin hesitated for a moment and said with a nod, "Our position was just too far away from Sunless. With our present speed, ten minutes will probably pass by the time we arrive."

Mozzie said with an aggrieved look, "What shall we do? Sister Yuesheng suddenly fell unconscious when she made her breakthrough. Sister Sunless is now in danger, yet we can't even help her..."

Kevin lowered his head slightly. He truly could not think of a solution to the problem at the moment. In fact, he was somewhat confused and bewildered.

Kevin could only console her, "Mu Yuesheng suddenly fell unconscious when she broke through to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. It probably has something to do with her constitution. I think she will probably recover after resting for a while. Sunless and most of the rookies are on completely different

levels. Even if she's surrounded, I believe she will probably be able to handle it. What we can do now...is to do our best to rush over. Furthermore...Shi Xiaobai should have already reached the fifth level. He must have a solution!"

Kevin thought, if Shi Xiaobai was around, he would definitely be able to think of a solution very calmly in the present situation. As for him, he could only repeat the word 'probably'... The gap between him and Shi Xiaobai was just too great.

Mozzie's eyes lit up as a glimmer of hope flashed in them. She said softly, "Yea, Lord Shi Xiaobai must be rushing to help Sister Sunless. He will definitely be able to protect Sister Sunless. Maybe he will be able to treat Sister Yuesheng as well. Let's hurry over there. I'm very worried about Sister Yuesheng's physical condition."

After Mozzie said this, she gritted her teeth and sped up. She secretly told herself that she had to work hard at cultivating movement techniques in the future.

At this moment, Mu Yuesheng's eyes suddenly opened. An icy-blue lightning bolt flashed in her brown eyes.

...

...

Sunless slashed out and immediately the sword beams that were



like a hurricane startled the surrounding rookies. They pondered for a moment and knew that they would not be able to withstand such a strike. Immediately there was an uproar.

However, Pulp Farmer did not appear powerless against the howling hurricane of sword beams. He was calm, and his eyes were cold. He stabbed straight at the hurricane with his spear!

“Tyrant Spear!”

Pulp Farmer was majestic and had an imposing aura. As he thrust out, it was as though space was torn apart. Sunlight was shattered into pieces of fragments as a gigantic spear image appeared, clashing right at the sword winds!

“Boom!”

A deafening explosion occurred as dust flew up everywhere. Trees were toppled as though they had experienced explosions. The rookies that besieged the two had a drastic change in expressions as they conjured their psionic barriers to protect themselves.

This sword and spear’s power completely exceeded their expectations. This was just the first strike of this battle?

This was indeed the first strike. Furthermore, it appeared as though they had casually attacked, as though it was just a simple appetizer. This was because after slashing out, Sunless did not stop

and immediately slashed again!

It was just a simple slash, but azure sword beams shot forward. Hundreds or thousands of azure sword beams headed straight for Pulp Farmer, as though they were angry azure birds.

Pulp Farmer remained expressionless. The row of rookies behind Pulp Farmer were scared silly. All they saw was azure sword beams that filled the sky raining down as though they were covering the entire world. Under the sunlight, they scintillated a cold luster. Every sword beam contained a sharp sword intent that others found unbearable to look straight at.

They hurriedly scattered because they did not even have the confidence that their psionic barriers were able to withstand the sword beams that filled the sky, even if it was just the fallout.

However, Pulp Farmer walked towards the azure sword beams. Suddenly he raised his spear and spun it above his head.

The rotations of the spear stirred up a tornado with him in the eye!

This was no ordinary tornado, but a storm of power. As the azure sword beams struck the tornado, sonorous sounds were constantly emitted as they were repelled and scattered to the ground.

As the sword beams flew randomly, it immediately affected the outlying regions. Explosions constantly boomed as the rookies

cried out incessantly and conjured psionic barriers to resist the explosions or flee in panic. All of them looked to be in a sorry state.

“They are so powerful. How can these two be so strong?”

“These are third and fourth among the rookies? They are completely on a different plane of existence from us!”

“Phew, can a hundred of us really defeat the two of them?”

“Don’t sell yourselves short. Their attacks might appear relaxed, but they must have used all their strength. Although they are very powerful, that’s all to it. They can’t fight one against a hundred.”

“Really...they have used all their strength?”

“... ”

The rookies were engaged in a flurry of discussion.

At this moment, Pulp Farmer had already used his tornado to walk to a distance fifty meters away from Sunless, but she did not immediately produce her third strike.

Pulp Farmer suddenly came to a stop as the tornado slowly dissipated. He raised his spear and bending his back with his right knee up, in a majestic pose, a domineering aura slowly stirred as though he was accumulating strength.

“Sunless, you defeated me years ago with just four strikes. So today, I will defeat you within three strikes. This is the third strike, and also the only offensive strike I have. However, it has to be the final strike. I have to take back the victory that belongs to me!”

Pulp Farmer retracted his right arm and began gathering strength. A domineering aura surged as the light around him began distorting. The rookies hurriedly retreated. They could sense the terrifying power emitted by Pulp Farmer despite the distance.

The following strike was Pulp Farmer’s full strength.

“Holy shit, who was the one who said they have already used all their strength? Fuck, this strike has yet to happen, but it’s already multiple times more terrifying than the exchange of moves from just now.”

“Gulp, I guess... I guess we should take a step back. I’m a bit afraid...”

“Hey, why is Sunless still motionless? By gathering strength for so long, if I were Sunless, I’d quickly interrupt him. If Pulp Farmer were to finish channeling his strength, who could withstand it?”

“That’s why you are destined never to be Sunless.”

“ ... ”

The rookies retreated in horror as discussions broke out.

Sunless remained motionless. Against Pulp Farmer's channeling strike, she did not channel her strength to produce a defensive strike. Her eyes remained calm, as though she did not care about Pulp Farmer's strike at his full power.

Pulp Farmer was slightly surprised, but he was also a bit infuriated.

“Sunless, do you still think I'm that weakling that was defeated by you after four strikes years ago? In order to chase after you, the sweat, blood and hard work I have put in is not something you can even imagine. If you believe you can easily withstand my strike, I will use harsh reality to shatter your pride!”

Pulp Farmer continued channeling his strength as his eyes turned extremely cold. He said coldly, “I will not hold back at all for this strike!”

Sunless remained indifferent. She even lowered her head to look at her sword but she said softly, “Third strike, you lose.”

With this said, there was an uproar. No one could believe that not only had Sunless not gather strength to face Pulp Farmer's strike that had gathered maximum strength, she had also thought of countering and defeating Pulp Farmer. Was this confidence or

arrogance?

Pulp Farmer laughed from his extreme anger as he said, “Sunless, I never expected that not only have your Sword Truth weakened, even your intelligence has lowered. Indeed the matters of the heart have ruined you! Since you insist on refusing to realize the errors of your ways...receive my attack!”

Pulp Farmer angrily roared. The strike he had gathered strength for a long time finally was released!

A cold beam first burst forward as a dragon-like spear accompanied it from behind!

When the spear thrust out, a gigantic phantom image of a dragon dashed straight at Sunless!

The dragon roared while the world changed colors!

Everyone stared confounded. Seeing the gigantic dragon phantom, they suddenly had the feeling of worshipping it!

This dragon phantom was extremely terrifying. The amount of power it contained was beyond imagination. The rookies were sure that if they were struck by this dragon phantom, they would very likely die here even if they were hit only by the shockwaves.

This strike, which Pulp Farmer had gathered strength for so long, was truly extremely powerful!

However, Sunless still did not bat an eyelid while facing this gigantic dragon phantom. Raising her sword, she was as calm as ever.

Suddenly, an azure glow emitted out of Sunless!

When Pulp Farmer saw this, his pupils slightly contracted as he exclaimed, “This is...Sword Truth? Your Sword Truth...actually improved again!?”

The azure beam gathered extremely quickly in Sunless’ sword. She did not look at the gigantic dragon phantom that filled the sky which was about to smash downwards. Instead, she thrust straight at Pulp Farmer!

Pulp Farmer had a drastic change in expression. He immediately raised his spear while being on high alert!

Everyone held their breaths and did not dare to make a single sound!

However, a surprising scene unfolded. As they saw Sunless thrust forward, she suddenly forcefully changed her trajectory and stabbed into the ground!

As no one could comprehend what had happened, Sunless sudden stabbing of her sword into the ground caused the azure glow from her sword to transform into an azure barrier that wrapped around

her.

The gigantic dragon phantom struck the azure barrier and at the same time, a purplish-gold bullet came flying behind Sunless with no one noticing when it was shot. It abruptly struck the azure barrier!

As though that second was stretched out, the gigantic dragon phantom and the purple bullet smashed into the azure barrier. Even space was distorted as though time came to a halt.

Sharp-sighted rookies hurriedly looked at the purplish-gold bullet. This purplish-gold bullet had suddenly shot from behind Sunless.

It was clearly...a sneak attack?

“Boom!”

An explosion suddenly boomed as the gigantic dragon phantom disintegrated. The purplish-gold bullet was reduced to fragments. The azure barrier had managed to withstand two strikes, defeating the terrifying powers of two attacks that hit her from the front and back!

“Pu!”

Sunless suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. As her body quivered, she had to hold onto her sword with both hands before



she could barely find her footing.

Her face was extremely pale. The purplish-gold bullet that suddenly attacked her from behind forced her to change the trajectory of her sword, making her change from offense to defense.

How could her body withstand the sudden reversal in strength?

Sunless had very likely been severely injured!

...

## Chapter 293: Who Dares To Touch Her

---

The timing of the purplish-gold bullet's surprise attack could be said to be fatal. Sunless had just thrust out with nearly all her strength, but the bullet had come shooting from behind.

The bullet's power was not to be underestimated since it left Sunless no choice but to forcibly change the trajectory of her attack and reversing from offense to defense. The sudden reversal of strength definitely caused damage to one's body.

Sunless spat out a mouthful of blood as her face turned pale. Her body trembled a few times and managed to stand firmly with the support of her sword. Clearly, she was already seriously injured.

However, the move she made vividly reflected just how strong Sunless was.

Despite the fact that forcibly changing the directional force would inevitably lead to a loss of power, she was still able to defend against the gigantic dragon phantom and the purplish-gold bullet's pincer attack. It was clear how strong Sunless was.

Without a doubt, Sunless would have definitely shattered the dragon phantom and even defeated Pulp Farmer if not for the purplish-gold bullet.

In this case, Sunless was very likely much stronger than Pulp Farmer!

The surrounding crowd was stunned. At the same time, they were enraged. Although they wanted to eliminate Sunless, they could not deny the fact that Sunless was a true goddess in their hearts.

How could anyone not feel the wince in their hearts and the anger when a goddess was wounded by a sneak attack?

“Which shameless jerk sniped? Get the fuck out here!”

“Fuck, what a shameless asshole to actually launch a sneak attack!”

“Which bastard is it? I’ll never spare him!”

The rookies burst into invectives when suddenly someone shouted, “Look, the sniper is there!”

Everyone immediately looked towards the direction in which that person pointed and were surprised to discover that a short-haired teenager, whose hands were in his pockets, stood proudly at the top of a large tree in the distance.

He was the sniper?

He actually stood there brazenly for all to see after launching a sneak attack?

Suddenly, someone recognized the short-haired teenager's identity and shouted, "Isn't...he Sen Senyuan?"

Immediately, someone echoed, "That's right. I've recognized him as well. He's the sixth on the official forecast, Sen Senyuan!"

Everyone immediately burst into an uproar.

"Sen Senyuan. I remember the official forecast saying that he is a very overbearing person. Why would he launch a sneak attack?"

"An overbearing person might not necessarily mean he's not despicable. And his overbearingness might be an act. He might just be a vile person actually!"

"Heh heh. This Sen Senyuan is only sixth, yet he dares to attack Sunless in such a sneaky manner. Isn't he afraid her brother will seek revenge? Heartless is fifth after all!"

"There's no need for Heartless. Just Pulp Farmer alone will not spare him since he's such an open and aboveboard person. How can he forgive such a despicable malefactor undermining his duel with Sunless?"

"Waiting for Pulp Farmer to teach Sen Senyuan a lesson!"

"Look at Pulp Farmer's expression. It's as ugly as it can be. There

will definitely be a good show coming up!”

Everyone immediately looked at Pulp Farmer. At this moment, his expression was indeed extremely ugly. However, keen-eyed people could tell that Pulp Farmer was trying to repress his anger.

No, it should be said that Pulp Farmer was forcing himself to swallow the anger in his heart.

What was going on?

Suddenly, everyone saw Pulp Farmer bow towards Sen Senyuan, who was on top of the tree. It looked extremely respectful.

Pulp Farmer lowered his head and said with a loud voice, “Young master... With your status, there is no need for you to launch a sneak attack. Why...”

Everyone gasped.

Young master?

Pulp Farmer addressed Sen Senyuan as ‘young master’?

What was going on?

The clamoring crowd gradually quietened down and perked up

their ears.

A cold, haughty and imperious voice came from the distance.

“If not for this bullet, you would have been defeated. Although you are just trash, your clan is still rather loyal as a dog.”

These words astounded everyone.

From what Sen Senyuan said, Pulp Farmer’s family clan was his family’s ‘dog’?

Pulp Farmer lowered his head as a tinge of anger flashed in his eyes. He took a deep breath and said in a heavy tone, “I do not think I would have been defeated by that strike!”

Sen Senyuan sneered and said, “The reason why trash is trash is because they cannot tell where they lie. You suffered an abject defeat after a few strikes several years ago. Do you think you can close the gap just because a few years have passed? The innate differences between people are irreversible. You are just a mortal with slightly more talent. Sunless’ speed of improvement is so many times faster than yours. The gap between you and her will only be larger than a few years ago. She said she could defeat you in three moves, but in fact, she could finish you in one strike!”

Pulp Farmer suddenly looked up as his eyes were filled with disbelief. He loudly said, “Impossible. She is no longer the pure sword fanatic. She has someone in her heart. Her Sword Truth

should clearly weaken...”

Pulp Farmer suddenly thought of the move she forcibly made at the end as a wry smile suffused across his lips. However, there was a stubbornness in his eyes. He said with a heavy tone, “I’m not a person that can’t accept defeat. If the gap between us is that large, I’d rather suffer another abject defeat than having such a despicable victory. Compared to defeating her, I would rather be as you said, never to be able to catch up to her. In that case, I will never lose my goal.”

“Fool.”

Sen Senyuan’s voice was cold and dismissive. He said, “Whatever. What has the degeneration of a trash like you got to do with me?”

As Sen Senyuan said this, he pulled his right hand out of his pocket. A purplish-gold circle of light lit up as a purplish-gold pistol appeared in his hand.

The gun was aimed at Sunless as Sen Senyuan said, “Sunless, as a human, your talent is top-notch. Reasonably speaking, you should not be eliminated here, but only Speechless can be my opponent. I will not waste any more time on this level, so your epaulette is mine!”

Sunless was silent but her face was still pale. However, her eyes appeared extremely clam. Although the gun was pointed at her, she did not even turn her head to glance at where Sen Senyuan

was.

The rookies were alarmed as they found Sen Senyuan's tone over-inflated.

“Isn't this jerk ranked sixth on the official forecasts? He actually says Speechless is his opponent?”

“But from Pulp Farmer's attitude, this Sen Senyuan does not seem simple at all. It looks like the official forecast is not necessarily accurate.”

“ ... ”

Everyone was in a flurry of discussion.

Pulp Farmer's expression changed slightly as he said with a heavy tone, “Young master, you were the first to sneakily attack. Now, you are even taking advantage of her perilous state. How can you live up to the Sen family's reputation!?”

Sen Senyuan said with a sneer, “Failure makes a rebel, success makes a king. This is the only credo of the Sen family. Be it a sneak attack, taking advantage of a person's perilous state, or even attacking collectively, the final victor is always on the side of righteousness. The failure has no right to complain. Only the victor has a voice and a reputation. If you want to try stopping, I don't mind you letting you understand the duties of a dog.”



A struggle flashed in Pulp Farmer's eyes. Moments later, he turned towards Sunless and said apologetically, "Sorry, if I were to attack young master, my father and grandfather's loyalty would be destroyed by my hands. Between unfilialness and unrighteousness, I can only choose the latter. I can't help you."

Sunless had her head lowered towards her sword and ignored him. Pulp Farmer sighed and turned around silently.

At this moment, the rookies found it unbearable as they began to stir. Some could not bear to watch, but there were still others that coveted for the Death Epaulette.

At this moment, yellow circles of light lit up in the sky. Firearms began emerging out of the circular lights as they filled the sky. There were thousands of them with all shapes and sizes. There was no way to count them all as they spanned several kilometers.

The rookies drew a gasp as they revealed looks of trepidation.

"That is no ordinary gun!"

"Look at it... Isn't it the Cait Demonbreaker Gun that's worth several hundreds of millions?"

"That is a Dragon Slaying Machine Gun that's worth several tens of millions..."

"Ah, isn't that the Blackgold Holy Gun that only existed in

legends?”

“Every gun in there seems to have quite an impressive background...”

“If these guns were to fire at the same time...”

Everyone suddenly feared imagining it. They felt a chill from head to toes.

At this moment, all the guns pointed their barrels right at Sunless!

“I know you would not use the exit command. Even if your body is so heavily injured, you would still take on my shot.”

Sen Senyuan looked at Sunless and said, “So I think very highly of you, and if it’s possible... I want to kill you. The array of guns at this scale was meant for Speechless to enjoy, but as a gift for your funeral, I cannot be too stingy either.”

When everyone heard this, they were immediately turned anxious. Pulp Farmer also turned angrily towards Sen Senyuan. They never expected that Sen Senyuan had not only kicked her while she was down, he was even planning to kill her!

If it were any other person, they would definitely choose to use the exit command while facing such a situation.

However, Sunless would not do so. She did not even have an inkling of what it meant to feel fear. It was even very likely that she did not put her life at heart.

Everyone was immediately extremely worried.

Unsurprisingly, Sunless' eyes remained calm. She turned around and raised her sword. Her attitude was adamant and obvious.

Everyone could see how pale she was. They could imagine how weak she was at that moment. How could she have the remaining strength to face the array of guns that filled the sky?

However, the weak-looking her remained firmly at her position. She did not even bat an eyelid against the multitude of guns.

“Very well. You are worthy of being killed by my own hand.”

Sen Senyuan coldly said, “Then, please die!”

The moment the cold voice faded, the triggers of the multitude of guns were about to be pulled. Everyone felt furious but they did not know how to prevent this. Pulp Farmer clenched his spear while his eyes were filled with a struggle.

Sunless quietly stood there, as though she was a snow lotus that would soon wither.

At this moment, a furious bellow suddenly came from afar!

“Who dares to touch her!?”

...

# Chapter 294: This Pair Is Not To Be Spared

---

“Who dares to touch her!?”

Before the voice that came from afar faded, a figure had dashed through the crowd at an extremely fast speed.

The figure was a black-haired youth with delicate facial features. His eyes were like the stars, but they were filled with anger. A black and white sword was held in his hand.

The youth dashed over as fast as lightning, and in a blink of an eye, he was beside Sunless. That speed was staggering.

To the rookies present, this youth was no stranger.

To a number of them, he was the super dark horse officially ranked at zeroth place in the forecast that had clashed with Pulp Farmer with a psionic sword.

But to others, he was the instigator of the launch of a counteroffensive against the Demon City. He had led four hundred rookies to clear the second level. He had traversed through the plains filled with demonic beasts, making them involuntarily call him ‘City Destroyer Hero’.

“Tu Dahei!”

It was unknown who first shouted this name, but the rookies immediately erupted into chaos.

“Tu Dahei is here!”

“Perfect timing!”

“Wow, he came at just the perfect time. It’s like a hero coming to save a beauty!”

“I predict Tu Dahei will have a great flash of anger for a beauty!”

“Is this Tu Dahei? I came late for the selection and did not see... He looks alright, but how did Goddess Sunless fall for him?”

“Heh heh, this brother, stop eating sour grapes. I have nothing to say against Goddess Sunless liking Tu Dahei. You do not know how many young ladies were infatuated by Tu Dahei when we launched the counteroffensive on the Demonic City. He’s not called a City Destroyer Hero without reason!”

“City Destroyer Hero? What’s going on. Can this brother fill me in?”

“I’m not trying to dampen your enthusiasm, but so what if Tu Dahei is here? Look at how many guns there are. If they were shot at the same time, Tu Dahei might not even be able to save himself.”

“That’s right, to be able to become a hero who saves a beauty, he will need to succeed in rescuing her first. If he fails, he won’t be a hero but an idiot!”

“I don’t care. It’s so cool to have a hero save a beauty. Ah, if I were Sunless, I’d definitely be moved to death!”

“ ... ”

The rookies burst into a flurry of discussion. At such a critical juncture, Tu Dahei’s appearance seemed to have changed the situation. The repressed atmosphere immediately seemed like a balloon that had a hole poked through, releasing the pressure.

Pulp Farmer also had a complicated look as he stared at Tu Dahei. Obviously, he could not bear watching Sunless be left in such a dangerous situation after being sneaked up upon. However, he was unable to have the resolve to prevent Sen Senyuan.

It was not that he was extremely loyal to Sen Senyuan. In fact, his respect for Sen Senyuan was just on the surface. He was extremely discontented and indignant in his heart, but if he were to stop Sen Senyuan, his loyal father and grandfather who had sacrificed themselves countless times would be punished. Even though his father and grandfather were foolishly loyal, it was no reason for Pulp Farmer to be unfilial.

Pulp Farmer struggled in his heart as he fell into a dilemma. As for Tu Dahei’s appearance seemingly turning things around, he

could temporarily heave a sigh of relief.

Pulp Farmer did not like Tu Dahei because Tu Dahei had harmed Sunless from being purely fanatical with the way of the sword, but at this moment, he had to admit that he owed him one.

With Shi Xiaobai arriving, he immediately walked towards Sunless' side. He could sense Sunless being extremely weak at the moment and realized that she was suffering from serious internal injuries.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the firearms in the sky and the bastard standing on a tree in the distance. Immediately, he understood the general situation.

Shi Xiaobai's wrath could not be extinguished as he looked angrily at Sen Senyuan, while Sen Senyuan looked down coldly at him.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes were burning like an belligerent inferno, while Sen Senyuan's eyes were as cold as ice. They had just engaged in a conflict not long ago, and now it could be said that new hatred was added onto old hatred.

Just as Shi Xiaobai was about to say something, a gentle voice suddenly echoed in his ears.

“Right hand?”



They were two simple words without much vicissitudes in tone but it was full of concern.

Shi Xiaobai looked to his side and saw worry in Sunless' eyes. When Sunless saw him holding a sword in his left hand, she was able to quickly tell that something was wrong with his right hand.

He knew that it was very rare for Sunless to reveal any emotions. She was seldom concerned about anything except swords, so he knew very well how precious her concern was.

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, "It's fine, it will recover in eleven hours."

Sunless nodded when she heard this.

When Shi Xiaobai saw Sunless' pale face, he sighed and suddenly thought of something. Lowering his head, he said to the black and white sword softly, "Both of you unfuse."

With that said, a warm white light and a dark black light bloomed. The black and white colored mixture on the sword separated into two.

The black and white swords were eager to separate from each other, so in a second, they had separated into two swords. One was pure white, while the other was completely black.

Everyone was paying attention to Shi Xiaobai, so when they saw

this scene, they were immediately astounded and began discussing.

Shi Xiaobai stabbed the black sword into the ground and using his left hand, he handed Holy Radiance to Sunless. He whispered, "Take it."

Sunless immediately reached out to grab Holy Radiance's hilt. A warm power of light immediately surged through her body, as though she was soaked in warm water.

Holy Radiance was condensed out of the world's purest light. It had healing properties of light. Although it was unable to treat excessively heavy injuries, it could ease the pain and speed up one's recovery.

Shi Xiaobai took a step forward and stretched out his empty left hand and pressed it on Sunless' shoulder. Through her azure clothes, it was still a soft and cold touch.

Shi Xiaobai began using Massage Technique of God and helped raise Sunless' self-recovery rate.

Faced with such a sudden massage, Sunless did not avoid or dodge. Instead, she took a step closer to Shi Xiaobai, making it easier for him to use Massage Technique of God.

The two were very close to each other, almost to the point of cuddling each other, and could sense the breathing of the other. There was no ambiguous feelings between the pair, but the

breathing from each other made them feel calm and comfortable. They would not find it repulsive even if they were closer.

But in the eyes of others, their actions were so intimate like they were a couple that had been in love for a long time. It was so mature, as if they were a couple that had accompanied each other in the pugilistic world.

The crowd could not bear to destroy such a beautiful scene, but they could not stop themselves from saying something. They began engaging in whispers.

“Sigh, a bachelor dog like me has received 10,000 points of damage.”

“Why do they seem so compatible...?”

“This pairing is not to be forgiven.”

“I recall my first love. It was as pure as them.”

“...”

If it was possible, they wished that such a beautiful scene would last a little longer.

However, clearly there was someone who disagreed.

Sen Senyuan suddenly said with a cold tone, “Both of you still have ten seconds. Maybe the both of you should partake in a parting kiss.”

The triggers of the firearms in the sky were already half-squeezed. However, with Tu Dahei’s sudden arrival, Sen Senyuan had decided to ‘benevolently’ give them thirty seconds. And after ten seconds, he would shatter the beauty in front of him with harsh reality.

Everyone immediately quietened and felt tensed. What’s coming will come after all.

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he released his grip and took a step back. Pulling out the black sword from the ground, he turned towards Sen Senyuan and said coldly, “Shoot!”

Everyone looked at Shi Xiaobai in surprise, but they saw him appearing undaunted. He immediately shouted angrily, “Shoot!”

Another ten seconds?

No, what are you waiting for? Your fucking mother’s cunt? Quick, shoot!

Quickly shoot for This King!

Everyone was startled. Can you not be so crazy? Can you not be so domineering?

Sen Senyuan laughed from his extreme anger as he bellowed angrily, “Very well, then...go to hell!”

With that said, all the firearms in the sky had their triggers squeezed!

The sounds of gunshots created deafening booms like thunder. As bullets came flying over in droves that numbered thousands, it was like a black cloud was descending upon Sunless and Shi Xiaobai at a terrifying speed!

Instantly, some people covered their ears, closed their eyes, widened their mouths, or shouted loudly, “Run!” ...

However, Shi Xiaobai and Sunless did not dodge, nor did they conjure a psionic barrier.

The first thing Shi Xiaobai did as the looming bullets shot at him was to seriously say to Sunless, “Don’t move!”

Sunless, who had just raised her sword, locked eyes with Shi Xiaobai and obediently lowered her hand.

He was afraid that her injuries would be aggravated, so the first thing he did when danger reared its head was to remind her to stay put.

She believed he could deal with the bullets in the sky, so even though the bullets were all heading straight for her, she did not hesitate to lower her hand.

An ordinary two words and an ordinary action displayed extraordinary courage and trust.

Shi Xiaobai obviously would not let down such a trust as he raised his sword towards the bullets in the sky!

“Bladestorm!”

Shi Xiaobai’s body suddenly began spinning like a top. Moving at an extremely fast speed throughout the hundred-meter zone, violent winds began to stir up!

The howling winds filled the lands, and with Shi Xiaobai’s spinning and motions, tornadoes began to shoot up towards the sky.

These tornadoes had a similar effect of Pulp Farmer’s tornado formed from the spinning of his spear. However, Pulp Farmer had used it based purely on his psionic power, while what was spinning in Shi Xiaobai’s tornado were savage sword beams!

Furthermore, the tornado Shi Xiaobai produced was not one or two. In an extremely short period of time, he had produced dozens of tornadoes!

Dozens of tornadoes imbued with sword beams filled the entire hundred-meter zone as they twirled towards the incoming bullets. Shattering sounds echoed as the rounds that came pounding on them were shattered or repelled by the tornadoes. They did not even come within a ten meter radius of Sunless!

Everyone watched in stunned silence as they rapidly retreated. They were afraid that they would be hit by the swirling winds of the savage tornadoes. All of them held their breaths as they stared intently at this amazing scene.

The sounds of gunfire did not stop while the firearms in the sky constantly had their triggers squeezed, shooting bullet after bullet at Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai's spinning motion did not stop either. He was like an inexhaustible top, and raising the black sword, he spun and spun! Darting around again and again!

Dozens of tornadoes did not have a moment of repose, so from beginning to end, not a single bullet managed to penetrate the tornadoes. There was not even a single bullet that came within ten meters of Sunless!

Sunless quietly stood there as her eyes were constantly locked onto Shi Xiaobai's figure. The glow in her eyes brightened, as the tail winds blew up her hair. Her beauty was completely breathtaking.

Gradually, one gun was emptied of its bullets, followed by two,

three... until all the firearms in the sky came to a stop. Only then, did Shi Xiaobai stop spinning.

He stood there majestically with eyes shimmering. He did not appear exhausted in any way. He raised his sword high and pointed at Sen Senyuan. He sneered and said, “Any more?”

His pose was charming and extremely domineering.

At that moment, a girl among the surrounding rookies screamed, “So cool!”

Then with her eyes closing, she fell backwards. She was so dazzled by Shi Xiaobai’s coolness that she fainted.

...



## Chapter 295: Fusing As One

---

“He’s just too strong. How is Tu Dahei this strong? It has already completely exceeded what counts as a ‘rookie’, right?”

“What sort of sword technique is this?”

“Let me tell you something very horrifying. Back when Tu Dahei was launching the counteroffensive on the Demon City, he was using his right hand, but now...”

“Holy shit, I wouldn’t have realized it if you didn’t say. Tu Dahei is actually using his left hand now?”

“Is there a difference with using the left or right hand? Isn’t it just holding swords up and drawing circles?”

“Drawing circles? Your intelligence may be lacking, but no one would call you a fool if you didn’t speak! Do you think drawing circles can produce such powerful sword winds? Where do you think those sword beams come from? While Tu Dahei was spinning, his left hand was constantly in motion. Furthermore, it was moved in a fluid and rapid manner, preventing you from being able to discern it, understand? To slash out so many sword beams with his left hand, while he was using his right hand during his attack on the Demonic Tree means that Tu Dahei had reached a high attainment in swords, be it his left or right hand!”

“This is still not the most terrifying thing. Look carefully at Tu Dahei. For him to spin so quickly and slash out so many sword

beams, yet he does not look dizzy or exhausted at all. He did not even break out a sweat. Fuck, is he even still human?”

“Wow. After hearing all these analyses of you gods, I suddenly feel like kneeling before Tu Dahei.”

“How is this still called a ‘mudslide’ of rookies? I think it’s more like a ‘tsunami’.”

“ ... ”

The rookies were shaken by the scene from before. They could only vent the shock in their hearts by exclaiming.

Pulp Farmer was silent. Tu Dahei’s strength had completely taken him by surprise, but soon it ignited a fighting spirit in his eyes. He wanted to fight Tu Dahei, even if the outcome would end with him being defeated.

There was a strange splendor in Sunless’ eyes. Unlike others who were surprised about Shi Xiaobai’s usage of his left hand, she was more surprised because the Sword of Wind that Shi Xiaobai used was something she had taught him not long ago.

That’s not right. It could not even be considered teaching. Shi Xiaobai had only seen her swordplay, but he had already managed to gain deep insights into the Kun Peng Sword of Wind in such a short period of time. Furthermore, he had created his own unique sword moves. Shi Xiaobai’s talent in swords was one she had never

seen before. Even she felt inferior.

Sen Senyuan was silent. The yellow circles of light slowly disappeared as the firearms also vanished.

Sen Senyuan had realized that Tu Dahei was not a weakling he could crush using a rain of bullets. However, his confidence and arrogance was not shaken at all. This was because the array of guns was just his most inferior means of attack. Only by pulling the trigger himself would he be able to demonstrate the true strength of all these priceless guns.

Upon hearing Shi Xiaobai's taunt, "Any more?", the coldness in Sen Senyuan's eyes intensified. He took his right hand out from his pocket once again. This time, a red circle of light lit up, as a flaming-red wheel gun appeared in his hand.

Sen Senyuan said with a sneer, "Do you think that was all to the barrage of attacks from before? What a joke. That was just an appetizer."

Everyone burst out into an uproar.

The vast number of bullets was just an appetizer?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes turned slightly stern. Just like the blackish-gold gun from before, this flaming-red wheel gun gave him a similar sense of danger.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai's current state was not as relaxed as he appeared on the surface. After his battle with Heartless on the fourth level, he was suffering from a serious deficit of psionic power. After reaching the fifth level, he did not have much time to recover before having to rush here at full speed. Furthermore, he had used the extremely powerful Bladestorm. His psionic power was about to be fully expended, and he was persisting on only because of 'Unleaking Turtle Aura'.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not back down because of this. He raised his sword as a golden vortex suddenly appeared in his pupils.

At the same time, golden points of light began emerging out of the ground as they quickly gathered towards Shi Xiaobai's body.

An instant later, Shi Xiaobai's body was completely enveloped in a golden glow. From the looks of it, he was as majestic and powerful as a god.

The crowd immediately exclaimed.

"Fuck, what is this?"

"Heavens, that's just too cool!"

"Sword Truth... This seems to be Sword Truth mode?"

"To be able to comprehend a Sword Truth at this age, his talent

in swords can be comparable to the Ye siblings. Why have we never heard rumors of him before?”

“ ... ”

Shi Xiaobai activated his Sword Truth, ‘Excalibur’!

A strange glint bloomed in Sunless’ eyes. She was dazed just watching this. Back when she was sparring with Shi Xiaobai in her consciousness, she knew that Shi Xiaobai would soon comprehend his own Sword Truth. She was also certain that his Sword Truth would definitely be very ‘beautiful’.

However, Sunless never expected for Shi Xiaobai’s Sword Truth to be this ‘beautiful’! Every ray of the resplendent golden light seemed to represent the ‘stubbornness’ Shi Xiaobai had for victory. This ‘stubbornness’ could tolerate failure and senseless sacrifice. It did not have any negative energies that came with victory. All it contained was positive energies that had a zeal for improvement.

It was an obsession for victory, but one that could be easily abandoned as well. Such a perfect contradiction was so beautiful that it was intoxicating.

Sen Senyuan’s eyes turned slightly stern, but he did not express much shock. A mere Sword Truth was not something that could waver his confidence.

Sen Senyuan did not speak a word as he suddenly squeezed the

trigger without any warning!

Without the sound of a gunshot, a flaming red bullet shot straight at Shi Xiaobai.

The flaming red bullet suddenly transformed into a burning inferno that smashed at Shi Xiaobai like a flaming meteorite!

Air seemed to boil over as crackling sounds were heard.

A cold smile suffused across Sen Senyuan's mouth. If Shi Xiaobai dared to continue using the sword attack that used sword winds, this blazing bullet would turn into an even more violent inferno due to the wind!

Shi Xiaobai obviously could think of whatever Sen Senyuan was thinking. After having deduced the cyclic restraint on the four sword techniques of the Kun Peng, he knew very well that Wind was restrained by Fire!

Therefore, it was impossible for Shi Xiaobai to use the Kun Peng Sword of Wind. His eyes lit up as the golden vortices in his pupils completed a rotation!

“Kun Peng...Sword of Water!”

Shi Xiaobai slashed out!

This strike was the Sword of Water. He had never attempted using the Sword of Water after his recent observation of Heartless!

An azure blue sword beam shot forward. Suddenly, it transformed into a towering wave that overwhelmed the flaming bullet. Billows of white smoke began appearing as the gigantic wave suddenly turned to ice, freezing all the flames. As the gigantic block of ice plummeted from mid-air to the ground, it shattered into ice fragments, forming a tiny river flow that wound through the clearing...

This scene made everyone fall in a stupor for a second.

They had seen parrying of moves, but this was really their first time seeing the parrying of a move in such a manner!

Even Sen Senyuan's eyes momentarily glazed over, but it was accompanied by the first birth of furious emotions.

His thoughts of using the cyclic restraint properties of this shot had been seen through, and a perfect parry that restrained his attack was performed. This was the most undisguised and merciless smack in the face!

“You have successfully infuriated me!”

Sen Senyuan could no longer maintain his composure as he took his left hand out of his pocket.

At the same time, circular lights lit up in front of him. All sorts of expensive or even priceless firearms were lined up in rows!

Sen Senyuan stretched both his hands out and gripped two guns as he pulled the triggers at Shi Xiaobai!

At the moment bullets shot out, Sen Senyuan had thrown the guns in his hands and grabbed another two guns from the rows of guns!

Sen Senyuan began a crazy shooting spree. Every gun was not used again as every bullet that shot out at Shi Xiaobai was augmented by different effects. It was as though a colorful storm was raining down at him!

The golden vortex in Shi Xiaobai's pupils began to swirl incessantly as he constantly brandished the sword in his left hand. He slashed one golden sword beam after another!

Shi Xiaobai's Sword Truth mode was completely different from other ordinary Sword Truth modes. Every golden sword beam he slashed out was extremely domineering. Regardless of what property the bullets shot by Sen Senyuan had, they were shattered by the golden sword beams without any pressure!

Not a single bullet managed to penetrate Shi Xiaobai's golden sword beams. Sen Senyuan did not stop shooting while Shi Xiaobai did not stop slashing. Sen Senyuan's row after row of priceless guns were ineffective against Shi Xiaobai!



The crowd was astounded. They felt that Shi Xiaobai, who was covered in golden light, was like a god that had descended. He was practically invincible!

Only after he shot his last row of guns did Sen Senyuan stop.

At that moment, Sen Senyuan laughed. It was a hysterical laugh, as though he had gone mad.

“Hahaha...”

Sen Senyuan’s laughter resonated throughout the skies, giving people the creeps.

The crowd was startled.

Had Sen Senyuan gone mad because of Tu Dahei?

Sen Senyuan’s laughter gradually came to a stop as he coldly said, “I never expected that there’s such an interesting bastard like you other than Speechless... You leave me no choice but to use it!”

Sen Senyuan’s eyes were filled with killing intent as a black circular light lit up. A black gun that exuded a black aura appeared in his hand.

“This gun’s name is Demonic Calamity. It only has three bullets left. Although only Speechless had the chance of enjoying one of

the bullets...you have succeeded in completely infuriating me!”

Sen Senyuan’s expression turned somewhat sinister as his voice sounded fearsome, “However, this shot will be targeted at Sunless!”

With this said, the people in the crowd were immediately taken aback. However, they quickly came round. Sen Senyuan was forcing Tu Dahei to forcefully receive the shot. If Tu Dahei dodged, Sunless would suffer. And with Tu Dahei’s character, it was impossible for him to dodge!

“Despicable!” the crowd cursed.

But at the same time, their hearts tugged.

How terrifying was a gun called Demonic Calamity? Was it so terrifying that worried Sen Senyuan enough about Tu Dahei dodging because of the irresistible pressure?

Shi Xiaobai’s choice did not surprise them. He adjusted his position and sheltered Sunless behind him!

Even though the black gun gave him a great sense of danger.

Even though defending against the round of heavy bombardment had made it difficult for him to stand!

Shi Xiaobai still did it without hesitation. He sheltered Sunless without any fear!

This was Shi Xiaobai, a Shi Xiaobai who would not have his faith and will shaken because of fear!

Sunless looked at Shi Xiaobai's back as she fell into a daze. Suddenly she took a step forward and stood side by side with Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head in surprise.

An extremely gentle voice resounded in his ear.

“Like.”

Sunless turned her head to lock eyes with Shi Xiaobai. After she said that single word, she raised Holy Radiance.

Shi Xiaobai was surprised but did not speak further. He knew that it was impossible for Sunless to choose to hide behind him.

The word ‘like’ was a simple word, but it could express a multitude of meanings. For example, liking to court death or liking to die together. All of these were forms of “like”.

However, Shi Xiaobai knew what Sunless meant by “like” and the reason why she said the word.

Shi Xiaobai raised the black sword. His left shoulder was tightly adhered to Sunless' right shoulder. The black and white swords appeared to blend together.

“What a bitter romance, then die together!”

Sen Senyuan angrily laughed as he pulled the trigger!

A bullet that exuded a black aura shot out as the entire sky was dyed black. In the darkness, the outline of a gigantic demon head widened its jaws, as though it was devouring whatever stood in front of it!

Shi Xiaobai and Sunless looked each other in the eyes as they thrust forward!

The duo's sword intent resonated and as their Sword Truths blended, golden and azure light began to swirl around them while the black and white swords merged into one!

Sunless had used the Kun Peng Sword of Wind, while Shi Xiaobai deliberately used the Kun Peng Sword of Fire!

Sword beams of Wind and Fire, with Sunless and Shi Xiaobai's sword intents perfectly fused at that moment!

...

## Chapter 296: Last Minute

---

Shi Xiaobai had long guessed that the four sword techniques—Earth, Wind, Water, Fire—of the Kun Peng Sword Technique could be fused into one, so he naturally guessed that two of them could fuse as well.

As such, when he realized he was going to attack together as one with Sunless, Shi Xiaobai had a bright idea and used the Kun Peng Sword of Fire while their sword intents resonated!

The beams of the Sword of Wind and Sword of Fire intertwined with one another as they fused into one. Suddenly they formed a swirling vortex of fire that reached the skies!

This vortex of fire swirled in mid-air and was dazzling and as hot as a burning sun. Instantly, it completely illuminated the darkened sky. The darkness exuded by the Demon Calamity bullet was instantly dispelled!

When the gigantic outline of the demonic head clashed with the vortex of fire, a shrill boom resounded through the world as the demonic head was consumed in flames, turning into billowing black smoke that rose towards the sky!

The vortex of fire did not stop as it continued spinning like a top. Suddenly, it hurtled straight for Sen Senyuan's location at an extremely fast speed!

The tree where Sen Senyuan was standing on was instantly

consumed by the vortex of fire!

“Boom!”

An explosion boomed as the vortex of fire erupted towards the sky, like a flaming pillar that stood erect between the heavens and earth. It was scattered moments later as plumes of flames began smashing to the ground!

The rookies hurriedly conjured their psionic barriers to protect themselves, but the surrounding trees could not have such a treatment. The flames burned all the trees and slowly there was an inferno that spread through the entire mountain!

“Holy shit, quickly put out the fire!”

The rookies screamed as they began working together to extinguish the fire. Thankfully, the fire was quickly stopped due to the large number of people.

Everyone looked at Shi Xiaobai and Sunless in shock.

“Their Sword Truths were combined in such perfection?”

“What a powerful strike. This strike is completely different from the sum of its parts!”

“Using both swords in unison. As expected for a couple!”

“It is not without reason that Goddess Sunless likes Tu Dahei. Using swords in unison requires the couple to have equal understanding in Sword Truths. Furthermore, they must be able to accommodate each other’s Sword Truths. Among peers, who else other than Tu Dahei can match Goddess Sunless when it comes to sword talent? Even Heartless is far from it!”

“The power of that one sword strike was extremely terrifying!”

“Where’s Sen Senyuan? Has he been burned to death?”

“...”

The crowd began to talk excitedly as they looked up to where Sen Senyuan was originally standing. The tree had long been burned to a crisp, and Sen Senyuan’s figure could not be seen through the billowing thick smoke.

Only when the smoke dispersed did a sharp-eyed person shout, “Look, over there!”

After that person shouted, he suddenly burst into laughter.

Far into the distance in mid-air, a short-haired teenager was standing on two floating machine guns. It was quite a cool thing, but his clothes were blackened everywhere. There were black smears on his face due to the smoke, making his state rather sorry. It was in stark contrast to the defiant image he had a moment

before!

Sen Senyuan's expression could be said to be rather wonderful. There was anger and also incredulity. There was even a bit of fear. It also formed a stark contrast from his cold iceberg expression from before.

A person could not help but burst out laughing, triggering the rest to laugh out. Immediately, everyone could not help but mock him.

“Pfft, that style is so funny!”

“Haha, Sen Senyuan must have been beaten silly!”

“Serves him right. I've seen arrogant people before, but this is truly the first time I've seen such an arrogant and despicable person!”

“...”

At this moment, Sen Senyuan's appearance was as though a lofty noble scion was being thrown into a cave of beggars. The stark contrast felt weirdly funny and had strangely tickled the crowd.

As the mocking laughter continued, Sen Senyuan's extremely ugly expression turned sullen and terrifying, as though he wanted to eat them all.



Shi Xiaobai laughed as well, but it was not because of the contrast of Sen Senyuan's current funny appearance. In fact, Sen Senyuan had always looked very comedic to him.

The reason why he was laughing was because the perfect fusion of the previous strike had confirmed his guess. He turned to give Sunless a look and saw her staring intently back at him with bright eyes, as though her heart was somewhat heavy.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and said, "There's something that This King has to tell you. This King...already has a girlfriend!"

Shi Xiaobai still knew that there could only be one girlfriend at a time. Although the coupling of Kali and him was rather baffling, he had very good affections for Kali and he had already made peace with the fact of having a girlfriend.

Hence, towards the 'like' Sunless previously said, he needed to give her a responsible reply.

Shi Xiaobai made a mental note.

Sigh, This King is truly too excellent.

When Sunless heard this, she gave a puzzled 'huh?', as though she did not understand what Shi Xiaobai was trying to express.

Shi Xiaobai gaped but did not speak further. Slowly, he revealed a smile.

From the looks of it, Sunless was just like the former him. She did not know what he meant by a girlfriend. Even if she knew, she probably did not understand that there could only be one girlfriend. She might not even fully understand what it meant to 'like'.

Unless he consulted Yang Wei, Shi Xiaobai would not have understood either.

This was because he was the same kind of person as Sunless. They only cared about the things they were obsessed about, ignoring other things. Even if they noticed something, they would have selective amnesia.

Sunless' 'like' was not considered a confession because she did not even know what a confession was. She was only expressing her will that she would not hide behind him.

When Shi Xiaobai thought of this, he heaved a sigh of relief in his heart. He did not wish that his ability to form a mutual understanding with Sunless with just a glance would be broken as a result of this.

At this moment, the authoritative voice suddenly resounded.

“This round of Life and Death Assault has only one minute left!”

The assessment program gave a reminder. There was only one minute left!

The crowd hushed as they had complex expressions. They were gathered here in order to 'kill' Sunless together!

However, it ended with them being a popcorn-eating crowd for such a long period of time. Now with less than a minute left, were they going to give up on this Life and Death Assault?

There were people who began to stir up, but they were quickly held down by their shoulders by people around them who gave them a solemn shake of the head.

Did you not see how Sen Senyuan and Pulp Farmer had failed to take them down? Why are you 'sending yourself to death' for nothing!?

Finally, none of the rookies moved. Some people could not harden their hearts to do so, while a number of people no longer had the confidence.

How was Tu Dahei and Sunless' sword unison attack something they could withstand!?

Even Sen Senyuan's expression looked unsettled and grim. Although the Demon Calamity Gun was not his strongest attack, that was already an extremely precious trump card of his. Yet, it

had failed to defeat the duo, and had even reduced him to such a wretched state.

He was hesitating if he should use the attack that required him to sacrifice a great deal. However, it was truly not worth it in exchange for a Death Epaulette. But if he were to retreat for now and spare Shi Xiaobai and Sunless, how would he be able to appease his fury?

But in fact, while Sen Senyuan was hesitating if he should spare Shi Xiaobai, Shi Xiaobai was considering how to destroy him.

In order to protect Sunless, Shi Xiaobai was in a passive state of defense and did not take the initiative to attack. However, he was also suppressing his anger. He wanted to severely punish Sen Senyuan.

In another minute, at the instant Sunless left safely was the moment Shi Xiaobai would launch his counteroffensive.

However, Shi Xiaobai's current physical situation was by no means optimal. He was only persisting purely on 'Unleaking Turtle Aura'. Every second was extremely draining on his body.

And after Sunless slashed that strike with him, her face was significantly paler. She was in desperate need of resting. Forcibly using her strength would cause great harm to her body.

It could be said that although Shi Xiaobai and Sunless appeared

like they still had strength left after using their sword unison attack, their bodies could no longer afford any more stress. How to withstand the attack in the last minute was probably a very big problem.

However, Shi Xiaobai would not cower in fear. On the contrary, it was such circumstances that he would consider how to strike back!

In order to protect Sunless, he had to diffuse any attack on her to put up an all-round defense. But once Sunless left, how could he endure any more?

Just a simple phrase, fuck him!

Both sides had thoughts on their minds as a strange silence pervaded the atmosphere.

However, everyone knew that this was the calm before the storm!

At this moment, a person that suddenly came broke the fragile tranquility!

The person was a white-clothed youth that looked warm like jade. He held a flute in hand as he walked from afar.

“Aiyah, there was a tiny delay along the way. Thankfully I reached here in the final minute. However, it seems I missed a

good show?”

The white-dressed youth had an amiable smile as he looked up and saw Sen Senyuan. A strange look flashed in his eyes as he could not help but say, “Eh? Young Master Sen, is your style trying to set a new fashion trend?”

Everyone could not help but burst out laughing. Someone identified the white-dressed youth’s identity and said, “Isn’t this seventh on the official forecast, Young Master An Mo?”

An Mo addressing Sen Senyuan as ‘Young Master Sen’ implied that the two knew each other. And for An Mo to speak with Sen Senyuan in such an amiable tone, what was the relationship between the two.

Sen Senyuan, who had been teased, acted unexpectedly. Instead of showing the slightest bit of anger, his eyes lit up instead, as though he had thought of something.

Sen Senyuan looked at An Mo and said, “An Mo, if I remember correctly, you still owe me one.”

An Mo laughed with a nod. “Of course, I dare not forget the favor I owe you.”

Sen Senyuan said with a sneer, “It’s time for you to return the favor!”

As Sen Senyuan said this, everyone felt their hearts skip a beat as they felt a sense of foreboding.

Indeed, Sen Senyuan immediately turned to look at Pulp Farmer and said coldly, “Pulp Farmer, with my status as the Sen family’s young master, I’m commanding you to combine with An Mo to hold Tu Dahei back!”

Everyone drew a gasp.

Sen Senyuan was planning on using such unscrupulous means?

He even wanted to join forces with Pulp Farmer and An Mo to fight three against two? Furthermore, from what he meant, by letting Pulp Farmer and An Mo to hold Tu Dahei back and not make a head on confrontation, it appeared as though there were some insidious actions he was planning?

Would Tu Dahei and Sunless be able to withstand it?

At this moment, a figure suddenly appeared. The figure arrived at an inexplicable speed. It was as though the figure had teleported where they were. The crowd could not even respond in time!

“Sorry, came late,” The person said.

Who was this?

How did this figure have such a terrifying speed?

How would this person's arrival affect the situation?

...

At less than a kilometer away from where everyone was assembled, an ugly youth dressed in a black robe was slowly walking with a bloody sickle in hand.

“One minute. Want to kill them all.”

The ugly youth's voice was hoarse with a sinister tone. “Master said, I can kill at most twenty people.”

“Could not help but kill nine people on the first level. Only eleven left?”

“Well, kill all the ones on the name list. The rest will depend on other factors...”

“The list doesn't have Tu Dahei, but...there's this urge to kill him...”

“Then he shall be killed!”

...



# Chapter 297: Tolerated You For A Long While!

---

In a boundless darkness of silence, there was a glimmer of light. The light was about the size of a room, bright but not glaring.

Inside the light sat a purple-haired girl dressed in a gothic style dress. The girl was sitting in an idle and casual manner. Her look was as pretty and exquisite as a pixie. There was a transparent screen in front of her about the size of a mirror. And in it, a black-haired youth's figure was projected.

The purple-haired girl was staring intently at the youth, as her beautiful eyes were surging with mixed emotions.

“Should I also learn swords?”

Kali sighed. With her status and experience, she should have been indifferent and tolerating, but surprisingly, she was prone to jealousy.

It was probably because she had no experience in love between a man and woman, so when it came to this, she was like a girl in her teens. She was simple, naive and easily felt her emotions stirred. She would even feel pangs of jealousy.

To Kali, this may be somewhat odd, but it was a most valuable experience. The sour feelings she had inside her had never appeared ever since she received the World Tree's heritage, as

though they were sealed.

She was very thankful to Shi Xiaobai for allowing her to regain the girly emotions that were already lost to her.

In this long and boring period of time, she could see everything that Shi Xiaobai was experiencing through this tiny transparent screen of light. What delighted her was that Shi Xiaobai's experiences were always extremely interesting. Although she would break out into sweat at times for him, or barely tolerate the urge to smack beyond oblivion the random characters around Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai's performance would frequently move her and make her feel proud.

Even though he was still young and weak up to this point, with his talent and character, he was bound to become a stunning force sooner or later. Kali had traveled thousands of worlds and she had seen numerous geniuses, but Shi Xiaobai was still the only person who surprised her greatly.

She was unable to estimate how far Shi Xiaobai could go in the future. This filled her with anticipation. She felt it was a blissful matter for her to be able to witness Shi Xiaobai's growth.

However, Shi Xiaobai's excellence was as bright and hot as the sun. Even she was attracted by it, so how could other members of the opposite sex be able to withstand it? Interacting too long with Shi Xiaobai would lead to them being inadvertently touched, such as the present Sunless.

In summary, her young boyfriend was too ‘attractive’, and she was the kind that easily became jealous...

“Should I be a bit more magnanimous...?”

Kali bit on her lower lip and gently sighed.

Suddenly, Kali’s eyebrows pricked up slightly. With a light wave of her hand, the scene in the screen of light switched. The ugly youth in a black robe appeared on the screen.

At this moment, the ugly youth was a few hundred meters away from Shi Xiaobai.

“Oh? What a strong demonic presence?”

Kali hurriedly stretched out her hand to tap on the screen. A beam of light penetrated the screen and arrived in the world where the ugly youth was. When the ugly youth was enveloped by the light, his body seemed to burn up as he screamed in pain while rolling constantly on the ground.

But at the same time, the world where the ugly youth was began stirring, as though the entire world was going to shatter.

Kali frowned and retracted her finger. The beam of light returned to her finger and the world finally fell silent. The ugly youth lay on ground, breathing in fear, like a wounded animal.

“Self-destruct sequence.” Kali sighed helplessly.

The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower’s assessment program limited the strength of the trial-takers. If any force that exceeded the Psionic Mortal Realm entered the world, it would begin its self-destruct sequence in order to protect its heritage items.

Humans naturally lacked the ability to forcibly enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, but Kali could do it. However, if she were to forcibly enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, a self-destruct sequence would be activated, something that even she could not stop.

Having forcibly injected a bit of her power, the assessment program had immediately taken actions to self-destruct.

“Sigh, looks like even if I wish to, I can no longer tolerate it.” Kali sighed. Shi Xiaobai’s body was presently in a dire condition. She could restrain herself from destroying Sen Senyuan immediately, because of the danger Shi Xiaobai had always encountered, Sen Senyuan was not even considered a drizzle.

However, if the black-robed youth were to appear, Shi Xiaobai would definitely pay an immense price in order to successfully escape danger. Therefore, Kali could not help but interject. She wanted to destroy this danger before it arrived in a way Shi Xiaobai would never know.

But from the looks of it, if she were to destroy the black-robed youth, the entire Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower would be destroyed. Although Kali did not mind a mere assessment program, nor did she care about the lives of those rookies, she did not want to forcibly change Shi Xiaobai's life trajectory because of her destruction of this selection.

She could be a spectator that witnessed the life of Shi Xiaobai, but she could not use her powers to change the trajectory of his life.

This was a karmic process. If she were to forcibly provide a reason for cause, the fruits of suffering from the final effect would be born by Shi Xiaobai.

Kali began feeling concerned. The trial appeared to be almost beyond her control.

Suddenly, Kali felt something jump in her heart. She stretched out her hand and waved across the screen of light. The scene inside it changed, as a figure shrouded in black light appeared!

It was a tiny black-lit person that was reduced to a third the size of an ordinary human. The tiny black-lit person was floating in a particular world while constantly devouring everything around it. Suddenly, the tiny black-lit person stopped and opened its mouth, tearing a rift in space in front of it. Its entire being went through it as it moved through chaotic spatial tunnels at a very fast speed!

“Oh? Gluttony has finally begun to make a move? Did it sense the

existence of other Deadly Sins? Or could it be that it has finally discovered the Original Sin of Calamity?”

Kali was wondering in her mind as her eyes began to light up. She had not killed Gluttony because she was waiting for it to act, in a bid to catch a bigger fish.

Kali carefully observed Gluttony’s direction when her pupils suddenly contracted slightly.

She was appalled to discover that the spatial trajectory Gluttony was taking was towards the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower where the rookies were!

“A coincidence?”

Kali muttered to herself, “Or could it be...that a particular Deadly Sin or the Original Sin of Calamity itself is in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower?”

...

...

Fifth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower

The person who appeared to teleport into the venue was a girl with short brown hair. To most rookies, this girl was very

unfamiliar, but the way she appeared was shocking.

“That was fast. Did you see how she appeared?”

“Was it my imagination? Why did I seem to see a lightning flash?”

“Who is she? With such terrifying speed, it can’t be that she isn’t famous at all, right?”

“Short, brown hair...never heard of it. Sigh, why are there so many dark horses for this selection?””

“ ... ”

Most of the rookies did not know the brown-haired girl, but Shi Xiaobai and Sunless were extremely familiar with her.

The person was none other than Mu Yuesheng.

Mu Yuesheng said extremely apologetically, “Sorry, came late.”

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, “It’s fine, coming in time is better than coming early.”

Mu Yuesheng’s timing was indeed perfect. With the present physical condition he and Sunless was in, it was indeed tough for

them to simultaneously resist three people who were on the level of super-rookies.

The situation had become three-on-three!

Sen Senyuan's expression that had just recovered turned gloomy immediately.

At this moment, a youth dressed in Daoist attire walked out of the crowd. With a whisk in hand, he looked at An Mo and said, "Young Master Mo, it appears we are destined to fight. And just nice, I also owe Tu Dahei a favor!"

While defending the city, the Tree of Life had been in danger. Shi Xiaobai could have easily been the first to clear the second level, but he had spent 500 points to cure the Tree of Life. Back then, the Daoist-attired Liu Yu was in City #1.

There was an instantaneous reversal of the situation. It became four against three! Sen Senyuan's brows frowned deeply.

At this moment, Pulp Farmer suddenly said loudly, "Young master, I can't stop you because the moment I make any moves against you, my family clan would be regarded as traitors by the Sen family. My father and grandfather's loyalty and hard work from all their lives would be destroyed through my hands. I cannot be this unfilial. But it does not mean I would be fully obedient to your commands. Your actions have already disgraced the Sen family. Your command is wrong, so I can never listen to it."



When Pulp Farmer said this, he turned around and retreated into the crowd. He had expressed his attitude!

The situation immediately turned to four against two. Blue veins began protruding on Sen Senyuan's neck.

An Mo looked at Sen Senyuan and said with a shrug, "Young master Sen, it appears I temporarily will not be able to return the favor I owe you, because...the favor I owe Liu Yu can never be returned! Even this seventh ranking on the official forecast was a result of Liu Yu's uplifting of me with his boast. How can I attack him?"

When An Mo said this, he walked over to Liu Yu with a smile. Liu Yu nodded in satisfaction, giving him an expression of 'you did well'!

The situation instantly became four against one! Sen Senyuan's expression was as ugly as it could be!

At the same time, Feng Yuanlin, who was amid the crowd, suddenly pinched his throat and shouted, "You want to touch our Goddess Sunless, then first step over our corpses!"

Immediately there were someone who understood the meaning as he quickly echoed, "Right, we can't let this darn retard who only knows how to snipe get away!"

Everyone hurriedly echoed.

“How can so many of us be afraid of a single person?”

“Destroy Sen Senyuan!”

“This time, I’m standing on the side of justice!”

“...”

The drama of how monkeys dispersed when the tree falls unfolded. The situation was completely reversed, becoming a crowd against a single person.

Sen Senyuan immediately felt as grossed out as eating a fly. He cursed in his heart.

What a bunch of idiots. Have they fucking forgotten that they were gathered here to ‘kill’ Sunless?

He felt infuriated and instantly lost his mind.

“All of you deserve death!”

Sen Senyuan roared and prepared to use his strongest attack. After using this attack, the entire region would be reduced to ruins, and he too would pay a heavy price.

However, Sen Senyuan no longer cared. He felt like he had been utterly humiliated. His anger had made him lose his reason!

At this moment, an angry bellow was heard, instantly awakening Sen Senyuan.

“This King has tolerated you for long enough!”

Sen Senyuan turned his head in horror as he saw Tu Dahei had burst up into the sky and come to his side!

The black sword was slashing at him with furious sword intent!

...

## Chapter 298: This King Will Follow Shortly

---

Tu Dahei's sudden appearance beside Sen Senyuan truly gave him a scare. Although his fury had made him lose his mind, his eyes were still sharp. His gaze was constantly fixated on Tu Dahei and Sunless.

But in a blink of an eye, Tu Dahei had suddenly gone from a distance of more than a thousand meters away to appearing in the air about ten meters from where he was.

What had just happened?

Did Tu Dahei know how to teleport!?

The rookies who were also watching Tu Dahei had seen the entire process, but they were more shocked than Sen Senyuan!

This was because they saw Tu Dahei retrieve a pair of icy-blue shoes from the brown-haired girl's chest. As he quickly wore them, he burst forward like an electric bolt. Following behind him were electric bolts that seemed to boost Tu Dahei up into the air. In the time it took to blink, he had rushed beside Sen Senyuan, high in the air!

With the black sword held horizontally with respect to the ground, the sunlight illuminated an icy-cold sheen as sword beams filled with Shi Xiaobai's wrath surged brazenly. At the moment the situation underwent a reversal, Shi Xiaobai finally could not tolerate any further and began his counter attack!

“This King has tolerated you for long enough!”

Shi Xiaobai roared as he slashed out!

With his Sword Truth activated, his strongest Beginner Sword seemed to be tearing the space itself by sheer force.

Sen Senyuan could not retreat in time. With a roar, he forcefully conjured a psionic shield!

“Boom!”

The psionic shield was no match for the power of the strike as Sen Senyuan was sent flying. His body shot through the air like a cannonball before slamming into the ground with an explosive boom.

The ground cratered as dust flew into the sky. Sen Senyuan lay limp like a dead dog in the crater as he spat a mouthful of blood. His eyes looked slightly glazed.

Shi Xiaobai landed and sneered before slowly walking towards Sen Senyuan.

Everyone turned silent. Tu Dahei's counterattack was too sudden and powerful. Even they who had seen the entire process were stunned, much less Sen Senyuan being able to react in time.

How was Tu Dahei so powerful?

Sen Senyuan was seriously wounded with a single strike. As a person who was rarely injured, he had fallen into a trance due to the pain, but when he heard the footsteps, he suddenly felt fear and was instantly woken up.

Sen Senyuan struggled to get up as he hurriedly turned around and escaped!

He was the imposing and mighty young master of the Sen family. He always stood far away or somewhere high to kill his enemies. Once the distance was closed, his combat strength would plummet.

Therefore, he wanted to escape. He needed to escape far away and summon the firearms that filled the sky. He would then use his most powerful move and tear the bastard Tu Dahei, who had injured him, to pieces. He wanted to blow all the rookies who had seen his pathetic state to pieces!

Huff, puff, huff...

Sen Senyuan ran like mad as the pain he felt made him angrier. He vowed to make Tu Dahei pay a painful price!

“Buzz...”

Suddenly, Sen Senyuan heard the sizzling sounds of electric currents. An icy-blue bolt flashed as Tu Dahei instantly appeared in front of him.

“Want to run?”

The sarcastic sneer pushed Sen Senyuan’s anger to the limits. At the same time, he realized that he could not escape this time.

Sen Senyuan’s eyes flashed a glimmer of hysteria. A purplish-gold pistol appeared in his right hand. Just as he wanted to grab it, a sword beam came slashing over. Sen Senyuan alarmed retracted his hand as the purplish-gold pistol was split into two!

“No!”

Sen Senyuan stared with his eyes opened widely. This purplish-gold pistol was an extremely precious treasure even to the Sen family.

It was destroyed just like that?

“You deserve death!”

Sen Senyuan gritted his teeth as yellow halos appeared behind him and priceless firearms emerged.

However, before Sen Senyuan could control the firearms to shoot

out the deluge of bullets, the sound of sizzling electric currents was heard. It brushed past his shoulder with a gust of wind.

Following that, successive sounds of metal being broken were immediately heard from behind him.

Sen Senyuan turned his head aghast, but he saw Tu Dahei darting through the air like lightning. Sword beams flew in every direction, shattering all the valuable firearms!

In a few seconds, all the firearms were shattered!

Sen Senyuan's expression immediately turned pale as his lips trembled violently. This was the first time he felt that he had provoked someone he shouldn't have.

Shi Xiaobai turned his body indifferently and slashed at Sen Senyuan with a stupendous speed!

“It's over!”

With a flash of a sword beam, the sword slashed down on the Life Epaulette above Sen Senyuan's shoulder!

“No!”

Sen Senyuan stared with widened eyes as he tried to slant his body and use Psionic Hardening at the same time, while a steel-like



color suffused his right hand!

“Clang!”

Sen Senyuan successfully dodged the strike. The sword beam failed to shatter the epaulette on his shoulder, but due to him desperately turning to the side, it had struck his arm!

“Ah!”

Sen Senyuan cried out. With his average defense, there was no way he could withstand that strike. His right arm was severed from the middle!

As blood spewed out, half his arm fell to the ground.

Sen Senyuan screamed as his eyes were filled with killing intent. As his left hand covered his stump, he screamed in a low tone, “Tu Dahei, you deserve death! You will be subject to the Sen family’s incessant pursuit. I will make you die without a proper burial ground!”

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. His strike was only targeted at Sen Senyuan’s epaulette. Although he was loathsome, Shi Xiaobai would not have gone as far as directly threatening his life. However, in order to protect his epaulette, Sen Senyuan in his panic had used his arm to receive the strike!

The outcome of his arm being chopped off was all because he

asked for it!

Upon hearing the killing intent in Sen Senyuan's words, Shi Xiaobai's eyes gradually turned cold. Although he was a kind and decent person, he was not a silly goody two shoes.

But at this moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly felt an intense sense of danger.

He turned his head and saw a black-robed youth holding a bloody sickle suddenly appearing far in the distance. The youth was heading straight for Sunless at an extremely fast speed!

Shi Xiaobai's pupils contracted slightly. His intuition told him that the black-robed youth was very, very dangerous!

He was after Sunless!

Sunless was in grave danger!

When Shi Xiaobai realized this, he no longer had the mind to bother with Sen Senyuan. Immediately, he rubbed the skating shoes and charged straight at Sunless!

The black-robed youth came too suddenly, and his speed was ridiculously fast. Everyone had their attention focused at Shi Xiaobai and Sen Senyuan, and by the time they reacted, the black-robed youth was already in front of Sunless!

The bloody sickle slashed down at Sunless!

No one could help stop this strike but Sunless herself. She bit her lower lip and slashed out with her sword while enduring the injuries of her body!

Shi Xiaobai, who had foreseen the danger, had already taken action. With the speed of Lightning Flashstep, he had arrived beside Sunless at the most critical moment!

Shi Xiaobai slashed out at the crimson sickle at almost the same time as Sunless!

A black and white combination, swords in unison!

“Boom!”

The black and white swords clashed with the crimson sickle. The heavily injured Sunless and Shi Xiaobai, who had hurriedly slashed out, could not put up a fight. After half a second of deadlock, the duo was sent flying back!

Shi Xiaobai frowned. At the moment of him flying back, he directed force towards the back and with even faster speed, came behind Sunless, grabbing her from behind.

“Boom!”

The duo opened up a deep ravine in the ground. Shi Xiaobai was beneath Sunless, so his back tore through the ground for dozens of meters. As for Sunless, who had been placed in front of Shi Xiaobai, she was not stained even by the dust.

Sunless exclaimed as she turned her head to look. Her eyes flashed a look of pain.

“Kill.”

The black-robed youth growled. He did not stop and continued rushing towards the fallen duo.

At this moment, the others finally reacted. They were alarmed by the black-robed youth's terror, but the few people who were nearest charged at the black-robed youth without any hesitation!

The black-robed youth raised his sickle and spun it once. A gust of wind filled with the smell of blood blew as Mu Yuesheng, Pulp Farmer, An Mo, and Liu Yu surrounded the black-robed youth. When they bumped into the blood-red hurricane, they were powerless to resist and were sent flying.

It was as if the black-robed youth was in no-man's land as he charged towards Shi Xiaobai and Sunless!

The black-robed youth's appearance was too sudden, and with the savageness he effused, before the crowd snapped out of their

trance, he had already backed Shi Xiaobai and Sunless to the wall!

Mu Yuesheng and company had been blown backwards, so they could no longer stop the black-robed youth. The others were too far away, and similarly could not rescue them in time!

No one could save Sunless and Shi Xiaobai!

However, at this moment, Shi Xiaobai, who had fallen to the ground, had already stood up. With sword in hand, he charged at the black-robed youth!

There was no need for anyone to rescue him. Shi Xiaobai could save himself!

“One Second Shura!”

Shi Xiaobai had swallowed one of the two remaining golden pills, having all his psionic power compressed!

At the same time, the golden light around his body was focused on the tip of the black sword like a burning hot sun!

“Excalibur!”

His psionic power was compressed dry, so what was left was his life to be compressed. His lifeforce was rapidly drained as a golden sword projection condensed which slashed down at the black-

robed youth!

One Second Shura and Excalibur were nearly the strongest means of attack Shi Xiaobai had. The two moves were his trump cards, a final shot that required him to compress all his strength. The two moves were each extremely costly, but when stacked together, the power was immeasurable, and the cost was unimaginable!

Shi Xiaobai knew very well that without being able to use the Pig Slaughtering Knife due to his sealed right hand, this strike was the only chance of victory against the black-robed youth that suddenly appeared in front of him!

“Boom!”

Golden light burst out and filled the world as golden beams of light shot into the sky. The entire mountain was dyed golden as everyone stared with widened eyes. Even though the golden light was glaring, they wanted to see this shocking scene clearly!

Hu...

Hu...

The sounds of heavy breathing could be heard through the dazzling golden light. Everyone fell silent as they held their breaths.

Slowly, the golden light dispersed.

Shi Xiaobai was leaning on the sword, having great difficulty even standing.

As for the black-robed youth, he had long disappeared. There was a pool of blood scattered on the ground.

He had won?

The sudden thrilling battle that was a few short life and death rounds that made everyone's heart jump ended with Tu Dahei winning?

Shi Xiaobai stood up while leaning onto his sword. The people behind him gasped.

They saw the clothes on Shi Xiaobai's back tattered. His back was full of lacerations due to the friction against the ground. Blood was flowing and looked somewhat frightening.

At this moment, an authoritative voice boomed:

“This round of Life and Death Assault has ended. Death Epaulette wearer, Sunless Ye, successfully ‘survived’ and will be transported to the sixth level after three seconds.”

It was finally over. The long ten minutes, the extremely long last minute had finally come to an end.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head slowly and grinned at Sunless. “Go ahead first. This King will follow shortly.”

Sunless, whose eyes were glazed, finally could not bear it as she covered her mouth. As tears streamed down her eyes. She nodded heavily.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly thought of something and said softly, “Don’t wait on the sixth level. This King likes the number seven. Let us meet on the seventh level, alright?”

Sunless sobbed and just as she wanted to say something, she suddenly transformed into a golden beam of light that shot into the sky, leaving the fifth level.

Shi Xiaobai smiled as his eyes were filled with exhaustion. He finally could not handle it any longer.

His physical condition was terrible to begin with. Now, having used the two extremely costly moves, One Second Shura and Excalibur, his body could not longer take it. Even Unleaking Turtle Aura was unable to withstand the weakness he felt.

Shi Xiaobai felt like he needed to sleep...

He did not know when he would wake up. He knew that if he did not say something, Sunless would definitely wait for him at the sixth level adamantly. Therefore, he came up with a very lame



excuse.

“Why is This King so tired...”

Shi Xiaobai murmured as he slowly closed his eyes.

Shi Xiaobai was standing while leaning on the sword. Although he had fainted, his body did not collapse, as though he was just resting with his eyes closed.

Everyone was startled as they looked at Shi Xiaobai blankly.

No one noticed that the splattered blood on the ground was slowly gathering together...

Suddenly, the authoritative voice resounded through the world, breaking the solemn silence:

“The thirty-second round shall begin immediately. Death Epulette wearer has been randomly chosen. The wearer’s name is Shi Xiaobai!”

# Chapter 299: Protect Shi Xiaobai

---

“The thirty-third round shall begin immediately. Death Epulette wearer has been randomly chosen. The wearer’s name is Shi Xiaobai!”

The moment the solemn voice that resounded faded, two images appeared in the minds of every rookie still in the fifth level. One of them was a compressed map of the entire mountain, with two blips of different colors.

As for the other image, it was that of a black-haired youth standing with the sword supporting his body. His eyes were closed and his delicate face looked overwhelmed with exhaustion. The back of his clothes was tattered, with blood flowing everywhere. The scene seemed to contain an indescribable sadness.

The scene slowly turned into one that overlooked the area. On the black grounds riddled in craters, the rookies stared at the youth, with looks of shock.

The youth was standing there quietly and looked extremely weak. Yet, it stirred the hearts of people. They wanted to know why he was in such a state at present, and wanted to know the story that had happened prior to this. They wanted to let him lie down and rest without worries.

This person was Shi Xiaobai?

This was the person with the most mysterious identity and

astounding achievements in the trials, Shi Xiaobai?

Everyone's eyes were focused on Shi Xiaobai, who had his eyes tightly shut and breathing extremely weakly. Their expressions were as though they had seen a ghost.

The atmosphere seemed to freeze for a second at that instant before it erupted into chaos!

“Heavens, Tu Dahei is Shi Xiaobai?”

“Holy shit, I was only impressed by two people in this trial. One was Tu Dahei and the other was Shi Xiaobai. Now, they are both the same person?”

“At the first level, I had just killed the first Nightmare Terror, and news of Shi Xiaobai clearing the level in less than twenty seconds was heard. I was so shocked that I nearly kneeled down. At the second level, Tu Dahei launched the counteroffensive on the Demon City, leading more than four hundred rookies towards victory. Back then, I was crying out loudly with tears streaming down my face ‘City Destroyer Hero’. At the third level, the Level Lord descended and my team was short of 200 points. I thought we were doomed when the news of Shi Xiaobai having conquered the Level Lord was heard. At that moment, I nearly called Shi Xiaobai my daddy while crying. And just a while ago, I was touched and shocked by Tu Dahei. I was even thinking who was better, Tu Dahei or Shi Xiaobai, and it now turns out that Tu Dahei is Shi Xiaobai. I'm convinced, I'm truly convinced!”

“Eh, I finally understand why I can’t help but associate the name Tu Dahei and Shi Xiaobai. It’s because the fucking name, Tu Dahei is the opposite of Shi Xiaobai!”

“Fuck, this is a god-like figure. From the first to fifth level, other than the fourth level, he created an astounding matter at every level. Shi Xiaobai, please accept my kneel!”

“Haha, I suddenly want to know who was the unlucky person who encountered Tu Dahei on the fourth level’s duel elimination.”

“Hey, so should we call him Tu Dahei or Shi Xiaobai in the future?”

“I suddenly have a sense of anticipation as to which level Shi Xiaobai can go to and what sort of things will he do in the trials later on.”

“In the trials later on? Sorry, although the names Tu Dahei and Shi Xiaobai are truly astonishing, it is because of that that there are numerous people who want to eliminate him. Look at his present condition...do you think he can survive this level?”

“Pardon me for butting in. Sunless is a goddess, so I could not bear to hurt her, but for Sunless...don’t forget about the existence of the Level Lord. How many ten minute rounds do we have to waste? So even if it’s taking advantage of his perilous situation, I have to be selfish this once!”

“I don’t know anything about launching a counteroffensive on the Demon City. When Shi Xiaobai conquered the Level Lord, I was already on the fourth level. I don’t owe him a thing. If all of you aren’t doing a thing... I’ll be going on up?”

“...”

The rookies’ emotional discussion suddenly fell silent. The news of Tu Dahei being Shi Xiaobai had indeed given them a big shock, to the point of a baffling sense of being touched, but it could not change a cruel fact. This round’s fugitive was Shi Xiaobai!

If they carried on being a member of the popcorn-eating crowd, another ten minutes would be wasted. The Level Lord’s threat would approach, so how many Life and Death Assaults were there left?

If they attacked the extremely weak Shi Xiaobai, it would not only be a shameless act, it would also very likely enrage the masses.

Therefore, although there were already rookies clamoring verbally to attack Shi Xiaobai, no one truly took action. Everyone was watching Shi Xiaobai blankly as they fell into a dilemma.

However, Mu Yuesheng did not have any such dilemmas. From the moment Shi Xiaobai fell unconscious, she had been standing beside Shi Xiaobai. At this moment, she was looking around at full alert. Icy-blue electric bolts darted around Shi Xiaobai, as though they were guardians protecting Shi Xiaobai.

If anyone dared to make a thoughtless move, she would absolutely not spare them!

At this moment, an armored youth walked out of the crowd. He had a stern expression on his face as he turned towards the crowd and said in a deep voice, “I do not know what all of you are hesitating for? I only know that at the third level, I might have very likely been eliminated by the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign if not for Shi Xiaobai. I only know that Shi Xiaobai should not be eliminated here. He is our competitor, but he is also the pride of our organization faction! I would rather be eliminated here than to attack Shi Xiaobai. No, I, Feng Yuanlin, shall declare that whoever dares to make a move on Shi Xiaobai, that person will have to step over my dead body!”

Feng Yuanlin changed from his usual humorous image and said righteous words that sounded thought-provoking.

Immediately, another rookie walked out and said loudly, “If not for Tu Dahei, I would have been eliminated in the second level. He darted through the plains filled with demonic beasts and that scene of him destroying the Demonic Tree is still fresh on my mind. He is the hero in my heart. Whoever wants to touch him, ask my saber first!”

A stout rookie walked out and said with a deep voice, “The counteroffensive on the Demon City and the Level Lord was something I didn’t experience. But in the past few minutes, Shi Xiaobai’s performance was witnessed by me. Feng Yuanlin’s statement resonated with me. Tu Dahei should not be eliminated

here. He should become one of the ten people of the collective training. He will be the pride of the organization faction! As a supporter of the organization faction, I choose to protect Shi Xiaobai!”

The voluptuous girl, Zhou Chuchu, who held a whip, walked out and said, “Shi Xiaobai’s protection of Sunless was absolutely so cool. I don’t care, no one is to touch him!”

Liu Yu waved his whisk and said with a laugh, “This Penniless Priest had a fortuitous meeting with Shi Xiaobai.”

An Mo said softly, “Liu Yu’s intentions are mine as well.”

Even Pulp Farmer spoke up, “Regardless of the case, I owe Shi Xiaobai a favor. I will protect him for ten minutes.”

The few of the rookies that were forecast to be in the top ten stood forward. Very quickly, one rookie after another stood forward.

“No one is to touch Shi Xiaobai. He is our City Destroyer Hero!”

“I was so close to being eliminated on the third level if not for Shi Xiaobai. This debt of gratitude has to be paid!”

“The scene of Shi Xiaobai risking his life to protect Sunless had touched me!”

“Shi Xiaobai should not be eliminated here!”

“Protect Shi Xiaobai!”

“...”

There were constantly people stepping forward, but Mu Yuesheng remained highly vigilant. None of the rookies rashly approached Shi Xiaobai. Instead, they formed a circle ten meters away from Shi Xiaobai.

There were more and more rookies as the encirclement began increasing in number. They faced outwards as though they were guardian statues.

In less than a minute, there were only about a dozen rookies still standing in their original spots.

The dozen or so people were feeling indignation, but with such a fearsome battle force, no one dared to do a head on clash. Under the stares of more than a hundred rookies, they eventually left dejectedly.

Shi Xiaobai was in deep sleep at the moment. The exhausted expression on his face gradually relaxed, but his weak breathing betrayed his extreme feebleness.



Mu Yuesheng guarded by the side and remained extremely vigilant. Although the rookies encircling a distance of ten meters away had declared that they would protect Shi Xiaobai, it was possible that there were people faking it in the hopes of finding an opportunity.

The rookies clearly understood this reason, so they remained bound to not step a foot beyond the ten meters boundary. Occasionally, there would be people engaging in whispers, but most of them were silent and serious, observing their surroundings vigilantly. They even observed the actions of the people beside them. These were the people who wanted to protect Shi Xiaobai from the bottom of their hearts.

During the trials, Shi Xiaobai had intentionally and unintentionally helped a large number of rookies. Now, he was receiving the dividends of good faith for his efforts.

If Shi Xiaobai had not chosen to launch a counteroffensive on the Demon City on the second level, conquer the third level's Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign or protect Sunless without any qualms that resulted in making the rookies willing to protect him, it would be very difficult even if Mu Yuesheng sacrificed her life to protect him from the rookies since he lacked the power to protect himself in his present weak state.

These valuable ten minutes of protection seemed predestined to be a long time ago.

However, would the ten minutes, that did not seem too long or short, be successfully tided through?

Slowly, rookies who did not participate in the Life and Death Assault on Sunless arrived. Seeing more than a hundred people protecting Shi Xiaobai, they were confounded.

After receiving an explanation, some chose to join the ranks to protect Shi Xiaobai, while there were others who left in resentment despite feeling indignant.

During this period of time, a retarded rookie, who did not know better nor understood the situation, believed that Shi Xiaobai was being surrounded. As if having water for brains, the person thought the crowd was discussing as to who would obtain the epaulette, so the moment the person came, he shouted, “Let Shi Xiaobai go, I’ll do it.”

Feng Yuanlin immediately cursed angrily, “Fuck, destroy that retard!”

The retarded rookie ended in a tragedy with him being taught a lesson. Thankfully the rest were restrained and did not destroy his Life Epaulette like hunters.

Time slowly passed and with that, five minutes were over.

The rookies gradually relaxed and began chatting and laughing. With more than a hundred people protecting Shi Xiaobai, no one could break through the encirclement. In another five minutes, Shi Xiaobai could clear the level!

This made their hearts suddenly feel a baffling sense of achievement.

The various things Shi Xiaobai had done in the trials would definitely cause a sensation throughout China. When the time came, ‘Protecting Shi Xiaobai’ might become one of the stories. They felt an inexplicable sense of honor being participants of that story.

As the rookies engaged in discussion, no one noticed the blood on the ground having fully coagulated.

Suddenly, the blood distorted upwards, turning into a crimson-colored head.

The head opened its mouth and let out a cold voice:

“Tu Dahei...Shi Xiaobai...Kill!”

A strong smell of blood suddenly emanated in the air as everyone in the crowd turned their heads in shock. A bloody figure with a blood-colored sickle in hand had just formed. It stood within the encirclement and was less than ten meters away from Shi Xiaobai!

# Chapter 300: What About My Hand?

---

The emanated scent of blood caused anyone who smelled it feel disgusted. A bloody figure that had just coagulated together appeared within the encirclement of the crowd.

Although the bloody figure's face was fuzzy, making it impossible to distinguish his face, the crimson-colored sickle in its hand had left a deep impression on everyone present. The black-robed youth that suddenly appeared not long ago had entered a forbidden zone. The scene of it almost killing Sunless surfaced in the minds of the crowd.

“No good, quickly stop it!”

Someone screamed.

Others had already begun taking action.

The bloody figure was less than ten meters away from Shi Xiaobai. If it were to suddenly attack, who could prevent it?

At this moment, the bloody figure was coagulating its blood at a visible rate, as though it was going to be completely ‘revived’!

Mu Yuesheng was constantly on alert, so she was the first to react. A thick icy-blue lightning bolt shot out from her feet as it snaked through the ground to attack the bloody figure.

Pulp Farmer was similarly not slow to react. His spear thrust towards the bloody figure as though it was a dragon's strike that flashed a cold beam!

“Boom!”

With the pincer attack threatening the bloody figure, it raised its head and roared, producing a crimson barrier which shielded it. However, the crimson barrier began to produce ripples as though it was struggling to defend its conjurer.

“It's very weak!”

“Its strength has yet to fully recover!”

“Come on, kill it!”

Everyone finally responded and raised their weapons as they began bombarding the bloody figure with various attacks!

“Boom! Boom! Boom...”

The crimson shield constantly flickered and trembled before it finally shattered. However, the bloody figure's body had finished coagulating into a solid being of blood. A layer of fresh skin was halfway done with wrapping the solid blood.

“Hurry, it's about to revive soon!”

“My God, what the hell is this thing? It’s disgusting!”

“I’m having goosebumps all over. Quickly destroy it!”

The bloody figure’s appearance looked as though it had half of its skin ripped off. The block of blood had turned into thick flesh. It was nauseating.

Mu Yuesheng frowned slightly as she shot out an electro-cannon beam that was much thicker than usual.

Pulp Farmer had a cold expression as he thrust a Tyrant Spear, producing a large and domineering spear phantom image.

Feng Yuanlin kept shouting as a silver shield appeared in his hand. He did not have any long-ranged attacks and could not come too close to the bloody figure. He began throwing the silver shield in his hand as a projectile weapon!

Liu Yu waved his whisk and a vague gas, that resembled an immortal’s aura, floated out. He roared, “Monster, die!” Suddenly, he took out a paper charm and threw it at the bloody figure!

An Mo blew his flute. As the music permeated the region, everyone felt their spirits lifted, but when the bloody figure heard it, it suddenly became more violent.

Zhou Chuchu frowned and, with an expression as though she wanted to puke, she flailed her whip angrily as a surging force struck the bloody figure.

The innermost circle of rookies spared no mercy for the bloody figure that was about to fully revive. The black-robed youth was too strong and strange. Everyone did not dare imagine what it would do after it revived, so they were naturally using all their strength to prevent it from reviving.

“Boom....”

Incessant explosions filled the area as dust flew up, resulting in poor visibility. Suddenly, someone exclaimed, “The bloody figure has disappeared!”

Indeed, in the dusty air, the bloody figure’s fuzzy outline had suddenly disappeared from the barrage of attacks of the crowd!

Could it have been blasted into a pool of blood?

But looking at the ground, there were only drops of blood. Where was the pool of blood?

“It’s dead? Has it been completely destroyed by us?”

Everyone’s eyes lit up when they thought of this possibility. They immediately felt overjoyed. Who knew that the bloody figure was so weak before it revived!

Suddenly, someone exclaimed, “No, it’s still not dead! Look there!”

Everyone traced the direction in which the person pointed. Far in the distance, there was a bright red patch on the ground like a carpet. The red carpet was not obvious on a cursory look, but on a careful look, it was a pool of blood!

And the pool of blood had sneaked out of the crowd’s encirclement. At this moment, it was moving extremely quickly on the ground, escaping into the distance!

“Why did it run away?”

“It’s escaping, quickly chase it!”

“We can’t let it escape. If it fully revives later, none of us can stop it!”

The rookies fell into chaos as the outermost rookies rushed over. However, the pool of blood suddenly drilled into the ground as it was in the middle of moving. The crowd momentarily lost track of its whereabouts.

“Fuck, this monster can even drill into the ground?”

“We’re finished. We can’t catch up!”



“Damn it, who knows when that monster will be fully revived. Everyone, be mentally prepared.”

The scene turned chaotic as everyone felt the burden of a repressed atmosphere. It was not as simple to put a perfect period to the end of the protection of Shi Xiaobai as they imagined.

And at the most chaotic moment, a small crossbow arrow shot towards Shi Xiaobai's shoulder. It was nearly transparent in color, and the angle it shot out from was chosen in a cunning manner. The choice of timing was perfect. It was the moment when everyone's mind was in a buzz!

This arrow had accumulated a lot of strength and had waited for a prolonged period of time. It shot towards the Death Epaulette on Shi Xiaobai's shoulder. It was as fast as lightning and its goal was clear!

However, no one noticed the sudden shot of the crossbow arrow. Even if they discovered it, they would not be able to react in time.

In the next instant, the arrow would stab Shi Xiaobai's shoulder. It would detonate once it hit its target, definitely shattering the epaulette, but it might also blow apart Shi Xiaobai's shoulder who was completely without any defense!

But so what?

In the crowd, a rookie revealed a wide sneer. He secretly backed away. He was in the middle of the crowd, so he was not too far, but not too close to the point of not being able to escape.

At the moment the explosion was heard, everyone would fall into extreme panic. At that moment, he could easily escape and he would be transported to the sixth level three seconds later!

So what if he stirred the rage of the masses?

The trials were competitive to begin with. Failure makes a rebel, success makes a king. There was nothing wrong with obtaining victory at all costs!

As the arrow shot forward, a sharp-eyed person discovered the nearly transparent arrow, but before the person could even scream, the arrow had arrived in front of Shi Xiaobai's shoulder!

A hand suddenly reached out to grab the arrow!

It was a slender, white hand with a layer of icy-blue bolts of lightning coiling around her fingers. The arrow was just a few centimeters away from Shi Xiaobai's shoulder!

“Boom!”

The arrow exploded but the icy-blue lightning seemed to completely wrap around the explosion like a cage!

The explosion rampaged through the icy-blue cage like a wild beast. It nearly broke through, but was eventually unable to affect a distance a few centimeters away before it was extinguished in the icy-blue cage.

The sounds of gasps were heard.

They saw a white, slender hand bleeding because of the blast, injured to the point of it being charred.

Even though she had used Psionic Hardening to protect her hand, it had compressed the entire explosion, so the power of the explosion was more than several times stronger.

So how could she defend properly against that?

How much pain was the owner of that hand feeling?

Everyone traced the hand and saw the brown-haired girl that had always been standing beside Shi Xiaobai. Not only did she not grimace from the pain, she had a relieved expression.

Mu Yuesheng was relieved. An accident had nearly happened. If not for her remaining vigilant throughout the most chaotic moments while remaining wary of insidious rookies sneakily attacking, this arrow would have been hard to defend against!

Shi Xiaobai nearly got into an accident!

Just thinking of this made Mu Yuesheng feel a sense of belated fear. Immediately, she focused on her surroundings once again.

Slowly, she finally had the time to care about the pain coming from her right hand. Mu Yuesheng only turned to give it a glance. Her gaze was indifferent, as though it was not even her hand. Immediately, she swept the crowd with an angry and vigilant gaze. She softly said, "Who was it?"

Everyone in the crowd was shaken out of their stupor as they suddenly felt infinite wrath.

"Fuck, which bastard was it!?"

"Damn it, which despicable person sneaked an attack?"

"Indeed, there is a wretch who stayed behind with an insincere heart. What shamelessness. He is not to be easily let off!"

The situation turned into a mess but the rookie that sneaked the attack had hidden himself well. The moment he shot the arrow was when the surrounding people were looking in the direction of the escaping pool of blood. Furthermore, the crossbow was hidden in his sleeve, so it was not revealed at all.

The rookie that had sneaked the attack mimicked the indignation of the rest. No one could tell that it was him.

At this moment, a gentle-looking girl walked out of the crowd and walked straight towards Mu Yuesheng. She had stepped into the ten meter radius from Shi Xiaobai.

Mu Yuesheng immediately frowned and coldly shouted, “Stop, you are not to come!”

Everyone turned their heads and gave a judgmental look to the girl.

The girl immediately stopped and used a gentle tone to say, “You are mistaken. I study healing. I only want to treat your hand.”

Mu Yuesheng shook her head and said, “There’s no need!”

The girl anxiously said, “No, your hand needs to be treated immediately, if not the injury would worsen... Furthermore, even if the injury would not worsen, a scar will be left behind if it’s not properly treated. Your hand is so beautiful. I believe you do not wish for your hand to be scarred, right? Let me treat you. It will be very fast.”

When Mu Yuesheng heard this, she shook her head resolutely. “There’s no need. Go back.”

The girl frowned and whispered, “Why are you so stubborn?”

Mu Yuesheng seriously looked the girl in the eye and said, “Because I don’t trust you!”

After Mu Yuesheng said this, she surveyed the crowd and said with a deep voice, “Or it should be said that I cannot trust anyone of you here. I do not know which one of you wants to protect Shi Xiaobai from the bottom of your heart or which person is just being a hypocrite and will sneak an attack at any time. No matter how sincere you appear, I will not believe it. Because, I cannot believe! It may even be the tiniest risk, but I will definitely not use Shi Xiaobai’s future or even shoulder to take that risk! Therefore, if anyone steps within the ten meter radius, I will automatically view that person as an enemy. If you are truly sincere about your good will towards Shi Xiaobai, quietly stand there and be on the lookout of the people beside you at all times. That would be the greatest help. My hand is fine. Compared to Shi Xiaobai, what’s a tiny scar?”

The girl gaped and took a deep glance at Mu Yuesheng before retreating in silence.

Everyone immediately felt their moods repressed. Their eyes were filled with admiration as they looked at Mu Yuesheng.

At this moment, a rookie with shifty eyes had an idea as he suddenly shouted, “You keep insisting that you do not trust us, but why do we need to trust you? We do not even know who you are. What gives you the right to stand beside Shi Xiaobai from the beginning to the point of not letting anyone near? Who knows, you might also be putting on a show? You might be waiting for everyone to relax before you secretly destroy the Death Epaulette?

Since you don't trust us, why should we trust you? Everyone, isn't that so?"

With this statement made, the atmosphere suddenly turned stifling.